

The
New Testament.

*translated from the
original Greek,*

by

H. T. Anderson.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1864, by H. T. Anderson, In the Clerk's Office
of the District Court of the United States for the Southern District of Ohio.

TO ALL Lovers of Truth, the Author dedicates his Translation of the New Testament.

The Author saw, very early in life, that a translation of the New Testament was necessary. He began his investigations at the age of twenty-one, and has faithfully studied the Original since that time. He has made his translation without reference to any version; that is, he adopted no version as a basis. His work is not a Revision of a version, but a Translation; for he was not disposed to be trammelled by any version, but desired to find the truth of God, as it is contained in the Original. The truth thus found, he has endeavored to express in the English language as now spoken. He has been careful to express the exact sense of the Original, without permitting himself to be confined to an imitation of the letter of the Greek. In revising his work, he re-examined the common version, and wherever that version has expressed the sense of the Original in good English, he has adopted it. In this way he has, as he hopes, embodied all the excellencies of that version, and avoided its errors.

The author takes pleasure in acknowledging himself largely indebted, for the English dress of the Translation, to his friend, and brother in Christ, JOHN AUGUSTUS WILLIAMS, of Harrodsburg, Kentucky.

The work has been carried on under many adverse circumstances; but, by the good providence of God, it has been completed. May it go forth, under the Divine blessing, to establish and comfort the hearts of those who love the Truth.

*H. T. ANDERSON.
HARRODSBURG KY, March 1864.*

New Testament

Testimony of Matthew.

I. ¹The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

²Abraham begot Isaac: Isaac begot Jacob: Jacob begot Judah and his brothers: ³Judah begot Phares and Zarah of Thamar: Phares begot Hezron: Hezron begot Aram: ⁴Aram begot Aminidab: Aminidab begot Nahshon: Nahshon begot Salmon: ⁵Salmon begot Boa of Rachab: Boaz begot Obed of Ruth: Obed begot Jesse: ⁶Jesse begot David the king: David the king begot Solomon of her who had been the wife of Uriah: ⁷Solomon begot Rehoboam: Rehoboam begot Abia: Abia begot Asa: ⁸Asa begot Jehosaphat: Jehosaphat begot Jehoram: Jehoram begot Uzziah: ⁹Uzziah begot Jotham: Jotham begot Ahaz: Ahaz begot Hezekiah: ¹⁰Hezekiah begot Manasseh: Manasseh begot Amon: Amon begot Josiah: ¹¹Josiah begot Jecoeniah and his brothers, about the time of the removal to Babylon.

¹²And after the removal to Babylon, Jecoeniah begot Shealtiel: Shealtiel begot Zerubbabel: ¹³Zerubbabel begot Abiud: Abiud begot Eliakim: Eliakim begot Azor: ¹⁴Azor begot Sadok: Sadok begot Achim: Achim begot Eliud: ¹⁵Eliud begot Eleazar: Eleazar begot Matthan: Matthan begot Jacob: ¹⁶Jacob begot Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

¹⁷So all the generations from Abraham till David are fourteen generations: and from David till the removal to Babylon are fourteen generations: and from the removal to Babylon till the Christ are fourteen generations.

¹⁸But Jesus Christ was begotten thus: After his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they had come together, she was found to be with child of the Holy Spirit. ¹⁹Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not choosing to make an example of her, intended to put her away privately. ²⁰But while he was thinking of these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying: Joseph, son of David, fear not to take home Mary your wife; for that which is begotten in her is of the Holy Spirit. ²¹And she will bear a son, and you shall call his name Jesus; for he will save his people

from their sins. ²²Now all this was done, that the word might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying: ²³Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bear a son, and his name shall be called Immanuel, which, when translated, is, God with us. ²⁴And Joseph awoke from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord had commanded him; and he took home his wife, ²⁵and knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son. And he called his name Jesus.

II. ¹Now after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, Magi from the east came to Jerusalem, ²saying: Where is he that is born king of the Jews? For we have seen his star in the east, and have come to do him homage. ³When Herod the king heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. ⁴And when he had assembled all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he inquired of them where the Christ should be born. ⁵And they said to him: In Bethlehem of Judea; for thus it is written by the prophet: ⁶And thou, Bethlehem, city of Judah, art by no means the least among the chiefs of Judah; for out of thee shall come a leader, that shall be a shepherd to my people Israel.

⁷Then Herod, when he had secretly called the Magi, inquired of them strictly at what time the star, then visible, first made its appearance: ⁸and sending them to Bethlehem, he said: Go, make strict inquiry for the young child: and when you have found him, bring me word, that I also may go and do him homage. ⁹When they had heard the king, they departed; and lo, the star, which they had seen in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over the place where the young child was. ¹⁰And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with very great joy. ¹¹And having come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother; and falling down, they did him homage. And when they had opened their treasures, they offered to him gifts, gold, frankincense, and myrrh. ¹²And having been warned in a dream not to return to Herod, they departed into their own country by another way.

¹³ When they had departed, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying: Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there till I bring you word; for Herod is about to seek for the young child, to destroy him. ¹⁴ And he arose and took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt, ¹⁵ and was there till the death of Herod; that the word might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through his prophet, saying: Out of Egypt have I called my Son.

¹⁶ Then Herod, when he saw that he was deceived by the Magi, was greatly enraged, and sent out and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem and in all its borders, from the age of two years and under, according to the time which he had strictly inquired of the Magi. ¹⁷ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying: ¹⁸ A voice was heard in Ramah, wailing and weeping, and great mourning; Rachel weeping for her children, and refusing to be comforted because they are no more.

¹⁹ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, ²⁰ saying: Arise and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead who sought the young child's life. ²¹ And he arose and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. ²² But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning in Judea in place of Herod his father, he was afraid to go thither. But being warned in a dream, he withdrew into the regions of Galilee, ²³ and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that the word might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets: He shall be called a Nazarene.

III. ¹In those days came John the Immerser, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, ² and saying: Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. ³ For this is he that was spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, saying: The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. ⁴ But the same John had his clothing of camel's hair, and a girdle of leather around his loins, and his food was locusts and wild honey.

⁵ Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about the Jor-

dan, ⁶ and were immersed by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins. ⁷ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his immersion, he said to them: Generation of vipers, who has warned you to flee from the coining wrath? ⁸ Bring forth, therefore, fruit worthy of repentance: ⁹ and think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham for our father; for I say to you that God is able from these stones to raise up children to Abraham. ¹⁰ Even now the ax is lying at the root of the trees: therefore, every tree that does not bring forth good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. ¹¹ I immerse you in water, in order to repentance; but he that comes after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will immerse you in the Holy Spirit and in fire: ¹² whose winnowing-shovel is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing-floor, and gather his grain into his granary; but the chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire.

¹³ Then came Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan to John, to be immersed by him. ¹⁴ But John forbade him, saying: I have need to be immersed by thee, and comest thou to me? ¹⁵ But Jesus answering said to him: Permit it now; for thus it becomes us to perform fully every righteous act. Then he permitted him. ¹⁶ And after Jesus was immersed, he came up immediately from the water; and lo, the heavens were opened to him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and coming upon him. ¹⁷ And lo, a voice from heaven, saying: This is my beloved Son, in whom I delight.

IV. ¹Then was Jesus led up by the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted by the devil. ² And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward hungry. ³ And the tempter came to him and said: If you are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread. ⁴ But he answered and said: It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that comes forth from the mouth of God. ⁵ Then the devil took him into the holy city, and placed him on the pinnacle of the temple, ⁶ and said to him: If you are the Son of God, throw yourself down, for it is written: He will give his angels charge concerning you; and in their hands shall they take you up, lest you strike your foot against a stone. ⁷ Jesus said to him: It is again

written, You shall not put the Lord your God to the proof.

⁸ Again, the devil took him to a very high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and the glory of them, ⁹ and said to him: All these things will I give you, if you will fall down and worship me. ¹⁰ Then Jesus said to him: Get behind me, Satan, for it is written: You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve. ¹¹ Then the devil left him, and behold, angels came and ministered to him.

¹² Now when Jesus heard that John was delivered up; he withdrew into Galilee; ¹³ and, leaving Nazareth, he went and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea, in the borders of Zebulon and Naphtali, ¹⁴ that the word might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: ¹⁵ The land of Zebulon, and the land of Naphtali, toward the sea beyond the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; ¹⁶ the people that sat in darkness saw great light; and upon those who sat in the region and shadow of death light has risen. ¹⁷ From that time Jesus began to preach and to say: Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

¹⁸ And as he was walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers, Simon who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, throwing a net into the sea, for they were fishers. ¹⁹ And he said to them: Come after me, and I will make you fishers of men. ²⁰ And they immediately left their nets and followed him. ²¹ And going on thence, he saw other two brothers, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them. ²² And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

²³ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and curing every disease, and every kind of sickness among the people. ²⁴ And his fame went abroad into all Syria. And they brought to him all that were sick, those who were afflicted with various diseases and pains, and those who were possessed with demons, and lunatics, and paralytics; and he cured them. ²⁵ And many multitudes followed him from Galilee, and Decapolis, and Jerusalem, and Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

V ¹ And seeing the multitudes, he went up into the mountain; and when he had sat

down, his disciples came to him; ² and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying: ³ Blessed are the poor in spirit; for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. ⁴ Blessed are they that mourn; for they shall be comforted. ⁵ Blessed are the meek; for they shall inherit the earth. ⁶ Blessed are they that hunger and thirst for righteousness; for they shall be filled. ⁷ Blessed are the merciful; for they shall receive mercy. ⁸ Blessed are the pure in heart; for they shall see God. ⁹ Blessed are the peacemakers; for they shall be called sons of God. ¹⁰ Blessed are they that are persecuted on account of righteousness; for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. ¹¹ Blessed are you, when they shall reproach you, and persecute you, and say every evil thing against you, falsely, on my account. ¹² Rejoice, and leap for joy; for great is your reward in heaven: for so did they persecute the prophets who were before you.

¹³ You are the salt of the earth: but if the salt has become tasteless, by what means shall it become salt again? It is then good for nothing but to be thrown out and trod upon by men. ¹⁴ You are the light of the world: a city that lies upon a mountain can not be hid: ¹⁵ neither do men light a lamp and place it under the measure, but on the lamp-stand, and it gives light to all that are in the house. ¹⁶ In this way let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven.

¹⁷ Think not that I have come to make the law or the prophets of no effect. I have not come to make them of no effect, but to give them their full efficiency. ¹⁸ For verily I say to you, Till heaven and earth pass away, one yod or one point shall in no way pass from the law till all be fulfilled. ¹⁹ Whoever, therefore, shall make void one of the least of these commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven. But whoever shall do and teach, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. ²⁰ For I say to you, That, unless your righteousness excel that of the scribes and Pharisees, you can by no means enter into the kingdom of heaven.

²¹ You have heard that it was said to the ancients: You shall not kill; and whoever shall kill, shall be liable to the sentence of the judges. ²² But I say to you, Whoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be liable to the sentence of the judges. And whoever shall say to

his brother, Worthless fellow, shall be liable to the sentence of the Sanhedrin. But who ever shall say, Impious wretch, shall be in danger of hell-fire. ²³If, therefore, you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has any thing against you, ²⁴leave your gift there before the altar, and go, first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. ²⁵Come to an agreement with your opponent at law quickly, while you are on the road with him, lest your opponent at law deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you be thrown into prison. ²⁶Verily, I say to you, You shall by no means come out thence, till you have paid the last farthing.

²⁷You have heard that it was said: You shall not commit adultery. ²⁸But I say to you, Whoever looks upon a woman to cherish desire for her, has already committed adultery with her in his heart. ²⁹If, then, your right eye ensnare you, tear it out, and throw it from you; for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not that your whole body should be thrown into hell. ³⁰And if your right hand ensnare you, cut it off, and throw it from you; for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not that your whole body should be thrown into hell.

³¹It has been said: Whoever will put away his wife, let him give her a bill of divorce. ³²But I say to you, Whoever shall put away his wife, unless on account of lewdness, causes her to commit adultery: and whoever marries her that is divorced, commits adultery. ³³Again, you have heard that it was said to the ancients: You shall not swear falsely, but shall pay to the Lord your vows. ³⁴But I say to you, Swear not at all: neither by heaven, for it is the throne of God; ³⁵nor by the earth, for it is his footstool; nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King: ³⁶neither shall you swear by your head, for you can not make one hair white or black. ³⁷But let your word be, Yes, yes; No, no; for whatever is more than these is of the Evil One.

³⁸You have heard that it was said: An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. ³⁹But I say to you, Resist not the injurious. But whoever will smite you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also. ⁴⁰And to him that will go to law with you, and take away your coat, give your mantle also. ⁴¹And whoever will compel you to go one

mile, go with him two. ⁴²Give to him that asks of you; and from him that would borrow of you, turn not away.

⁴³You have heard that it was said: You shall love your neighbor, and hate your enemy. ⁴⁴But I say to you, Love your enemies: bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who insult you and persecute you: ⁴⁵that you may be the sons of your Father who is in heaven; for he makes his sun to rise upon the evil and the good, and causes it to rain on the just and on the unjust. ⁴⁶For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the publicans the same? ⁴⁷And if you salute your brethren only, in what do you excel? Do not even the publicans so? ⁴⁸Be you therefore perfect, as your Father who is in heaven is perfect.

VI. ¹Beware of doing your charitable deeds before men, to be seen by them; otherwise you have no reward with your Father who is in heaven. ²When, therefore, you do a charitable deed, do not cause a trumpet to be sounded before you, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may be glorified by men. Verily, I say to you, They have their reward. ³But when you do a charitable deed, let not your left hand know what your right hand does; ⁴that your charitable deeds may be in secret; and your Father, who sees in secret, himself will reward you openly.

⁵And when you pray, you shall not be like the hypocrites; for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Verily, I say to you, They have their reward. ⁶But do you, when you pray, go into your closet, and when you have closed the door, pray to your Father who is in secret: and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly. ⁷But when you pray, do not use vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they will be heard for their many words. ⁸Be not, therefore, like them; for your Father knows what things you need before you ask him.

⁹In this manner, therefore, pray you: Our Father who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. ¹⁰Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth, as it is done in heaven. ¹¹Give us this day the bread for our support. ¹²And forgive us our debts, as we also forgive our debtors. ¹³And lead

us not into temptation, but deliver us from the Evil One.¹⁴ For if you forgive men their offenses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you.¹⁵ But if you forgive not men their offenses, neither will your Father forgive your offenses.

¹⁶ And when you fast, do not put on a sad countenance, as the hypocrites do; for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear to men to be fasting. Verily, I say to you, They have their reward.¹⁷ But do you, when you fast, anoint your head and wash your face;¹⁸ that you may not appear to men to be fasting, but to your Father who is in secret. And your Father who sees in secret will reward you.

¹⁹ Lay not up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moths and rust consume, and where thieves break through and steal.²⁰ But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust consumes, and where thieves do not break through, nor steal.²¹ For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.²² The lamp of the body is the eye: if, therefore, your eye be sound, your whole body will be light:²³ But if your eye be diseased, your whole body will be dark. If therefore, the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness!

²⁴ No one can serve two masters: for he will either hate the one and love the other; or he will hold to the one, and neglect the other. You can not serve God and riches.²⁵ For this reason I say to you, Be not anxious for your life, what you shall eat, and what you shall drink; nor for your body, what you shall put on. Is not your life a greater gift than food, and your body than clothing?²⁶ Observe the birds of the air, that they neither sow, nor reap, nor gather into granaries. Yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not much better than they?²⁷ Which of you, by his anxiety, can add one span to his life?²⁸ And why are you anxious about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow: they toil not, nor do they spin.²⁹ But I say to you, That Solomon, in all his glory, was not clothed like one of these.³⁰ If then, God so clothes the herb of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?³¹ Therefore, be not anxious, saying: What shall we eat? or, what shall we drink? or, with what shall we be clothed?³² For after all these things do the Gentiles seek: for your heavenly Father knows that

you need all these things.³³ But seek first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be given to you in addition.³⁴ Therefore, be not anxious about the morrow, for the morrow will have anxieties of its own. Sufficient for the day is its own evil.

VII. ¹Judge not, that you may not be judged: ²for with what judgment you judge, you shall be judged: and with what measure you measure, it shall be measured to you.³ And why do you look at the splinter that is in your brother's eye, but perceive not the beam that is in your own eye?⁴ Or, how will you say to your brother, Let me pull out the splinter from your eye: and lo; a beam is in your own eye?⁵ Hypocrite! first pull the beam out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to pull the splinter out of your brother's eye.

⁶ Give not that which is holy to dogs, nor throw your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and tear you.

⁷ Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you.⁸ For every one that asks, receives; and he that seeks, finds; and to him that knocks, it shall be opened.⁹ What man is there of you, of whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?¹⁰ And if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?¹¹ If then you, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give good things to those who ask him?¹² All things, therefore, whatever you would that men should do to you, even so do you to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

¹³ Enter in through the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction; and many there are that go in through it.¹⁴ How strait is the gate, and how narrow the way, that leads to life! and few there are that find it.

¹⁵ But beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but within are ravenous wolves.¹⁶ By their fruits you will know them. Are grapes gathered from thorns, or figs from thistles?¹⁷ So every good tree produces goodly fruit: but an unsound tree produces diseased fruit.¹⁸ A good tree can not produce diseased fruit; nor can an unsound tree produce goodly fruit.¹⁹ Every tree that does not produce

goodly fruit, is cut down and thrown into the fire.²⁰ Therefore, by their fruits you shall know them.

²¹ Not every one that says to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father who is in heaven.²² Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name, and in thy name cast out demons, and in thy name done many mighty works?²³ And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity.

²⁴ Therefore, whoever hears these words of mine and does them, I will liken him to a wise man, who built his house on the rock:²⁵ and the rain descended, and the torrents came, and the winds blew, and they beat against that house, and it fell not: for it was founded on the rock.²⁶ And every one that hears these words of mine, and does them not, shall be likened to a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand.²⁷ And the rain descended, and the torrents came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell: and great was its fall.

²⁸ And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these words, that the multitudes were astonished at his teaching:²⁹ for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

VIII. ¹ And when he had come down from the mountain, many multitudes followed him.

² And behold, a leper came and did him homage, saying: Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.³ And Jesus stretched out his hand and touched him, saying: I will; be clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.⁴ And Jesus said to him: See that you tell no one. But go, show yourself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.

⁵ And when he entered Capernaum, there came to him a centurion, beseeching him,⁶ and saying: Lord, my servant lies in my house, palsied, fearfully afflicted.⁷ And Jesus said to him: I will go and cure him.⁸ And the centurion answering, said: Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof; but say in a word only, and my servant shall be restored to health.⁹ For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me; and I say to this one, Go, and he goes; and to another, Come, and he comes;

and to my servant, Do this, and he does it.¹⁰ And when Jesus heard it, he was filled with admiration, and said to those who followed him: Verily I say to you, not even in Israel have I found so great faith.¹¹ I also say to you, That many shall come from the east and the west, and shall recline with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven;¹² but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast into the darkness that is without. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.¹³ And Jesus said to the centurion: Go, and as you have believed, so be it to you. And his servant was restored to health in that hour.

¹⁴ And when Jesus had come into Peter's house, he saw his mother-in-law lying, and ill of a fever.¹⁵ And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose and ministered to him.

¹⁶ When the evening had come, they brought to him many that were possessed with demons: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and cured all that were sick;¹⁷ that the word might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: He himself took our infirmities, and bore our diseases.

¹⁸ But when Jesus saw many multitudes about him, he gave orders to depart to the other side.¹⁹ And a certain scribe came and said to him: Teacher, I will follow thee wherever thou goest.²⁰ And Jesus said to him: The foxes have dens, and the birds of the air have roosts; but the Son of man has not where to lay his head.²¹ And another of his disciples said to him: Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father.²² But Jesus said to him: Follow me, and let the dead bury their own dead.

²³ And when he had entered the ship, his disciples followed him.²⁴ And behold, there was a great tempest in the sea, so that the ship was covered by the waves: but he was asleep.²⁵ And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying: Lord, save us; we perish.²⁶ And he said to them: Why are you fearful, O you of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea: and there was a great calm.²⁷ But the men were astonished, and said: What man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!

²⁸ And when he had come to the opposite side, into the country of the Gadarenes, there met him two men, coming out of the tombs, possessed with demons, very fierce, so that no

one could pass that way. ²⁹ And behold, they cried out, saying: What have we to do with thee, Jesus, Son of God? Hast thou come hither to torment us before the time? ³⁰ Now there was, at a distance from them, a herd of many swine, feeding. ³¹ And the demons besought him, saying: If thou cast us out, permit us to go away into the herd of swine. ³² And he said to them: Go. And when they had come out, they went away into the herd of swine. And behold, the whole herd of swine rushed down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. ³³ And those who fed them fled, and went into the city, and told every thing, and what had happened to those who had been possessed with the demons. ³⁴ And, behold, all the city came out to meet Jesus. And when they saw him, they besought him to depart out of their borders.

IX. ¹ And he entered the ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. ² And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed. And Jesus, seeing their faith, said to the palsied man: Son, be of good courage; your sins are forgiven you. ³ And behold, some of the scribes said within themselves: This man talks impiously. ⁴ And Jesus, perceiving their thoughts, said: Why do evil thoughts arise in your hearts? ⁵ For, which is easier, to say, Your sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, and walk? ⁶ But that you may know that the Son of man on earth has authority to forgive sins (then he said to the palsied man): Arise, take up your bed, and go to your house. ⁷ And he arose, and departed to his house. ⁸ And when the multitude saw it, they were astonished, and glorified God, who had given such authority to men.

⁹ And as Jesus passed by from that place, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the custom-house; and he said to him: Follow me. And he arose and followed him. ¹⁰ And it came to pass that, while Jesus was reclining at table in his house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and reclined at table with him and his disciples. ¹¹ And when the Pharisees saw it, they said to his disciples: Why does your teacher eat with publicans and sinners? ¹² When Jesus heard it, he said to them: Those who are in health have no need of a physician, but those who are sick. ¹³ But go and learn what this means: I desire mercy, and not sacrifice. For I came not to call righteous men, but sinners to repentance.

¹⁴ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying: Why do we and the Pharisees fast often, but your disciples fast not? ¹⁵ And Jesus said to them: Can the sons of the bride-chamber mourn while the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then will they fast. ¹⁶ No one puts a patch of new cloth on an old garment; for that which is put in to fill it up, takes from the garment, and a worse rent is made. ¹⁷ Nor do men put new wine into old bottles; if so, the bottles burst, and the wine runs out, and the bottles are lost. But they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved. ¹⁸ While he was speaking these things to them, behold, a certain ruler came and did him homage, saying: My daughter is already dead; but come, lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live. ¹⁹ And Jesus and his disciples arose and followed him.

²⁰ And behold, a woman that had been diseased with an issue of blood for twelve years, came behind him, and touched the fringe of his mantle. ²¹ For she said within herself: If I may only touch his mantle, I shall be saved. ²² But Jesus turned, and saw her, and said: Daughter, be of good courage; your faith has saved you. And the woman was saved from that hour. ²³ And when Jesus came into the house of the ruler, and saw the minstrels and the multitude making lamentation, ²⁴ he said to them: Depart; for the maid is not dead, but sleeps. And they derided him. ²⁵ But when the multitude had been sent out, he went in, and took the maiden by the hand, and she arose. ²⁶ And the fame of this went abroad in all that land.

²⁷ And as Jesus was departing thence, two blind men followed him, crying out and saying: Son of David, have mercy on us. ²⁸ And when he had entered the house, the blind men came to him. And Jesus said to them: Do you believe that I am able to do this? They said to him, Yes, Lord. ²⁹ Then he touched their eyes, and said: According to your faith, be it to you. ³⁰ And their eyes were opened; and Jesus strictly charged them, saying: See that no one know it, ³¹ But they went out and spread his fame abroad in all that land.

³² And as they were going out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a demon. ³³ And after the demon had been cast out, the dumb man spoke. And the multitudes

were astonished, and said: Never was it seen thus in Israel. ³⁴But the Pharisees said: He casts out the demons by the prince of the demons.

³⁵And Jesus went through all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and curing every disease and every infirmity. ³⁶And when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were troubled and scattered as sheep that had no shepherd. ³⁷Then he said to his disciples: The harvest is abundant, but the laborers are few. ³⁸Therefore pray the Lord of the harvest to send out laborers into his harvest.

X. ¹And he called to him his twelve disci-
ples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits, so that they might cast them out, and cure every disease and every infirmity.

²Now these are the names of the twelve apostles: the first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother; ³Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphæus, and Lebbæus, who was surnamed Thaddæus; ⁴Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also delivered him up.

⁵These twelve Jesus sent forth after he had charged them, saying: Go not into the road that leads to the Gentiles, and enter not a city of the Samaritans. ⁶But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. ⁷And as you go, preach, saying: The kingdom of heaven is at hand. ⁸Cure the sick, cleanse the lepers, cast out demons. Freely you have received, freely give. ⁹Provide for yourselves neither gold, nor silver, nor brass, to put into your purses, ¹⁰nor bag for your journey, nor two coats, nor sandals, nor staffs: for the laborer is worthy of his support.

¹¹Whatever city or village you enter, inquire who in it is worthy, and there make your home till you go away. ¹²When you go into a house, salute it: ¹³and if the house be worthy, your peace shall come upon it; but if it be not worthy, your peace shall return to you. ¹⁴And whoever will not receive you, nor hear your words, when you go out of that house or that city, shake off the dust from your feet. ¹⁵Verily I say to you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah, in the day of judgment, than for that city.

¹⁶Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be, therefore, wise as serpents, and guileless as doves. ¹⁷But beware of men: for they will deliver you to the councils, and scourge you in their synagogues; ¹⁸and you will be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. ¹⁹But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what you shall speak; for that which you shall speak shall be given you in that hour: ²⁰for it is not you that speak, but it is the Spirit of your Father that speaks in you. ²¹Brother will deliver up brother to death, and the father the child; and children will rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. ²²And you will be hated by all men on my account: but he that endures to the end shall be saved.

²³But when they persecute you in this city, flee into another: for verily I say to you, You will not have made the circuit of the cities of Israel before the Son of man shall come. ²⁴The disciple is not above his teacher, nor the servant above his master. ²⁵It is enough for the disciple, that he be as his teacher; and for the servant, that he be as his master. If they call the master of the house Beelzebul, how much more those of his household? ²⁶Fear them not, therefore; for there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed, nor hidden that shall not be made known. ²⁷What I tell you in darkness, speak in the light: and what you hear in the ear, preach on the house-tops.

²⁸And fear not them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul. But rather fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. ²⁹Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and yet not one of them shall fall upon the ground without your Father. ³⁰But even the hairs of your head are all numbered. ³¹Fear not, therefore: you are of more value than many sparrows. ³²Whoever, therefore, will confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father who is in heaven. ³³But whoever will deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in heaven.

³⁴Think not that I have come to send peace on the earth. I have not come to send peace, but a sword. ³⁵For I have come to set a man at variance with his father, and the daughter with her mother, and the daughter-in-law with her mother-in-law: ³⁶and a man's enemies shall be those of his own household. ³⁷He that loves

father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me: and he that loves son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me: ³⁸and whoever does not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me. ³⁹He that finds his life shall lose it; and he that loses his life for my sake, shall find it. ⁴⁰He that receives you, receives me: and he that receives me, receives him that sent me. ⁴¹He that receives a prophet because he is a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward: and he that receives a righteous man because he is a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. ⁴²And whoever will give one of these little ones only a cup of cold water to drink, because he is a disciple, verily I say to you, he shall not lose his reward.

XI. ¹And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

²Now when John had heard in the prison of the works of the Christ, he sent two of his disciples, ³and said to him: Art thou he that was to come, or must we look for another? ⁴And Jesus answered and said to them: Go and tell John what you hear and see. ⁵The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk; the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear; the dead are raised, and the poor have the gospel preached to them; ⁶and blessed is he that shall find in me no cause of offense.

⁷As these were going away, Jesus began to say to the multitudes concerning John: What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind? ⁸But what did you go out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, those who wear soft clothing are in kings houses. ⁹But what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I say to you, and more than a prophet. ¹⁰For this is he of whom it is written: Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee. ¹¹Verily, I say to you, Among those born of women, there has not risen a greater than John the Immerser. But the least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

¹²From the days of John the Immerser till now, the kingdom of heaven is taken by violence, and men of violence seize upon it eagerly. ¹³For all the prophets and the law prophesied till John; ¹⁴and if you are willing to receive it, he is Elijah that was to come. ¹⁵He that has ears to

hear, let him hear. ¹⁶But to what shall I liken this generation? It is like children sitting in the markets, and calling to their companions, ¹⁷and saying: We have played on the pipe for you, and you have not danced; we have wailed for you, and you have not lamented. ¹⁸For John came, neither eating nor drinking, and they say: He has a demon. ¹⁹The Son of man has come eating and drinking, and they say: Behold, a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friend of publicans and sinners. Yet wisdom is vindicated by her children.

²⁰Then he began to reprove the cities in which most of his mighty works had been done, because they did not repent. ²¹Alas for thee, Chorazin! alas for thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works which have been done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. ²²But I say to you, It will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon, in the day of judgment, than for you. ²³And thou, Capernaum, that hast been exalted to heaven, shalt be brought down to hades. For if the mighty works which have been done in thee had been done in Sodom, it would have remained till this day. ²⁴But I say to you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment, than for thee.

²⁵At that time Jesus answered and said: I thank thee, Father, Lord of heaven and of earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them to babes.

²⁶Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. ²⁷All things have been delivered to me by my Father; and no one knows the Son, but the Father; nor does any one know the Father, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him. ²⁸Come to me, all you that are weary, and heavily burdened, and I will give you rest. ²⁹Take my yoke upon you, and learn from me; for I am meek and lowly in heart; and you shall find rest for your souls. ³⁰For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

XII. ¹At that time Jesus was going, on the Sabbath, through the fields of grain; and his disciples were hungry, and began to pull the ears of grain, and to eat. ²But when the Pharisees saw it, they said to him: Behold, your disciples are doing what it is not lawful to do on the Sabbath. ³But he said to them: Have you not read what David did, when he and those

who were with him were hungry? ⁴how he entered the house of God, and ate the loaves of the presence, which it was not lawful for him to eat, nor for those who were with him, but for the priests only? ⁵Or, have you not read in the law that on the Sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the Sabbath, and are blameless? ⁶But I say to you, that something greater than the temple is here. ⁷But if you had known what this means—I desire mercy, and not sacrifice—you would not have condemned the blameless. ⁸For the Son of man is Lord of the Sabbath.

⁹And he departed thence, and went into their synagogue. ¹⁰And behold, a man was there that had a withered hand. And they asked him, saying: Is it lawful to cure on the Sabbath-days? that they might accuse him. ¹¹And he said to them: What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if this fall into a pit on the Sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it and lift it out? ¹²How much better, then, is a man than a sheep! So it is lawful to do well on the Sabbath-days. ¹³Then he said to the man: Stretch forth your hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored to soundness, like the other. ¹⁴But the Pharisees went out and took counsel against him, that they might destroy him. ¹⁵But Jesus perceived it, and withdrew from that place. And many multitudes followed him, and he cured them all. ¹⁶And he charged them not to make him known; ¹⁷that the word might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: ¹⁸Be hold, my servant whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul delights. I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall declare law to the Gentiles. ¹⁹He shall not contend, nor cry out; nor shall any one hear his voice in the streets. ²⁰A bruised reed he shall not break, and a smoking wick he shall not extinguish, till he shall send forth his law for conquest. ²¹And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

²²Then was brought to him a demoniac, blind and dumb: and he cured him, so that the blind and dumb man both spoke and saw. ²³And all the people were amazed, and said: Is not this the son of David? ²⁴But the Pharisees, when they heard it, said: This man does not cast out the demons, unless by Beelzebul, the prince of the demons. ²⁵But Jesus, knowing their

thoughts, said to them: Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation. And no city or house divided against itself shall stand. ²⁶And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then shall his kingdom stand? ²⁷And if I cast out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your sons cast them out? For this reason, they shall be your judges. ²⁸But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has already come upon you. ²⁹Or, how can any one enter the house of the strong man and spoil his goods, unless he first bind the strong man? and then he will plunder his house. ³⁰He that is not with me, is against me; and he that gathers not with me, scatters.

³¹Therefore I say to you, That every sin and impious speech shad be forgiven men: but the impious speech against the Spirit shall not be forgiven men. ³²And whoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, either in the present age, or in that which is to come. ³³Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree unsound, and its fruit unsound. For by the fruit the tree is known. ³⁴Generation of vipers, how can you, being evil, speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart, the mouth speaks. ³⁵The good man, out of his good treasury, brings forth good things; and the evil man, out of his evil treasury, brings forth evil things. ³⁶But I say to you, That for every idle word which men speak, they shall give account in the day of judgment. ³⁷For by your words you shall be justified, and by your words you shall be condemned.

³⁸Then some of the scribes and Pharisees answered and said: Teacher, we wish to see a sign from you. ³⁹But he answered and said to them: A wicked and adulterous generation seeks for a sign; and no sign shall be given to it, but the sign of Jonah the prophet. ⁴⁰For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the great fish, so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. ⁴¹Tho men of Nineveh shall rise in the judgment with this generation, and condemn it; for they repented in accordance with the preaching of Jonah; and behold, something greater than Jonah is here. ⁴²The queen of the south shall rise in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it;

for she came from the most distant parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here.

⁴³When the unclean spirit has gone out of a man, he goes through dry places seeking rest, and finds none. ⁴⁴Then he says: I will return to my house, out of which I came. And he comes and finds it empty, swept, and set in order.

⁴⁵Then he goes and takes with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in and dwell there. And the last state of that man is worse than the first. So shall it be with this wicked generation.

⁴⁶While he was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold, his mother and his brothers stood without, desiring to speak to him. ⁴⁷And some one said to him: Behold, your mother and your brothers stand without, desiring to speak to you.

⁴⁸But he answered and said to him that told him: Who is my mother? and who are my brothers? ⁴⁹And he stretched out his hand toward his disciples, and said: Behold my mother and my brothers. ⁵⁰For whoever will do the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

XIII. ¹On that day Jesus went out of the house, and sat by the sea. ²And many multitudes came together to him, so that he went into a ship and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

³And he spoke many things to them in parables, saying: Behold, the sower went out to sow. ⁴And as he sowed, some seeds fell by the way; and the birds came and ate them up. ⁵Others fell on stony places, where they had not much earth; and they immediately sprung up, because they had no depth of earth. ⁶But when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. ⁷Others fell among thorns, and the thorns sprung up and choked them. ⁸Others fell upon good ground, and brought forth fruit, some a hundred, some fifty, some thirty. ⁹He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

¹⁰And the disciples came and said to him: Why dost thou speak to them in parables? ¹¹He answered, and said to them: Because it is given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven; but to them it is not given. ¹²For whoever has, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but whoever has not, even that

which he has shall be taken from him. ¹³For this reason I speak to them in parables; because when they see, they see not; and when they hear, they hear not, nor do they understand. ¹⁴And in them is fulfilled the prophesy of Isaiah, which says: You shall surely hear, and you will not understand; and you shall surely see, and you will not perceive. ¹⁵For the heart of this people has become fat; and with their ears they hear heavily; and their eyes they have closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should turn to me, and I should give them health. ¹⁶But blessed are your eyes, for they see; and your ears, for they hear. ¹⁷For verily I say to you, Many prophets and righteous men desired to see what you see, and did not see; and to hear what you hear, and did not hear.

¹⁸Hear you, therefore, the parable of the sower. ¹⁹When any one hears the word of the kingdom, and understands it not, the wicked one comes and catches away that which was sown in his heart. This is he that received seed by the wayside. ²⁰He that received seed on the stony places is he that hears the word, and immediately receives it with joy. ²¹Yet he has no root in himself, but endures for a while; and when affliction or persecution arises on account of the word, he immediately takes offense. ²²He that received seed among the thorns, is he that hears the word; and the cares of this age, and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. ²³But he that received seed on the good ground, is he that hears the word and understands it; who also produces fruit, and yields, one a hundred; another, sixty; another, thirty.

²⁴Another parable he laid before them, saying: The kingdom of heaven is likened to a man that sowed good seed in his field. ²⁵But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went away. ²⁶But when the blade sprung up, and produced fruit, then appeared the tares also. ²⁷And the servants of the master of the house came, and said to him, Sir, did you not sow good seed in your field? Whence, then, has it tares? ²⁸He said to them, An enemy has done this. The servants said to him, Is it your will, then, that we go and gather them up? ²⁹But he said, No; lest while you are gathering the tares, you root up the wheat with

them.³⁰ Let both grow together till the harvest, and in time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Collect first the tares, and bind them into bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my granary.

³¹ Another parable he laid before them, saying: The kingdom of heaven is like a grain of mustard, that a man took and sowed in his field. ³² It is, indeed, the least of all seeds; but when it is grown it is the largest of garden-plants, and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and roost in its branches.

³³ He spoke another parable to them: The kingdom of heaven is like leaven which a woman took and hid in three measures of flour, till the whole was leavened. ³⁴ All these things Jesus spoke to the multitudes in parables, and without a parable he did not speak to them; ³⁵ that the word might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying: I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things that have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

³⁶ Then Jesus left the multitudes, and went into the house. And his disciples came to him and said: Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field. ³⁷ He answered and said to them: He that sows the good seed is the Son of man; ³⁸ the field is the world; the good seed are the sons of the kingdom; the tares are the sons of the Wicked One; ³⁹ the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are angels. ⁴⁰ As, therefore, the tares are collected and burned in fire, so shall it be in the end of this age. ⁴¹ The Son of man will send forth his angels, and collect out of his kingdom all things that offend, and those who work iniquity, ⁴² and cast them into the furnace of fire; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. ⁴³ Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

⁴⁴ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a treasure hid in a field, which, when a man finds it, he hides; and for the joy it gives, he goes and sells all that he has, and buys that field.

⁴⁵ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant seeking goodly pearls. ⁴⁶ When he finds one pearl of great value, he goes and sells all that he has, and buys it.

⁴⁷ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net that is cast into the sea, and that gathers of every

kind: ⁴⁸ when it is full, they draw it to the shore; and sitting down, they collect the good into vessels, but throw the bad away. ⁴⁹ So shall it be in the end of the age: the angels shall come forth and separate the wicked from among the just, ⁵⁰ and cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

⁵¹ Jesus said to them: Have you understood all these things? They said to him: Yes, Lord.

⁵² He said to them: Therefore, every scribe that is trained for the kingdom of heaven, is like the master of a house, who brings out of his treasury things new and old.

⁵³ And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed from that place.

⁵⁴ And he came into his own country, and taught them in their synagogue, so that they were astonished, and said: Whence has this man this wisdom, and these mighty works? ⁵⁵ Is not this the son of the carpenter? Is not his mother called Mary? and his brothers, James and Joses and Simon and Judas? ⁵⁶ And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence, then, has this man all these things? ⁵⁷ And they found in him occasion for offense. But Jesus said to them: A prophet is not without honor, unless it be in his own country and in his own house. ⁵⁸ And he did not many mighty works there, on account of their unbelief.

XIV. ¹ At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus; ² and he said to his servants: This is John The Immerser; he has risen from the dead; and for this reason the powers of the spiritual world are active within him.

³ For Herod had laid hold of John, and bound him, and put him in prison on account of Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip. ⁴ For John said to him: It is not lawful for you to have her. ⁵ And he intended to put him to death, but feared the multitude, because they regarded him as a prophet. ⁶ But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced in the midst, and pleased Herod. ⁷ Wherefore he promised, with an oath, to give her whatever she would ask. ⁸ And being previously instigated by her mother, she said: Give me here in a dish the head of John the Immerser? ⁹ And the king was grieved: but on account of his oath, and those who reclined at table with him, he commanded it to be given. ¹⁰ And he sent and beheaded John

in the prison. ¹¹ And his head was brought in a dish, and given to the maiden: and she carried it to her mother. ¹² And his disciples came and took away the body, and buried it; and went and told Jesus.

¹³ And when Jesus heard of it, he withdrew from that place, by ship, into a desert place apart: and the multitudes, when they heard of his departure, followed him, on foot, from the cities.

¹⁴ And when Jesus came out, he saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion for them, and cured their sick.

¹⁵ And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, and said: This is a desert place, and the hour is now past; send the multitudes away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves food. ¹⁶ But Jesus said to them: They need not go away; do you give them food. ¹⁷ They said to him: We have here but five loaves and two fishes. ¹⁸ He said: Bring them hither to me. ¹⁹ And he commanded the multitudes to recline upon the grass: and he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looked up to heaven, and blessed, and broke, and gave the bread to the disciples, and the disciples *gave it* to the multitudes. ²⁰ And they all ate and were satisfied. And they took up what remained of the broken pieces, twelve baskets full. ²¹ And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, besides women and children.

²² And he immediately constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and go before him to the opposite side, while he sent the multitudes away. ²³ And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain apart to pray. And when evening came, he was there alone. ²⁴ But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed by the waves, for the wind was against them.

²⁵ And in the fourth watch of the night he came to them, walking on the sea. ²⁶ And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were alarmed, and said: It is a specter! and they cried out for fear. ²⁷ But Jesus immediately spoke to them, and said: Take courage; it is I; be not afraid. ²⁸ And Peter answered him, and said: Lord, if it be thou, bid me come to thee on the water. ²⁹ And he said: Come. And Peter went down from the ship, and walked upon the water to go to Jesus. ³⁰ But when he saw the wind

strong, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying: Lord, save me. ³¹ And Jesus immediately stretched out his hand, and took hold of him, and said to him: O you of little faith, why did you doubt? ³² And when they had entered the ship, the wind ceased. ³³ And they that were in the ship came and worshiped him, saying: Truly, thou art the Son of God.

³⁴ And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret. ³⁵ And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all the neighboring country, and brought to him all that were sick; ³⁶ and besought him that they might only touch the fringe of his mantle; and as many as touched were perfectly saved.

XV. ¹ Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees that were of Jerusalem, saying: ² Why do your disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they do not wash their hands when they eat bread. ³ But he answered and said to them: And why do you transgress the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition? ⁴ For God commanded, saying, Honor your father and your mother; and, He that curses father or mother shall surely be put to death. ⁵ But you say, Whoever shall say to his father or his mother, Whatever of mine might profit you, is a gift, he must in no way honor his father or his mother; ⁶ and you make the commandment of God of no effect for the sake of your tradition. ⁷ Hypocrites! well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, ⁸ This people draws near to me with their mouth, and honors me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. ⁹ But in vain, do they worship me, teaching precepts, the commandments of men.

¹⁰ And he called the multitude to him, and said to them: Hear and understand; ¹¹ That which enters the mouth does not defile the man; but that which comes out of the mouth, this defiles the man.

¹² Then came his disciples and said to him: Dost thou know that the Pharisees, when they heard that saying, were offended? ¹³ But he answered and said: Every plant that my heavenly Father has not planted, shall be rooted up. ¹⁴ Let them alone; they are blind leaders of the blind; and if the blind lead the blind, both will fall into the pit. ¹⁵ But Peter answered and said to him: Explain to us this dark saying. ¹⁶ Jesus replied:

Are you also yet without understanding? ¹⁷Do you not yet understand that whatever enters the mouth passes into the belly, and is cast out into the sink? ¹⁸But those things which go out from the mouth, come from the heart; and these defile the man. ¹⁹For from the heart come evil reasonings, murders, adulteries, lewd actions, thefts, false testimonies, impious words. ²⁰These are the things that defile the man. But to eat with unwashed hands does not defile the man.

²¹And Jesus went out thence, and withdrew into the regions of Tyre and Sidon. ²²And behold, a woman of Chanaan came out from those borders, and cried to him, saying: Have mercy on me, Lord, son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a demon. ²³But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying: Send her away, for she cries after us. ²⁴But he answered and said: I am not sent but to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. ²⁵But she came and did him homage, saying: Lord, help me. ²⁶He answered and said: It is not good to take the children's bread, and throw it to the little dogs. ²⁷She replied: Yes, Lord; and yet *thou canst help me*; for the little dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from the table of their masters. ²⁸Then Jesus answered and said to her: O woman, great is your faith; be it to you as you desire. And her daughter was restored to health from that hour.

²⁹And Jesus departed thence, and came near the sea of Galilee, and went up into the mountain, and sat there. ³⁰And many multitudes came to him, having with them the lame, the blind, the deaf, the maimed, and many others; and laid them at the feet of Jesus, and he cured them; ³¹so that the multitudes were astonished, when they saw the dumb speaking, the maimed whole, the lame walking, and the blind seeing; and they glorified the God of Israel.

³²Then Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: I have compassion on the multitude, because they have been with me now three days, and have nothing to eat. And I am not willing to send them away fasting, lest they faint on the road. ³³And his disciples said to him: Whence should we have in the desert as many loaves as would satisfy so great a multitude? ³⁴And Jesus said to them: How many loaves have you? They said: Seven, and a few little fishes. ³⁵And he commanded the multitude to recline on the

ground. ³⁶And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and broke, and gave thorn to the disciples, and the disciples gave them to the multitude. ³⁷And they all ate and were satisfied; and they took up what remained of the broken pieces, seven baskets full. ³⁸And those who ate were four thousand men, besides women and children. ³⁹And he sent the multitudes away, and entered the ship, and went into the borders of Magdala.

XVI. ¹And the Pharisees and Sadducees came to tempt him, and asked him to show them a sign from heaven. ²But he answered and said to them: When it is evening, you say, Fair weather; for the sky is red. ³And in the morning, A storm to-day; for the sky is red and lowering. Hypocrites! you know how to judge of the face of the sky; but you can not judge of the signs of the times. ⁴A wicked and adulterous generation seeks for a sign: and no sign shall be given it but the sign of Jonah the prophet. And he left them and departed.

⁵And his disciples came to the other side, and had forgotten to take bread. ⁶And Jesus said to them: Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. ⁷And they reasoned among themselves, saying: It is because we took no bread. ⁸And Jesus perceiving it, said to them: O you of little faith! why are you reasoning among yourselves because you took no bread? ⁹Do you not yet understand, nor remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets you took up? ¹⁰Nor the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets you took up? ¹¹How is it that you do not understand, that I did not speak of bread when I commanded you to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? ¹²Then they understood that he did not bid them beware of the leaven of bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

¹³When Jesus came into the regions of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying: Who do men say that I, the Son of man, am? ¹⁴They replied: Some say that thou art John the Immerser; others, Elijah; others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. ¹⁵He said to them: But who say you that I am? ¹⁶Simon Peter answered and said: Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. ¹⁷And Jesus answered and said to him: Blessed are you, Simon, son of Jonah; for flesh

and blood did not reveal this to you, but my Father who is in heaven. ¹⁸ And I say to you, That you are Peter, and on this rock I will build my church: and the gates of hades shall not prevail against it. ¹⁹ And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatever you shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatever you shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. ²⁰ Then he charged his disciples to tell no one that he was the Christ.

²¹ From that time Jesus began to tell his disciples plainly, that he must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be put to death, and be raised again the third day. ²² And Peter took him and began to rebuke him, saying: Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be to thee. ²³ But he turned and said to Peter: Get behind me, adversary; you are a snare to me: for you are not thinking of the things of God; but of the things of men.

²⁴ Then Jesus said to his disciples: If any one determines to come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. ²⁵ For whoever will save his life, shall lose it. But whoever will lose his life for my sake, shall find it. ²⁶ For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, but lose his own life? Or, what will a man give as the ransom of his life? ²⁷ For the Son of man will come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he will reward every one according to his deeds. ²⁸ Verily I say to you, There are some standing here that shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

XVII. ¹ And after six days, Jesus took with him Peter and James and John his brother, and led them up into a high mountain apart: ² and he was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his clothing was white as the light. ³ And behold, there appeared to them Moses and Elijah, talking with him. ⁴ And Peter answered and said to Jesus: Lord, it is good for us to be here; if thou wilt, let us make here three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. ⁵ While he was yet speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and lo, a voice from the cloud, saying: This is my beloved Son, in whom I delight; hear him. ⁶ And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their faces, and were greatly

afraid. ⁷ And Jesus came and touched them, and said: Arise and be not afraid. ⁸ And when they lifted up their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus.

⁹ And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying: Tell the vision to no one, till the Son of man has risen from the dead. ¹⁰ And his disciples asked him, saying: Why then do the scribes say that Elijah must come first? ¹¹ Jesus answered and said to them: Elijah, indeed, comes first, and he will restore all things. ¹² But I say to you, That Elijah has already come, and they did not recognize him, but did to him what they wished; so also shall the Son of man suffer at their hands. ¹³ Then, the disciples understood that he spoke to them of John the Immerser.

¹⁴ And when they had come to the multitude, there came to him a man who knelt to him, ¹⁵ and said: Lord, have mercy on my son; for he is a lunatic, and suffers grievously; for he often falls into the fire, and often into the water.

¹⁶ And I brought him to thy disciples, and they were not able to cure him. ¹⁷ Jesus answered and said: O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I bear with you? Bring him hither to me. ¹⁸ And Jesus rebuked the demon, and he came out of him: and the child was cured from that hour.

¹⁹ Then the disciples came to Jesus privately, and said: Why were we not able to cast him out? ²⁰ And Jesus said to them: Because of your unbelief. For verily I say to you, If you have faith like a grain of mustard-seed, you shall say to this mountain, Be removed from this place to that, and it shall be removed: and nothing shall be impossible for you. ²¹ But this kind does not go out but by prayer and fasting.

²² And as they were making their journey in Galilee, Jesus said to them: The Son of man is about to be delivered into the hands of men; ²³ and they will kill him, and on the third day he will be raised again. And they were very sad.

²⁴ And when they had come into Capernaum, those who collected the didrachma came to Peter, and said: Does not your teacher pay the didrachma? ²⁵ He said: Yes. And when he had come into the house, before he had spoken, Jesus said to him: What think you, Simon? From whom do the kings of the earth collect tax or tribute? From their own sons, or from the sons of others? ²⁶ Peter said to him: From the sons of

others. Jesus said to him: Then are their own sons free. ²⁷But that we may give them no offense, go to the sea, and throw in a hook, and take the fish that comes up first; and when you have opened his mouth, you will find a stater; take that, and give to them for me and you.

XVIII. ¹At that hour the disciples came to Jesus, and said: Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven? ²And Jesus called a little child to him, and placed him in the midst of them, ³and said: Verily I say to you, Unless you turn and become as little children, you can not enter the kingdom of heaven. ⁴Whoever, therefore, humbles himself as this little child, is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. ⁵And whoever receives one such little child on my account, receives me; ⁶but whoever ensnares one of these little ones that believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hung about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

⁷Alas for the world because of snares! for it is necessary that snares come: but alas for that man by whom the snare comes! ⁸If, then, your hand or your foot ensnares you, cut it off, and throw it from you. It is better for you to enter into life lame or maimed, than, having two hands or two feet, to be thrown into the eternal fire. ⁹And if your eye ensnares you, pull it out, and throw it from you. It is better to enter into life with one eye, than, having two eyes, to be thrown into hell-fire.

¹⁰Take heed that you despise not one of these little ones: for I say to you, That their angels in heaven do always behold the face of my Father who is in heaven. ¹¹For the Son of man has come to save that which is lost. ¹²What think you? If a man have a hundred sheep, and one of them go astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine, and go into the mountains, and seek for that which has gone astray? ¹³And if it so be that he find it, verily I say to you, he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine that did not go astray. ¹⁴Even so, it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven, that one of these little ones should be lost.

¹⁵And if your brother sin against you, go and tell him of his fault between you and him alone; if he hear you, you have gained your brother. ¹⁶But if he will not hear you, take with you one or two more, that, by the mouth of two

or three witnesses, every word may be established. ¹⁷But if he refuse to hear them, tell it to the church; and if he also refuse to hear the church, let him be to you as a heathen man and a publican.

¹⁸Verily, I say to you, *my disciples*, Whatever you bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. ¹⁹Again, I say to you, that if two of you agree on earth about any thing for which they will ask, it shall be done for them by my Father who is in heaven. ²⁰For where there are two or three that have come together for my sake, there I am in the midst of them.

²¹Then Peter came to him, and said: Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Till seven times? ²²Jesus said to him: I say to you, Not till seven times, but till seventy times seven. ²³For this reason, the kingdom of heaven is likened to a king that wished to settle accounts with his servants. ²⁴And when he began to make a settlement, there was brought to him one that owed him ten thou sand talents. ²⁵But as he was not able to pay, his lord commanded him, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, to be sold, and payment to be made. ²⁶Therefore, the servant fell down and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, Lord, and I will pay you all. ²⁷And the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and let him go, and forgave him the debt.

²⁸But that servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, who owed him a hundred denarii; and he laid hold of him, and took him by the throat, saying: Pay me what you owe.

²⁹Then his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying: Have patience with me, and I will pay you all. ³⁰And he would not; but went and threw him into prison, till he should pay the debt. ³¹When his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sad, and went and made known to their lord all that was done. ³²Then his lord called him and said to him: Wicked servant! I forgave you all that debt, because you besought me. ³³Ought you not to have had mercy on your fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on you? ³⁴And his lord was angry, and delivered him to the jailers, till he should pay all that was due him. ³⁵So also will my heavenly Father do to you, if, from your hearts, you forgive not every one his brother's offenses.

XIX. ¹And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these discourses, that he departed from Galilee, and came into the borders of Judea, beyond the Jordan. ²And many multitudes followed him; and he cured them there.

³ And the Pharisees came to him to tempt him, and said to him: Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? ⁴He answered and said to them: Have you not read that the Creator, at the beginning, created them male and female, ⁵and said, For this cause shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave to his wife, and the two shall be one flesh? ⁶So then, they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore, what God has joined together, let not man put asunder.

⁷They said to him: Why, then, did Moses command us to give a bill of divorce and put her away? ⁸He said to them: Moses, on account of the hardness of your hearts, permitted you to put away your wives; but from the beginning it was not so. ⁹But I say to you, That whoever puts away his wife, unless for lewdness, and marries another, commits adultery; and he that marries her that is put away, commits adultery.

¹⁰His disciples said to him: If the relation of man and wife be such, it is not good to marry. ¹¹But he said to them: All can not accept this saying; only those to whom it is given. ¹²For there are eunuchs that were born such from their mother's womb; and there are eunuchs that have been made eunuchs by men; and there are eunuchs that have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. Let him accept it that is able to accept it.

¹³Then little children were brought to him, that he might lay his hands on them and pray. And the disciples rebuked them. ¹⁴But Jesus said: Let the little children come to me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of heaven. ¹⁵And he laid his hands on them, and departed from that place.

¹⁶ And behold, one came and said to him: Good teacher, what good thing must I do that I may have eternal life? He said to him: ¹⁷Why do you call me good? There is none good but one, that is God. But if you desire to enter into life, keep the commandments. ¹⁸He said to him: Which? Jesus replied: You shall not kill; You shall not commit adultery; You shall not steal;

You shall not give false testimony; ¹⁹Honor your father and your mother; and, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. ²⁰The young man said to him: All these have I kept from my youth, what do I lack? ²¹Jesus said to him: If you would be perfect, go, sell your possessions, and give to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me. ²²When the young man heard that saying, he went away grieved; for he had great possessions.

²³Jesus said to his disciples: Verily I say to you, A rich man will with difficulty enter into the kingdom of heaven. ²⁴And again I say to you: It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. ²⁵When the disciples heard it, they were greatly amazed, and said: Who, then, can be saved? ²⁶But Jesus looked on them, and said to them: With men, this is impossible; but with God, all things are possible.

²⁷Then Peter answered and said to him: Behold, we have left all and followed thee; what, then, shall we have? ²⁸Jesus said to them: Verily I say to you, That, in the restoration, when the Son of man shall sit on his glorious throne, you also who have followed me shall sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. ²⁹And every one that has left houses, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive a hundred-fold, and shall inherit eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first.

XX. ¹For the kingdom of heaven is like the master of a house, who went out early in the morning to hire laborers for his vineyard. ²And when he had agreed with the laborers for a denarius a day, he sent them into his vineyard. ³And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the market, idle; ⁴and he said to them: Go you also into my vineyard, and whatever is right I will give you. ⁵And they went. Again he went out about the sixth, and about the ninth hour, and did in like manner. ⁶And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and said to them, Why do you stand here all the day idle? ⁷They said to him: No man has hired us. He said to them: Go you also into the vineyard, and whatever is right you shall receive.

⁸When the evening came, the owner of the vineyard said to his steward: Call the laborers,

and, beginning with the last, pay them their hire even to the first. ⁹ And when those came who had been hired about the eleventh hour, they received each one a denarius. ¹⁰ But when those came who had been hired first, they thought that they would receive more; and they received each one a denarius. ¹¹ And when they received it, they murmured against the master of the house, ¹² saying: These last have worked one hour, and you have made them equal to us, who have borne the burden of the day, and the heat. ¹³ But he answered and said to one of them: Friend, I do you no injustice; did you not agree with me for a denarius? ¹⁴ Take what is yours, and go; I will give to this last even as to you. ¹⁵ Is it not allowed me to do what I will with my own? Or, is your eye envious, because I am good? ¹⁶ So the last shall be first, and the first last. For many are called, but few are chosen.

¹⁷ And as Jesus was going up to Jerusalem, he took the twelve disciples aside on his journey, and said to them: ¹⁸ Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered to the chief priests and the scribes, and they will condemn him to death, ¹⁹ and will deliver him to the Gentiles to deride, and to scourge, and to crucify: and on the third day he shall rise again.

²⁰ Then came to him the mother of the sons of Zebedee, with her sons, bowing down, and asking something of him. ²¹ He said to her: What do you wish? She said to him: Command that these two sons of mine may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left, in thy kingdom. ²² But Jesus answered and said: You know not what you ask. Are you able to drink the cup that I am about to drink, and to be immersed with the immersion with which I am immersed? They said to him: We are able. ²³ And he said to them: You shall drink my cup, and be immersed with the immersion with which I am immersed: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give; but it shall be given to them for whom it has been prepared by my Father.

²⁴ And when the ten heard it, their anger was aroused against the two brothers. ²⁵ But Jesus called them to him, and said: You know that the rulers of the Gentiles act as lords over them, and their great men have authority over them. ²⁶ It shall not be so among you. But whoever will be great among you, let him be your minister.

²⁷ And whoever will be first among you, let him be your servant; ²⁸ even as the Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

²⁹ And as they went out from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. ³⁰ And behold, two blind men, sitting by the road, when they heard that Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying: Have mercy on us, Lord, son of David. ³¹ And the multitude charged them to be silent. But they cried the more, saying: Have mercy on us, Lord, son of David. ³² And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said: What do you wish me to do for you? ³³ They said to him: Lord, that our eyes may be opened. ³⁴ Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes; and their eyes immediately received sight, and they followed him.

XXI. ¹ And when they drew near to Jerusalem, and had come to Bethphage, to the mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, ² saying to them: Go into the village opposite to you, and immediately you will find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them to me. ³ And if any one say anything to you, you shall reply: The Lord has need of them: and he will immediately send them. ⁴ All this was done, that the word might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying: ⁵ Say you to the daughter of Zion, Behold, your king comes to you, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

⁶ And the disciples went and did as Jesus commanded them; ⁷ and brought the ass and the colt, and put their mantles on them, and caused him to sit upon them. ⁸ And a very great multitude spread their mantles in the road: and others cut branches from the trees, and spread them in the road. ⁹ And the multitudes that went before, and that followed after, cried, saying: Hosanna to the son of David. Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord. Hosanna in the highest.

¹⁰ And when he entered Jerusalem, all the city was moved, and said: Who is this? ¹¹ And the multitude said: This is Jesus the prophet, that is from Nazareth of Galilee.

¹² And Jesus went into the temple of God, and drove out all that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of those who sold doves, ¹³ and said to them: It is written, My house shall be called a house of prayer; but you have made it

a den of robbers.¹⁴ And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple, and he cured them.¹⁵ But when the chief priests and the scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David, their anger was aroused,¹⁶ and they said to him: Do you not hear what these say? And Jesus said to them: Yes; have you never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?¹⁷ And he left them, and went out of the city to Bethany, and there spent the night.

¹⁸ Now in the morning, as he was returning to the city, he was hungry:¹⁹ and seeing a fig-tree on the road, he went to it, and found nothing on it but leaves; and he said to it: Let no fruit grow on you henceforth forever. And the fig-tree immediately withered.²⁰ And when the disciples saw it, they were astonished, and said: How soon has the fig-tree withered!²¹ Jesus answered and said to them: Verily I say to you, If you have faith, and doubt not, you shall do, not only what is done to the fig-tree, but even if you shall say to this mountain, Be taken up, and be thrown into the sea, it shall be done.²² And all things that you ask for in prayer, believing, you shall receive.

²³ And after he had come into the temple, the chief priests and elders of the people came to him as he was teaching, and said: By what authority do you these things? And who gave you this authority?²⁴ Jesus answered and said to them: I also will ask you one thing, which if you will tell me, I also will tell you by what authority I do these things.²⁵ The immersion of John, whence was it? from heaven, or from men? But they reasoned among themselves, and said, If we reply, From heaven, he will say to us, Why then did you not believe him?²⁶ But if we reply, From men, we fear the multitude; for all regard John as a prophet.²⁷ And they answered and said to Jesus: We know not. And he said to them: Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

²⁸ But what think you? A man had two sons; and he went to the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard.²⁹ He answered and said, I will not. But he afterward regretted it, and went.³⁰ And he came to the other, and spoke to him in like manner. And he answered and said, I go, sir; and went not.³¹ Which of the two did

the will of his father? They said to him, The first. Jesus said to them: Verily I say to you, The publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.³² For John came to you in the way of righteousness, and you believed him not. But the publicans and the harlots believed him. And you, when you had seen it, afterward felt no regret, that you might believe him.

³³ Hear another parable: There was a master of a house who planted a vineyard, and put a hedge around it, and rigged in it a wine-press, and built a tower, and let it out to vine-dressers, and went into another country.³⁴ And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the vine-dressers to receive the fruits of it.³⁵ And the vine-dressers took his servants, and scourged one, and killed another, and stoned another.³⁶ Again he sent other servants more than the first: and they treated them in like manner.³⁷ But afterward he sent to them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.³⁸ But the vine-dressers, when they saw the son, said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and seize upon the inheritance.³⁹ And they took him, and carried him out of the vineyard, and killed him.⁴⁰ Therefore, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vine-dressers?

⁴¹ They said to him: He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and let out his vineyard to other vine-dressers, who will give him the fruits in their season.⁴² Jesus said to them: Did you never read in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected has become the head of the corner?⁴³ This was from the Lord, and it is wondrous in our eyes. For this reason, I say to you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation that will bring forth the fruits of it.⁴⁴ And he that falls upon this stone shall be dashed to pieces; but him on whom it shall fall, it will make like chaff for the wind.

⁴⁵ And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they knew that he spoke of them.⁴⁶ And when they sought to lay hold of him, they feared the multitude, because they regarded him as a prophet.

XXII. ¹And Jesus answering, spoke to them again in parables, saying:
² The kingdom of heaven is like a king that made a marriage feast for his son;³ and sent his

servants to call those who had been invited to the marriage feast; and they refused to come. ⁴Again, he sent other servants, saying, Tell those who have been invited, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to the marriage feast. ⁵But they were careless, and went away, one to his farm, another to his merchandise. ⁶And the rest laid hold of his servants, and abused them, and killed them.

⁷ And when that king heard of it, he was angry, and sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. ⁸Then he said to his servants: The marriage feast is ready, but those who were invited were not worthy. ⁹Go, therefore, to the cross-ways, and invite to the marriage feast as many as you find. ¹⁰And those servants went out into the roads, and brought together all, as many as they found, both bad and good: and the banquet-room was filled with guests. ¹¹And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man that had not put on a wedding-robe. ¹²And he said to him, Friend, how came you in hither without a wedding-robe? And he was silent. ¹³Then the king said to his servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and throw him into the darkness without: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. ¹⁴For many are called, but few chosen.

¹⁵ Then the Pharisees went and held a consultation, that they might entrap him in his words. ¹⁶And they sent to him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying: Teacher, we know that you are true, and that you teach the way of God in truth, and care not for any one: for you do not look upon the person of men. ¹⁷Tell us, therefore, what do you think? Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not? ¹⁸But Jesus, knowing their wickedness, said to them: Why do you tempt me, hypocrites? ¹⁹Show me the tribute-money. And they brought him a denarius. ²⁰And he said to them: Whose image and superscription is this? ²¹They said to him: Cæsar's. Then he said to them: Give, therefore, to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are God's. ²²And when they heard it, they were astonished, and left him, and went away.

²³On that day there came to him the Sadducees, who say that there is no resurrection;

and they put a question to him, ²⁴saying: Teacher, Moses commanded, If any one die without children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up children for his brother. ²⁵Now there were with us seven brothers; and the first took a wife, and died; and, having no child, left his wife to his brother. ²⁶In like manner also the second, and the third, to the seventh. ²⁷Last of all, the woman also died. ²⁸Therefore, in the resurrection, of which of the seven will she be the wife? for they all had her.

²⁹ Jesus answered and said to them: You err, because you know neither the scriptures nor the power of God. ³⁰For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. ³¹But, concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read that which was spoken to you by God, saying: ³²I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. ³³And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his teaching.

³⁴ When the Pharisees heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they came together. ³⁵And one of them, who was a lawyer, asked him a question, that he might tempt him, saying: ³⁶Teacher, which is the great commandment in the law? ³⁷Jesus said to him: You shall love the Lord your God with your whole heart, and with your whole soul, and with your whole mind. ³⁸This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹And the second is like it: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. ⁴⁰On these two commandments hang the whole law and the prophets.

⁴¹ While the Pharisees were together, Jesus asked them a question, ⁴²saying: What think you of the Christ? whose son is he? They said to him: The son of David. ⁴³He said to them: How then does David in spirit call him Lord, saying, ⁴⁴The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand till I make thy enemies thy footstool. ⁴⁵If then David calls him Lord, how is he his son? ⁴⁶And no one was able to answer him a word; nor did any one, from that day, dare to ask him another question.

XXIII. ¹Then Jesus spoke to the multitudes, and to his disciples, ²saying: The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat: ³therefore, all things that they

command you to observe, observe and do. But do not according to their works: for they command, and do not. ⁴For they bind up burdens that are heavy and hard to be borne, and lay them on the shoulders of men; but they refuse to move them with one of their fingers. ⁵And they do all their works for the purpose of being seen by men. They make their amulets broad, and enlarge the fringes of their mantles. ⁶They also love the most honorable places at suppers, and the first seats in the synagogues, ⁷and salutations in the markets, and to be called by men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

⁸But you must not be called Rabbi; for one is your leader, and all of you are brethren. ⁹And call no man on earth your father; for one is your Father, who is in heaven. ¹⁰And be not called leaders; for one is your leader, the Christ. ¹¹And the greatest among you shall be your minister. ¹²Whoever exalts himself shall be humbled; and whoever humbles himself shall be exalted.

¹³But alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you eat up the houses of widows, and for a pretext make long prayers. For this reason, you shall receive the greater condemnation. ¹⁴Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you close the kingdom of heaven in the face of men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you suffer those who are entering, to go in. ¹⁵Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you traverse sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, you make him twofold more a child of hell than yourselves.

¹⁶Alas for you, blind guides! who say, Whoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, becomes a debtor. ¹⁷Fools and blind! for which is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifies the gold? ¹⁸And, Whoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whoever shall swear by the gift that is on it, becomes a debtor. ¹⁹Fools and blind! for which is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifies the gift? ²⁰Therefore, whoever swears by the altar, swears by it, and by all that is on it. ²¹And whoever swears by the temple, swears by it, and by him that dwells in it. ²²And he that swears by heaven, swears by the throne of God, and by him that sits upon it.

²³Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you pay tithes of mint and dill and cummin, and have neglected the weightier mat-

ters of the law, its justice, its mercy, and its faithfulness. These you ought to have done, and those you ought not to have neglected. ²⁴Blind guides! who strain out a gnat, but swallow a camel. ²⁵Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you make clean the outside of the cup and the plate; but within they are full of rapine and excess. ²⁶Blind Pharisee! first make clean the inside of the cup and the plate, that the outside of them also may be clean.

²⁷Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you are like whitened sepulchers, which without appear beautiful, but within are full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. ²⁸So also you outwardly appear to men to be just, but within you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. ²⁹Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you build the tombs of the prophets, and adorn the sepulchers of the righteous, ³⁰and say: If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. ³¹So then you testify against yourselves, that you are the sons of those who killed the prophets. ³²Do you also fill up the measure of your fathers. ³³Serpents, generation of vipers, how can you escape the condemnation of hell?

³⁴For this reason, behold, I send you prophets and wise men and scribes; and some of them you will kill and crucify; and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city; ³⁵that upon you may come all the righteous blood which has been shed upon the earth, from the blood of Abel the just to the blood of Zachariah, the son of Barachiah, whom you slew between the temple and the altar. ³⁶Verily I say to you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

³⁷Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killst the prophets and stonest those who are sent to thee, how often have I desired to gather thy children together, as a bird gathers her young under her wings, and you refused. ³⁸Behold, your house is left to you deserted. ³⁹For I say to you, That you shall not see me henceforth, till you shall say, Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord.

XXIV. ¹And Jesus went out, and was departing from the temple, and his disciples came to him to point out to him the buildings of the temple. ²But Jesus said to them: Do you not see all these things? Verily I

say to you, There shall not be left here a stone upon a stone that shall not be thrown down,

³ And as he was sitting upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, and said: Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the age? ⁴ And Jesus answered and said to them: Take heed that no one deceive you. ⁵ For many will come in my name, saying, I am the Christ; and will deceive many. ⁶ And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that you be not troubled, for all things must be fulfilled; but the end is not yet. ⁷ For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there will be famines and pestilences and earthquakes in various places. ⁸ But all these are the beginning of sorrows. ⁹ Then they will deliver you up to affliction, and kill you; and you will be hated by all nations on my account. ¹⁰ And then will many be ensnared, and they will deliver one another up, and hate one another; ¹¹ and many false prophets will arise, and deceive many; ¹² and because iniquity abounds, the love of many will grow cold. ¹³ But he that endures to the end, shall be saved. ¹⁴ And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole habitable earth, for a testimony to all nations, and then shall the end come.

¹⁵ When, therefore, you see that detestable thing that makes desolate, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place, (let him that reads understand;) ¹⁶ then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains; ¹⁷ let not him that is on the house-top come down to take his goods out of his house; ¹⁸ and let not him that is in the field turn back to take his clothing. ¹⁹ But alas for those who are with child, and those who give suck in those days! ²⁰ Pray that your flight may not be in the winter, nor on the Sabbath: ²¹ for then shall be great affliction, such as has not been from the beginning of the world till now, nor shall ever be. ²² And unless those days should be made few, no flesh could be saved. But on account of the elect those days shall be made few.

²³ Then if any one shall say to you: Lo! here is the Christ, or there; believe it not. ²⁴ For false Christs and false prophets will arise, and will show great signs and wonders, so as to deceive, if possible, even the elect. ²⁵ Behold, I have told you beforehand. ²⁶ Therefore, if they say to you:

Behold, he is in the desert; go not out: Behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not. ²⁷ For as the lightning comes out from the east, and shines even to the west, so also shall the coming of the Son of man be. ²⁸ For wherever the carcass is, there will the vultures come together.

²⁹ Immediately after the affliction of those days, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the hosts of the heavens shall be shaken. ³⁰ And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven; and then shall all the tribes of the land mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. ³¹ And he will send his angels with a trumpet of great voice, and they shall gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

³² Learn now a parable from the fig-tree: As soon as its branch becomes tender, and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is near. ³³ So also, when you see all these things, know that it is near at the doors. ³⁴ Verily I say to you, This generation shall not pass away till all these things shall have taken place. ³⁵ Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

³⁶ But of that day and hour no one knows, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

³⁷ But as the days of Noah were, so shall be the coming of the Son of man. ³⁸ For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, till the day in which Noah entered the ark, ³⁹ and knew not, till the flood came and took them all away: so shall be the coming of the Son of man. ⁴⁰ Then two men shall be in the field; one shall be taken, and the other left. ⁴¹ Two women shall be grinding at the mill; one shall be taken, and the other left.

⁴² Watch, therefore, for you know not at what hour your Lord is coming. ⁴³ But know this, That if the master of the house had known at what watch the thief comes, he would have watched, and would not have permitted his house to be broken open. ⁴⁴ For this reason, be you also ready; for at an hour in which you think not, the Son of man comes. ⁴⁵ Who then is that faithful and wise servant, whom his master has made ruler over his household servants, to give them their food in due time? ⁴⁶ Blessed is that servant, whom his master, when he comes,

shall find so doing.⁴⁷ Verily I say to you, That he will make him ruler over all his goods.

⁴⁸ But if that wicked servant shall say in his heart, My master delays his coming; ⁴⁹ and shall begin to strike his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken; ⁵⁰ the master of that servant will come in a day in which he looks not for him, and at an hour which he knows not,⁵¹ and will cut him in two, and appoint him his part with the hypocrites. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

XXV. ¹ Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened to ten virgins, who took their lamps and went out to meet the bride-groom. ² Five of them were wise, and five were foolish. ³ Those who were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: ⁴ but the wise took oil in their vessels, with their lamps. ⁵ While the bridegroom delayed, they all slumbered and slept. ⁶ And at midnight a cry was made: Behold, the bridegroom comes! Go you out to meet him. ⁷ Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. ⁸ And the foolish said to the wise: Give us of your oil, for our lamps are going out. ⁹ But the wise answered, saying: Lest there may not be enough for us and you, go rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves. ¹⁰ While they were going to buy, the bridegroom came; and those who were ready went in with him to the marriage-supper; and the door was closed. ¹¹ Afterward the other virgins also came, and said: Lord! Lord! open for us. ¹² But he answered and said: Verily I say to you, I know you not. ¹³ Watch, therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour.

¹⁴ For as a man, on leaving his country, called his own servants, and delivered to them his goods: ¹⁵ To one he gave five talents; to another, two; and to another, one; to each one, according to his own ability, and immediately left his country. ¹⁶ Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with them, and made other five talents. ¹⁷ In like manner also, he that had received the two, gained other two. ¹⁸ But he that had received the one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

¹⁹ After a long time, the lord of those servants came and settled with them. ²⁰ And he that had received the five talents came and brought other five talents, and said: Lord, you delivered to me five talents: see, I have gained other five

talents in addition to them. ²¹ His lord said to him: Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many. Enter into the joy of your lord.

²² And he also that had received the two talents came, and said: Lord, you delivered to me two talents; see, I have gained other two talents in addition to them. ²³ His lord said to him: Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many. Enter into the joy of your lord.

²⁴ But he that had received the one talent came, and said: Lord, I knew you, that you are a hard man, reaping where you did not sow, and gathering where you did not scatter. ²⁵ And I was afraid, and went and hid your talent in the earth; see, you have yours. ²⁶ His lord answered and said to him: Wicked and slothful servant; did you know that I reap where I did not sow, and gather where I did not scatter? ²⁷ Therefore, you ought to have put my money with the bankers; and, when I came, I could have received my own with interest. ²⁸ Therefore, take from him the talent, and give it to him that has the ten talents. ²⁹ For to every one that has, it shall be given, and he shall have abundance. But from him that has not, even that which he has shall be taken away. ³⁰ And cast the unprofitable servant into the darkness without. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

³¹ When the Son of man shall come in his own glory, and all the holy angels with him, then will he sit on the throne of his own glory; ³² and all nations shall be gathered before him; and he will separate them one from another, as a shepherd separates his sheep from the goats. ³³ And he will place the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on his left. ³⁴ Then the King will say to those on his right hand: Come, you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. ³⁵ For I was hungry, and you gave me food; I was thirsty, and you gave me drink; I was a stranger, and you took me to your houses; ³⁶ naked, and you clothed me; I was sick, and you visited me; I was in prison, and you came to me. ³⁷ Then will the righteous answer him, saying: Lord, when did we see thee hungry, and feed thee? or thirsty, and give thee drink? ³⁸ When did we see thee a stranger, and take thee to our home? or naked,

and clothe thee? ³⁹When did we see thee sick, or in prison, and come to thee? ⁴⁰And the King will answer and say to them: Verily I say to you, Inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these my brethren, you did it to me.

⁴¹Then will he say to those on his left hand: Depart from me, you cursed, into the eternal fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. ⁴²For I was hungry, and you gave me no food; I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink; ⁴³I was a stranger, and you took me not to your houses; naked, and you did not clothe me; I was sick, and in prison, and you did not visit me. ⁴⁴Then they also will answer, and say: Lord, when did we see thee hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister to thee? ⁴⁵Then will he answer them, saying: Verily I say to you, Inasmuch as you did it not to one of the least of these, you did it not to me. ⁴⁶And these shall go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.

XXVI. ¹And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these words, that he said to his disciples: ²You know that after two days the passover is kept, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified.

³Then the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people met together at the palace of the chief priest, who was called Caiaphas. ⁴And they consulted together that they might take Jesus by craft and kill him. ⁵But they said: Not during the feast, lest there be a tumult among the people.

⁶When Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, ⁷there came to him a woman who had an alabaster box of very costly ointment; and she poured it on his head as he reclined at table. ⁸But when his disciples saw it, they were displeased, and said: For what purpose was this waste? ⁹For this could have been sold for much, and given to the poor. ¹⁰Jesus perceived it, and said to them: Why do you trouble the woman? For she has performed a good work upon me. ¹¹For you have the poor always with you, but me you have not always. ¹²For in pouring this ointment on my body, she has done it to prepare me for burial. ¹³Verily I say to you, Wherever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, this also which she has done shall be told for a memorial of her.

¹⁴Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscar-

iot, went to the chief priests, ¹⁵and said: What are you willing to give me, and I will deliver him to you? And they weighed to him thirty pieces of silver. ¹⁶And from that time he sought an opportunity to deliver him up.

¹⁷On the first day of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, and said to him: Where dost thou wish that we prepare for thee to eat the passover? ¹⁸He replied: Go into the city, to a certain man, and say to him, The Teacher says, My time is near; I will keep the passover at your house, with my disciples. ¹⁹And the disciples did as Jesus commanded them, and prepared the passover.

²⁰When the evening had come, he reclined at table with the twelve. ²¹And as they were eating, he said: Verily I say to you, One of you will deliver me up. ²²And they were very sad, and began each one of them to say to him: Lord, is it I? ²³He answered and said: He that dips his hand with me in the dish, will deliver me up. ²⁴The Son of man goes, as it is written of him; but alas for that man by whom the Son of man is delivered up! It would have been good for that man, if he had not been born. ²⁵And Judas, who delivered him up, answered and said: Rabbi, is it I? He replied: You have said.

²⁶And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and when he had given thanks, he broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said: Take, eat; this is my body. ²⁷And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying: Do you all drink of it: ²⁸for this is my blood of the new covenant, which is poured out for many in order to the remission of sins. ²⁹But I say to you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, till that day when I drink it with you new in the kingdom of my Father.

³⁰And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives. ³¹Then Jesus said to them: All of you will be offended at me this night; for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered. ³²But after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee. ³³Peter answered and said to him: Though all shall be offended at thee, yet will I never be offended. ³⁴Jesus said to him: Verily I say to you, This night, before the cock crows, you will deny me three times. ³⁵Peter said to him: Though it should be necessary for me to die with thee, I will not deny thee. In like manner said all the disciples.

³⁶ Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane, and said to his disciples: Sit here, till I go and pray yonder. ³⁷ And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be in deep distress and anguish of soul.

³⁸ Then Jesus said to them: My soul is encompassed with sorrow even to death; remain here, and watch with me. ³⁹ And he went forward a little, and fell on his face in prayer, saying: My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me; yet not as I will, but as thou willest. ⁴⁰ And he came to his disciples, and found them sleeping; and he said to Peter: Was it so, that you had not strength to watch with me one hour? ⁴¹ Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit is, willing, but the flesh is weak.

⁴² Again, a second time, he went away, and prayed, saying: My Father, if this cup cannot pass from me, unless I drink it, thy will be done.

⁴³ And he came and found them sleeping again, for their eyes were heavy. ⁴⁴ And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same thing. ⁴⁵ Then he came to his disciples, and said to them: Sleep what time is left, and take your rest; behold, the hour draws near, and the Son of man is delivered into the hands of sinners. ⁴⁶ Arise, let us go; behold, he that delivers me up is at hand.

⁴⁷ And while he was yet speaking, behold, Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and clubs, came from the chief priests and elders of the people. ⁴⁸ He that delivered him up had given them a sign, saying: The one that I shall kiss is he; hold him fast. ⁴⁹ And immediately he came to Jesus, and said: Hail, Rabbi! and kissed him. ⁵⁰ Jesus said to him: Friend, for what purpose have you come? Then they came, and laid hands on Jesus, and held him fast.

⁵¹ And behold, one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his ear. ⁵² Then Jesus said to him: Put back your sword into its place; for all that take the sword, shall perish by the sword. ⁵³ Do you think that I can not now call upon my Father, and he would cause more than twelve legions of angels to stand by me? ⁵⁴ But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

⁵⁵ At the same time Jesus said to the multitudes: Have you come out as against a robber,

with swords and clubs, to take me? I sat daily with you in the temple and taught, and you did not take me. ⁵⁶ All this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples left him and fled.

⁵⁷ And those who took Jesus led him away to Caiaphas the chief priest, where the scribes and elders had come together. ⁵⁸ But Peter followed him, at a distance, to the palace of the chief priest, and went in and sat with the attendants, to see the end. ⁵⁹ And the chief priests and the elders, and the whole Sanhedrin, sought false testimony against Jesus, that they might put him to death, ⁶⁰ and found none. Though many false witnesses came, yet they found none. At last two false witnesses came, ⁶¹ and said: This man said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. ⁶² And the chief priest arose, and said to him: Do you make no answer? What do these testify against you? ⁶³ But Jesus remained silent.

And the chief priest answered and said to him: I adjure you, by the living God, that you tell us whether you are the Christ, the Son of God? ⁶⁴ Jesus said to him: You have said. Moreover, I say to you, Hereafter you shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of the Almighty, and coming upon the clouds of heaven. ⁶⁵ Then the chief priest rent his clothes, and said: He has spoken impiously; what further need have we of witnesses? See now, you have heard his impious words: ⁶⁶ What think you? They answered and said: He is a subject for death. ⁶⁷ Then did they spit in his face, and strike him with their fists; some struck him with the open hand, ⁶⁸ and said: Give a response to us, Christ: Who is he that struck you?

⁶⁹ But Peter was sitting without in the court; and a maid-servant came to him, and said: You also were with Jesus of Galilee. ⁷⁰ But he denied before them all, saying: I know not what you say. ⁷¹ And when he went out into the entrance, another maid-servant saw him, and said to those who were there: This man was also with Jesus the Nazarene. ⁷² And again he denied, with an oath: I know not the man. ⁷³ After a little while, those who stood by came and said to Peter: Of a truth you also are one of them, for your speech betrays you. ⁷⁴ Then he began to curse and to swear, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew. ⁷⁵ And Peter remembered the

word which Jesus had spoken to him: Before the cock crows, you will deny me three times. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

XXVII. ¹When the morning came, all the chief priests and elders of the people held a consultation against Jesus, that they might put him to death. ²And they bound him and led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

³Then Judas, who had delivered him up, when he saw that he was condemned, stung by remorse, brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, ⁴saying: I have sinned in having delivered up innocent blood. They replied: What is that to us? You will see to that. ⁵And he threw down the money in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. ⁶And the chief priests took the money, and said: It is not lawful to put it into the sacred treasury, because it is the price of blood. ⁷And they took counsel, and bought with it the potter's field, as a burial-place for foreigners. ⁸For this reason, that field is called the field of blood, to this day. ⁹Then the word was fulfilled which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying: And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that had a price set upon him, on whom some of the children of Israel did set a price, ¹⁰and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

¹¹And Jesus stood before the governor; and the governor asked him, saying: Are you the king of the Jews? Jesus replied to him: You say it. ¹²And when he was accused by the chief priests and elders, he made no answer. ¹³Then Pilate said to him: Do you not hear how many things they testify against you? ¹⁴And he gave him answer to not one word, so that the governor was greatly astonished.

¹⁵Now at the feast, the governor was in the habit of releasing to the multitude one prisoner, whom they chose. ¹⁶They then had a notorious prisoner, called Barabbas. ¹⁷Therefore, while they were together, Pilate said to them: Which do you wish me to release to you, Barabbas, or Jesus, who is called Christ? ¹⁸For he knew that through envy they had delivered him up.

¹⁹While he was sitting on the judgment-seat, his wife sent to him, saying: Have nothing to do with that just man, for I have suffered much today in a dream, because of him.

²⁰But the chief priests and the elders persuaded the multitude to ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. ²¹The governor answered and said to them: Which of the two do you wish me to release to you? They replied: Barabbas. ²²Pilate said to them: What then shall I do with Jesus, who is called Christ? They all said to him: Let him be crucified. ²³But the governor said: Why, what evil has he done? But they cried vehemently, saying: Let him be crucified. ²⁴When Pilate saw that he gained nothing, but rather that a tumult was rising, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, and said: I am innocent of the blood of this just man; you will see to it. ²⁵And all the people answered and said: His blood be upon us and upon our children. ²⁶Then he released to them Barabbas; but after he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him up to be crucified.

²⁷Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the palace, and brought together to him the whole band. ²⁸And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet cloak; ²⁹and when they had plaited a crown of thorn branches, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand; and kneeling before him, they derided him, saying: Hail, King of the Jews! ³⁰And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and struck him on the head. ³¹And when they had derided him, they took off the cloak from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him away to crucify him.

³²And as they were going out, they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: this man they compelled to carry his cross. ³³And when they had come to a place called Golgotha, which, when translated, is the place of a skull, ³⁴they gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall; and when he had tasted it, he refused to drink. ³⁵And when they had crucified him, they divided his clothing among themselves, by casting the lot. ³⁶And they sat down and watched him there. ³⁷And they placed above his head the charge that was made against him, written: THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. ³⁸Then were two robbers crucified with him; one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

³⁹And they that passed by reviled him, shaking their heads, ⁴⁰and saying: You that destroy the temple, and build it in three days, save yourself; if you are the Son of God, come down from

the cross.⁴¹ In like manner also the chief priests, with the scribes and elders, derided him, and said: ⁴² He saved others; himself he can not save. If he is the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him. ⁴³ He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he delights in him; for he said: I am the Son of God. ⁴⁴ The robbers also that were crucified with him, uttered the same reproaches against him.

⁴⁵ From the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land till the ninth hour. ⁴⁶ But about the ninth hour, Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying: Eli, Eli, lamah sabachthani? that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

⁴⁷ Some of those who were standing there, when they heard it, said: This man calls for Elijah. ⁴⁸ And immediately one of them ran, and took a sponge, and having filled it with vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave it to him to drink. ⁴⁹ The rest said: Wait, let us see if Elijah is coming to save him.

⁵⁰ And Jesus again cried with a loud voice, and gave up his spirit. ⁵¹ And behold, the veil of the temple was rent in two from top to bottom. And the earth did shake, and the rocks were rent: ⁵² and the sepulchers were opened, and many bodies of the saints that slept, arose. ⁵³ And they came out of their sepulchers after his resurrection, and entered the holy city, and appeared to many.

⁵⁴ Now the centurion, and those who were with him watching Jesus, when they saw the earthquake, and what was done, were greatly afraid, and said: Of a truth, this was the Son of God.

⁵⁵ Many women that had followed Jesus from Galilee, and had ministered to him, were there, looking on from a distance. ⁵⁶ Among these was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of the sons of Zebedee.

⁵⁷ When the evening had come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph; and he also was a disciple of Jesus. ⁵⁸ This man went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be given. ⁵⁹ And Joseph took the body and wrapped it in clean linen, ⁶⁰ and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock. And he rolled a great stone to the door of the tomb, and

departed. ⁶¹ And Mary Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, sitting opposite the tomb.

⁶² On the morrow, which was the day after the preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees came together to Pilate, ⁶³ and said: Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will arise. ⁶⁴ Therefore, command that the sepulcher be made safe till the third day, lest his disciples come and steal him away, and say to the people, He has risen from the dead; and the last error will be worse than the first. ⁶⁵ Pilate said to them: You have a guard; go, make it as safe as you know how. ⁶⁶ And they went and made the sepulcher safe, by placing a seal upon the stone, and setting the guard.

XXVIII. ¹ And after the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to see the sepulcher. ² And behold, there had been a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord having descended from heaven, came and rolled away the stone from the door, and sat upon it. ³ His appearance was like lightning, and his raiment was white as snow. ⁴ From fear of him the keepers did shake and become like dead men. ⁵ But the angel answered and said to the women: Fear not; for I know that you seek Jesus, who was crucified. ⁶ He is not here; for he has risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. ⁷ And go quickly, and tell his disciples, that he has risen from the dead: and behold, he goes before you into Galilee. There you shall see him. Lo, I have told you.

⁸ And they went out quickly from the sepulcher, with fear and great joy, and ran to tell his disciples. ⁹ And as they were going to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying: Hail! And they came and laid hold of his feet, and worshiped him. ¹⁰ Then Jesus said to them: Fear not; go, tell my brethren to go into Galilee, and there they shall see me.

¹¹ While they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city, and told the chief priests all things that were done. ¹² And when they came together with the elders, they held a consultation, and gave much money to the soldiers, ¹³ saying: Say that his disciples came by night and stole him away, while we were asleep. ¹⁴ And if this shall be heard in the presence of

the governor, we will persuade him, and make you secure.¹⁵ And they took the money, and did as they were taught. And their report of this matter is everywhere published among the Jews to this day.

¹⁶ And the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into the mountain, where Jesus had appointed *to meet* them.¹⁷ And when they saw him, they worshiped him; but some doubted.

¹⁸ And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying: All authority in heaven and on earth is given to me. ¹⁹ Go, therefore, make disciples of all nations, immersing them (the disciples) into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit; ²⁰ teaching them to observe all things whatever I have commanded you: and lo; I am with you all the days, even to the end of the age.

Testimony of Mark.

I. ¹The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God; ²as it is written in Isaiah the prophet: Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way. ³The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ready the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. ⁴John was immersing in the wilderness, and preaching the immersion of repentance in order to the remission of sins. ⁵And all the country of Judea and the inhabitants of Jerusalem went out to him, and were all immersed by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins. ⁶And John was clothed with camel's hair, and had a girdle of leather around his loins, and he ate locusts and wild honey: ⁷and he preached, saying: There comes after me One mightier than I, the strap of whose sandals I am not worthy to stoop down and loose. ⁸I immerse you in water; but he will immerse you in the Holy Spirit.

⁹And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was immersed by John in the Jordan. ¹⁰And immediately on coming up from the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him. ¹¹And there was a voice from the heavens: Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I delight.

¹²And immediately the Spirit compelled him to go forth into the wilderness. ¹³And he was there in the wilderness forty days, to be tempted by Satan; and he was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered to him.

¹⁴But after John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, ¹⁵and saying: The time has fully come, and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent, and believe the gospel. ¹⁶And as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew the brother of Simon, throwing a net about in the sea; for they were fishers. ¹⁷And Jesus said to them: Come after me, and I will make you fishers of men. ¹⁸And immediately they left their nets, and followed him.

¹⁹And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship,

mending their nets. ²⁰And he immediately called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

²¹And they went into Capernaum; and immediately, on the sabbath, he entered the synagogue, and taught. ²²And they were astonished at his teaching; for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes. ²³And there was in their synagogue a man who had an unclean spirit; and he cried out, ²⁴saying: Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Nazarene? Hast thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. ²⁵And Jesus rebuked him, saying: Be silent, and come out of him. ²⁶And the unclean spirit threw him into convulsions, and cried with a loud voice, and came out of him. ²⁷And all were amazed, so that they questioned one another, saying: What means this? What new teaching is this, that with authority he commands even the unclean spirits, and they obey him? ²⁸And his fame immediately went abroad into all the surrounding country of Galilee.

²⁹And forthwith, having gone out of the synagogue, they went into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. ³⁰Now the mother-in-law of Simon lay sick of a fever. And at once they told him of her. ³¹And he went to her, and took her by the hand, and raised her up, and the fever left her instantly; and she ministered to them.

³²And at evening, when the sun had gone down, they brought to him all that were sick, and those who were possessed with demons. ³³And the whole city came together to the door. ³⁴And he cured many that were sick of various diseases, and cast out many demons, and did not suffer the demons to speak, because they knew him.

³⁵And very early in the morning, while it was yet dark, he arose and went out, and departed to a desert place, and there prayed. ³⁶And Simon, and those who were with him, followed after him. ³⁷And when they had found him, they said to him: All are seeking for thee. ³⁸And he said to them: Let us go into the

neighboring towns, that I may preach there also; for I have come forth for this purpose.³⁹ And throughout the whole of Galilee he continued to preach in their synagogues, and to cast out demons.

⁴⁰ And there came to him a leper, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying to him: If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. ⁴¹ And Jesus, moved with compassion, stretched forth his hand, and touched him, and said to him: I will; be clean. ⁴² And when he had spoken, the leprosy immediately departed from him, and he was cleansed. ⁴³ And he strictly charged him, and forthwith sent him away, ⁴⁴ and said to him: See that you tell no one; but go, show yourself to the priest, and offer for your cleansing the things which Moses commanded, for a testimony to them. ⁴⁵ But he went out, and began to proclaim it much, and to publish the matter abroad, so that he was no longer able to enter a city openly, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

II. ¹And again he entered Capernaum, after some days; and they heard that he was in the house. ²And immediately many came together, so that the house could contain them no longer, nor could the space about the door. And he preached the word to them.

³ And they came to him, bringing a paralytic, who was carried by four men. ⁴ And not being able to come near him, on account of the multitude, they took off the roof where he was, and having broken through, they let down the bed on which the paralytic lay. ⁵ And Jesus, seeing their faith, said to the paralytic: Son, your sins are forgiven you. ⁶ But some of the scribes were sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts: ⁷ Why does this man thus speak impiously? Who can forgive sins but God only? ⁸ And Jesus, immediately perceiving in his spirit that they thus reasoned within themselves, said to them: Why are you reasoning thus in your hearts? ⁹ Which is easier, to say to the paralytic, Your sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, take up your bed and walk? ¹⁰ But that you may know that the Son of man on earth has authority to forgive sins, (he said to the paralytic,) ¹¹ I say to you, Arise, take up your bed and go to your house. ¹² And he arose forthwith, and took up his bed, and went out before them all; so that they were

all amazed, and glorified God, saying: We have never seen it thus.

¹³ And he went out again by the sea: and all the multitude came to him, and he taught them. ¹⁴ And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphæus sitting at the custom-house; and he said to him: Follow me. And he arose and followed him. ¹⁵ And it came to pass, as Jesus reclined at table in his house, that many publicans and sinners reclined with him and his disciples; for there were many, and they followed him. ¹⁶ And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eating with publicans and sinners, they said to his disciples: Why is it that he eats and drinks with publicans and sinners? ¹⁷ And when Jesus heard it, he said to them: Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick. I have not come to call righteous men, but sinners.

¹⁸ And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees were in the habit of fasting; and they came, and said to him: Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but your disciples fast not? ¹⁹ And Jesus said to them: Can the sons of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they can not fast. ²⁰ But the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then they will fast in those days. ²¹ No one sews a patch of new cloth on an old garment; if so, the new piece which fills it up, takes from the old, and a worse rent is made. ²² And no one puts new wine into old bottles; if so, the new wine bursts the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles are destroyed. But new wine must be put into new bottles.

²³ And it came to pass, that he was going on the sabbath-day through the fields of grain: and his disciples began, as they went, to pull the ears of grain. ²⁴ And the Pharisees said to him: See, why are they doing on the sabbath-day what is not lawful? ²⁵ And he said to them: Did you never read what David did, when he had need and was hungry, he and those who were with him? ²⁶ How he entered the house of God in the days of Abiathar the chief priest, and ate the loaves of the presence, which, it is not lawful, except for the priests, to eat, and gave to those also who were with him? ²⁷ And he said to them: The sabbath was made for man, not man for the sabbath. ²⁸ Therefore, the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

III. ¹And again he entered the synagogue, and a man was there who had a withered hand. ²And they watched him, whether he would cure him on the sabbath-day, that they might accuse him. ³And he said to the man who had the withered hand: Arise, and come into the midst. ⁴And he said to them: Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-day, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they were silent. ⁵And looking around on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their heart, he said to the man: Stretch forth your hand; and he stretched it forth: and his hand was restored. ⁶And the Pharisees immediately went out with the Herodians, and held a consultation against him, that they might destroy him.

⁷And Jesus withdrew with his disciples to the sea; and there followed him a great multitude from Galilee, and from Judea, ⁸and from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond the Jordan: and those about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they heard what things he was doing, came to him. ⁹And he spoke to his disciples, that a small ship should continue near him, because of the multitude, that they might not press upon him. ¹⁰For he cured many, so that as many as had diseases rushed upon him, that they might touch him. ¹¹And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried out, saying: Thou art the Son of God. ¹²And he strictly charged them, that they should not make him known.

¹³And he went up into a mountain, and called to him such as he wished, and they came to him. ¹⁴And he appointed twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, ¹⁵and to have authority to cure diseases, and to cast out demons. ¹⁶And Simon he surnamed Peter; ¹⁷and James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James: and these he surnamed Boanerges, which means, sons of thunder: ¹⁸and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the Son of Alphæus, and Thaddæus, and Simon the Canaanite, ¹⁹and Judas Iscariot, who also delivered him up.

And they went into a house: ²⁰and the multitude came together again, so that they were not able even to eat bread. ²¹And when his relatives heard of it, they came out to take him; for they said: He is beside himself. ²²And the scribes

who had come down from Jerusalem said: He has Beelzebul; and by the prince of the demons he casts out the demons. ²³And he called them to him, and spoke to them in parables: How can Satan cast out Satan? ²⁴And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom can not stand. ²⁵And if a house be divided against itself, that house can not stand.

²⁶And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he can not stand, but has an end. ²⁷No one can enter the house of the strong man, and spoil his goods, unless he first bind the strong man; and then he will plunder his house. ²⁸Verily I say to you, All sins shall be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever impious speeches they may utter; ²⁹but whoever will speak impiously against the Holy Spirit shall never have forgiveness, but is subject to eternal condemnation. ³⁰For they said: He has an unclean spirit.

³¹His mother and his brothers came, therefore, and standing without, sent to him, and called him. ³²And the multitude was sitting about him; and they said to him: Behold, your mother and your brothers are without, seeking you. ³³And he answered them and said: Who is my mother, or my brothers? ³⁴And he looked round about on those who were sitting near him, and said: Behold, my mother and my brothers; ³⁵for whoever will do the will of God, is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

IV. ¹And again he began to teach by the sea; and a great multitude came together to him, so that he went into a ship, and sat in the sea: and the whole multitude was on the land near the sea. ²And he taught them many things in parables, and said to them in his teaching: ³Hear; Behold, the sower went forth to sow; ⁴and it came to pass, as he sowed, that some seed fell by the wayside, and the birds came and ate it up. ⁵Other seed fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth: and it immediately sprung up, because it had no depth of earth. ⁶And when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away. ⁷And other seed fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up and choked it, and it produced no fruit. ⁸And other seed fell in the good ground, and produced fruit that grew up and increased, and produced, one thirty, one sixty, and one a hundred. ⁹And he said: He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

¹⁰ And when he was alone, those who were about him, with the twelve, asked him the meaning of the parable. ¹¹ And he said to them: To you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but to those who are without, all things are done in parables; ¹² that they may surely see, and not perceive; and that they may surely hear, and not understand; lest they should turn to me, and their sins should be forgiven them. ¹³ And he said to them: Do you not understand this parable? And how then will you understand all parables? ¹⁴ The sower sows the word. ¹⁵ These are they that received seed by the wayside, where the word is sown; and when they hear, Satan immediately comes and takes away the word that was sown in their hearts. ¹⁶ And these are they that, in like manner, received seed in stony places: who, when they hear the word, immediately receive it with joy: ¹⁷ and they have no root in themselves, but endure for a time; afterward, when affliction or persecution arises on account of the word, they immediately take offense. ¹⁸ And these are they that received seed among thorns; who hear the word, ¹⁹ and the anxieties of this age, and the deceitfulness of riches, and desires for other things enter in and choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. ²⁰ And these are they that received seed on the good ground; who hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, one thirty, and one sixty, and one a hundred.

²¹ And he said to them: Is a lamp brought in that it may be put under the measure, or under the divan? Is it not brought that it may be put on the lamp-stand? ²² For there is nothing hid that shall not be made known; nor has any thing been concealed, but that it may come into open view. ²³ If any one has ears to hear, let him hear. ²⁴ And he said to them: Take heed how you hear; with what measure you measure, it shall be measured to you; and to you that hear, more shall be given; ²⁵ for whoever has, to him shall be given; and whoever has not, even that which he has shall be taken from him.

²⁶ And he said: So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should sow seed in the ground, ²⁷ and should sleep and rise, night and day, and the seed should spring up and grow, he knows not how. ²⁸ For the earth, of its own accord, produces fruit, first the blade; then the ear, then the full grain in the ear. ²⁹ But when the fruit is ripe,

immediately he sends forth the sickle, because the harvest is ready.

³⁰ And he said: To what shall we liken the kingdom of God? Or, by what similitude shall we illustrate it? ³¹ It is like a grain of mustard, which, when it is sown in the ground, is less than all seeds that are in the ground; ³² yet, when it is sown, it grows up, and becomes larger than all garden-plants, and sends out great branches, so that the birds of the air can roost under its shadow.

³³ And with many such parables he spoke the word to them, as they were able to hear. ³⁴ But without a parable he did not speak to them; but when alone, he explained all things to his disciples.

³⁵ And on the same day, when it was evening, he said to them: Let us go over to the opposite side. ³⁶ And when they had sent the multitude away, they took him with them, as he was in the ship; and there were other little ships with him. ³⁷ And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves dashed into the ship, so that it was now full. ³⁸ And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on the pillow. And they awoke him, and said to him: Teacher, carest thou not that we perish? ³⁹ And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea: Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. ⁴⁰ And he said to them: Why are you so fearful? How is it that you have no faith? ⁴¹ And they were greatly afraid, and said one to another: Who, then, is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

V ¹ And they came to the opposite side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. ² And when he had come out of the ship, immediately there met him from the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, ³ who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no one could keep him bound even with chains; ⁴ because he had often been bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been pulled to pieces by him, and the fetters had been broken, and no one had strength to subdue him; ⁵ and always, night and day, he was in the tombs, and in the mountains, crying out, and cutting himself with stones.

⁶ And when he saw Jesus at a distance, he ran and did him homage; ⁷ and crying out with a loud voice, he said: What have I to do with thee, Jesus, Son of God Most High? I adjure thee by

God, that thou torment me not. ⁸For he had said to him: Unclean spirit, come out of the man. ⁹And he asked him: What is your name? And he said to him: My name is Legion; for we are many. ¹⁰And he earnestly besought him that he would not send them out of the country.

¹¹Now a great herd of swine was feeding there near the mountain. ¹²And the demons besought him, saying: Send us to the swine, that we may enter into them. ¹³And Jesus immediately gave them leave. And the unclean spirits came out and entered into the swine; and the herd (they were about two thousand,) rushed down a steep place into the sea, and were strangled in the sea. ¹⁴And those who fed them fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they came out to see what had been done; ¹⁵and they came to Jesus and saw the demoniac, who had had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

¹⁶And those who had seen it told them how it had happened to the demoniac, and also concerning the swine. ¹⁷And they began to beseech him to depart from their borders. ¹⁸And when he had entered the ship, he that had been possessed with the demons besought him that he might be with him. ¹⁹And he did not permit him, but said to him: Go home to your relatives, and make known to them what things the Lord has done for you, and that he has had compassion on you. ²⁰And he went away and began to proclaim in Decapolis what things Jesus had done for him. And all were astonished.

²¹And when Jesus had again gone over in the ship to the opposite side, a great multitude came together to him; and he was near the sea. ²²And behold, there came one of the rulers of the synagogue, named Jairus; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet, ²³and besought him earnestly, saying: My little daughter is at the point of death; come, lay thy hands on her, that she may be saved, and she will live. ²⁴And he went with him; and a great multitude followed him, and pressed upon him.

²⁵And a certain woman who had had an issue of blood for twelve years, ²⁶and had suffered much from many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was in no way benefited, but rather grew worse, ²⁷when she heard of Jesus, came behind him in the multitude, and touched his mantle; ²⁸for she said: If I may even

touch his clothes, I shall be saved. ²⁹And immediately the fountain of her blood dried up, and she knew in her body that she was cured of that plague. ³⁰And Jesus, immediately perceiving in himself that power had gone forth from him, turned around in the multitude and said: Who touched my clothes? ³¹And his disciples said to him: Thou seest the multitude pressing upon thee, and dost thou say, Who touched me? ³²And he looked around to see her that had done this. ³³But the woman, fearing and trembling, knowing; what had been done within her, came and fell down before him; and told him all the truth. ³⁴And he said to her: Daughter, your faith has saved you; go in peace, and be cured of your plague.

³⁵While he was yet speaking, some came from the ruler of the synagogue, who said: Your daughter is dead; why give the Teacher further trouble? ³⁶But as soon as Jesus heard what was spoken, he said to the ruler of the synagogue: Fear not, only believe. ³⁷And he suffered no one to follow him, except Peter and James and John the brother of James. ³⁸And he came to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and saw the tumult, and those who were weeping and wailing greatly. ³⁹And he went in and said to them: Why do you make a tumult and weep? The child is not dead, but sleeps. ⁴⁰And they derided him. But when he had put them all out, he took the father and mother of the child, and those who were with him, and went in where the child was lying. ⁴¹And he took the child by the hand, and said to her: Talitha kumi; which is, when translated, Maiden, (I say to you,) arise. ⁴²And the maiden immediately arose and walked, for she was twelve years old. And they were greatly astonished. ⁴³And he charged them strictly that no one should know this. And he commanded that something should be given her to eat.

VI. ¹And he departed thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples followed him. ²And when the sabbath came, he began to teach in the synagogue. And many that heard him were astonished, and said: Whence has this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given to him, that even such mighty deeds are done by his hands? ³Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses and Judah and Simon? And are not his sisters here with us? And they found in

him cause for offense. ⁴But Jesus said to them: A prophet is not without honor, unless in his own country, and among his own relatives, and in his own house. ⁵And he was unable to do any mighty deed there, except that he laid his hands on a few sick persons and cured them; ⁶and he wondered at their unbelief.

And he went to the villages round about, and taught. ⁷And he called to him the twelve, and began to send them out, two and two, and gave them authority over unclean spirits. ⁸And he commanded them to take nothing for their journey, but a staff only; no bag, no bread, no money in their purses; ⁹but to be shod with sandals, and not to put on two coats. ¹⁰And he said to them: Wherever you enter a house, there make your home till you depart from that place. ¹¹And whoever will not receive you, nor hear you, when you go out from that place, shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimony against them. Verily I say to you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom or Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city. ¹²And they went out and preached that men should repent; ¹³and they cast out many demons, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and cured them.

¹⁴And Herod the king heard of him, for his name had become known; and he said: John the Immerser has risen from the dead, and for this reason, the powers of the spiritual world are active within him. ¹⁵Others said: He is Elijah. Others said: He is a prophet like one of the prophets. ¹⁶But when Herod heard of him, he said: John, whom I beheaded, has risen from the dead.

¹⁷For Herod himself had sent and taken John, and bound him in prison on account of Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip; for he had married her. ¹⁸For John said to Herod: It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife. ¹⁹And Herodias was angry with him, and desired to have him killed, and was not able; ²⁰for Herod feared John, because he knew him to be a just and holy man; and he kept him in safety. And having heard him, he did many things, and heard him with pleasure.

²¹And a suitable day having come, when Herod, on his birthday, made a supper for his great men, and his chief officers, and the first men of Galilee; ²²and the daughter of this Herodias having come in, and danced, and pleased

Herod and his guests, the king said to the maiden: Ask me what you will, and I will give it to you. ²³And he swore to her: Whatever you ask, I will give you, to the half of my kingdom.

²⁴But she went out, and said to her mother: What shall I ask? She replied: The head of John the Immerser. ²⁵And she came in immediately, with haste, to the king, and made her request, saying: I desire that you give me, at once, in a dish, the head of John the Immerser. ²⁶And the king was very sad; yet, on account of his oath and his guests, he would not reject her. ²⁷And the king immediately sent one of his guards, and commanded his head to be brought. ²⁸And he went and beheaded him in the prison, and brought his head in a dish, and gave it to the maiden; and the maiden gave it to her mother. ²⁹And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took away his body, and laid it in a tomb.

³⁰And the apostles came together to Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done and what they had taught. ³¹And he said to them: Come yourselves privately into a desert place, and rest awhile. For there were many coming and going, and they had not leisure even to eat. ³²And they went away, by ship, into a desert place, privately.

³³And many saw them departing, and recognized him; and they ran thither on foot from all the cities, and went before them, and came together to him. ³⁴And when Jesus came out, he saw a great multitude, and had compassion on them, because they were as sheep that had no shepherd. And he began to teach them many things.

³⁵And when much of the day was now spent, his disciples came to him, and said: This is a desert place, and much of the day is now spent; ³⁶send them away, that they may go into the country and the villages round about, and buy bread for themselves: for they have nothing to eat. ³⁷He answered and said to them: Do you give them food. And they said to him: Shall we go and buy two hundred denarii worth of bread, and give them food? ³⁸He said to them: How many loaves have you? Go and see. And when they had learned, they said: Five, and two fishes. ³⁹And he commanded them to make all recline in table parties upon the green grass. ⁴⁰And they reclined in oblong squares, by hundreds, and by fifties. ⁴¹And he took the five loaves and the two

fishes, and looked up to heaven, and blessed; and he broke the loaves, and gave them to the disciples to place before them. And he divided the two fishes among them all. ⁴² And they all ate, and were satisfied; ⁴³ and they took up twelve baskets full of the broken pieces, and of the fishes. ⁴⁴ And those who ate of the loaves were about five thousand men.

⁴⁵ And he immediately compelled his disciples to get into the ship, and to go before him to the opposite side, to Bethsaida, while he sent the multitude away. ⁴⁶ And when he had sent them away, he went into the mountain to pray.

⁴⁷ And when evening came, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone upon the land. ⁴⁸ And he saw them toiling in rowing; for the wind was against them. And about the fourth watch of the night, he came to them, walking on the sea, and intended to pass by them. ⁴⁹ But when they saw him walking on the sea, they thought it was a specter, and cried out; ⁵⁰ for they all saw him, and were troubled. And he immediately spoke to them, and said: Take courage; it is I; be not afraid. ⁵¹ And he went up to them into the ship; and the wind ceased. And they were greatly amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered; ⁵² for they had learned nothing from the loaves: for their heart was hardened.

⁵³ And when they had passed over, they came to the land of Gennesaret, and drew the ship ashore. ⁵⁴ And when they had come out of the ship, the people immediately recognized him, ⁵⁵ and ran through the whole of that region round about, and began to carry the sick on beds, wherever they heard that he was. ⁵⁶ And whatever place he entered, whether villages or cities or country, they laid the sick in the market-places, and besought him that they might touch even the fringe of his mantle: and as many as touched him were saved.

VII. ¹And there came together to him the Pharisees, and some of the scribes, who had come from Jerusalem: ² and when they saw some of his disciples eating bread with common, that is, with unwashed hands: ³(for the Pharisees and all the Jews eat not, unless they wash their hands carefully, because they hold the tradition of the elders: ⁴ and when they come from the market, they do not eat, unless they immerse themselves. And there are

many other things, which they have received to hold, as the immersion of cups and pitchers and brazen vessels and beds:) ⁵ then the Pharisees and the scribes asked him: Why do your disciples not walk according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands? ⁶ He answered and said to them: Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honors me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. ⁷ In vain do they worship me, teaching precepts, the commandments of men. ⁸ For, neglecting the commandment of God, you hold the tradition of men, the immersion of pitchers and cups; and many other things like these you do.

⁹ And he said to them: Well do you reject the commandment of God, that you may keep your own tradition. ¹⁰ For Moses said: Honor your father and your mother; and, He that curses father or mother shall surely be put to death.

¹¹ But you say: If a man shall say to his father or mother, Whatever of mine might benefit you, is Corban, (which means, a gift,) ¹² you no longer suffer him to do any thing for his father or mother, ¹³ making the word of God of no effect by your tradition, which you have delivered; and many things like these you do.

¹⁴ And he called the whole multitude to him, and said to them: Hear me, all of you, and understand. ¹⁵ There is nothing without that, by entering into a man, can defile him. But those things which come out of the man, defile him. ¹⁶If any one has ears to hear, let him hear.

¹⁷ And when he had gone into the house, away from the multitude, his disciples asked him about the dark saying. ¹⁸ And he said to them: Are you also so void of understanding? Do you not perceive that nothing from without, by entering into a man, can defile him? ¹⁹ Because it does not enter into his heart, but into his belly, and goes out into the sink, cleansing all food. ²⁰ And he said: What comes out of the man, is that which defiles the man. ²¹ For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed the purposes which are evil: adulteries, lewd actions, murders, ²² thefts, schemes for extortion, wicked deeds, deceit, wantonness, an evil eye, calumny, haughtiness, impiety. ²³ All these evil things come forth from within, and defile the man.

²⁴ And he arose and departed thence to the borders of Tyre and Sidon. And he entered a

house, and desired that no one should know it; but he could not escape notice.²⁵ For a woman, whose little daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet;²⁶ (the woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation,) and she besought him to cast the demon out of her daughter.²⁷ But Jesus said to her: Let the children be satisfied first; for it is not good to take the children's bread and throw it to the little dogs.²⁸ She answered and said to him: Yes, Lord; and yet you can help me, for the little dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.²⁹ And he said to her: For this saying, go your way: the demon has gone out of your daughter.³⁰ And she went to her house, and found the demon gone out, and her daughter lying upon the bed.

³¹ And again he went out from the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and came to the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the borders of Decapolis.³² And they brought to him a deaf man, who spoke with difficulty; and they besought him to lay his hand upon him.³³ And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue;³⁴ and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and said to him: Ephphatha, which means, Be opened.³⁵ And immediately his ears were opened, and the band of his tongue was loosed, and he spoke plainly.³⁶ And he charged them to tell no one; but the more he charged them, the more earnestly they published it.³⁷ And they were amazed beyond measure, and said: He has done all things well: he makes the deaf hear and the dumb speak.

VIII. ¹In those days, the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples to him and said to them: ²I have compassion on the multitude, because they have continued with me now three days, and have nothing to eat.³ And if I send them home fasting, they will faint on the way; for some of them have come from afar.⁴ And his disciples answered him: Whence will any one be able to satisfy these men with bread, here in the wilderness?⁵ And he asked them: How many loaves have you? And they said: Seven.⁶ And he commanded the multitude to recline on the ground. And he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and broke them, and gave them to the disciples to set before them:

and they set them before the multitude.⁷ And they had a few small fishes; and he blessed, and commanded that they also be set before them.⁸ And they ate, and were satisfied; and they took up what remained of the broken pieces, seven baskets.⁹ And those who had eaten were about four thousand; and he sent them away.

¹⁰ And he immediately entered the ship with his disciples, and went into the regions of Dalmanutha.¹¹ And the Pharisees came out, and began to put questions to him, asking of him a sign from heaven, that they might tempt him.¹² And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and said: Why does this generation seek for a sign? Verily I say to you, No sign will be given to this generation.¹³ And he left them, and entered the ship again, and departed to the opposite side.

¹⁴ And they had forgotten to take bread; and they had but one loaf with them in the ship.¹⁵ And he charged them, saying: Take heed, and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.¹⁶ And they reasoned with one another, saying: It is because we have no bread.¹⁷ And Jesus perceived it, and said to them: Why do you reason, because you have no bread? Do you not yet perceive, nor understand? Is your heart still hardened?¹⁸ Having eyes, do you not see? and having ears, do you not hear? and do you not remember?¹⁹ When I broke the five loaves among the five thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces did you take up? They said to him: Twelve.²⁰ When I broke the seven among the four thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces did you take up? They replied: Seven.²¹ And he said to them: How is it that you do not understand?

²² And he came to Bethsaida; and they brought to him a blind man, and besought him to touch him.²³ And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the village. And he spit on his eyes, and laid his hands on him, and asked him if he saw any thing.²⁴ And he looked up and said: I see men, like trees, walking.²⁵ Then he again laid his hands on his eyes, and made him look up. And he was restored, and saw all things clearly.²⁶ And he sent him away to his house, and said: Neither go into the village, nor tell it to any one in the village.

²⁷ And Jesus and his disciples went out into the villages of Cæsarea Philippi. And on the road, he asked his disciples, saying to them: Who

do men say that I am? ²⁸They answered: John the Immerser; and others, Elijah; and others, one of the prophets. ²⁹And he said to them: But who say you that I am? Peter answered and said to him: Thou art the Christ. ³⁰And he charged them to tell no one concerning him.

³¹And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be put to death, and after three days rise again. ³²And he spoke this saying plainly. And Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him. ³³But he turned about, and, looking on his disciples, rebuked Peter, saying: Get behind me, adversary: for you are not thinking of the things of God, but of the things of men.

³⁴And he called to him the multitude with his disciples, and said to them: Whoever determines to follow after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. ³⁵For whoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whoever will lose his life for my sake and the gospel s, shall save it. ³⁶For what will it profit a man, if he gain the whole world, and lose his own life? ³⁷Or, what will a man give as a ransom for his life? ³⁸For whoever will be ashamed of me, and my words, in this sinful and adulterous generation, of him the Son of man also will be ashamed, when he comes in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

IX. ¹And he said to them: Verily I say to you, There are some of these standing here who shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God come in power.

²And after six days, Jesus took with him Peter and James and John, and led them up alone into a high mountain apart; and he was transfigured before them; ³and his raiment became shining, exceeding white like snow, as no fuller on earth could whiten them. ⁴And there appeared to them Elijah, with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus. ⁵And Peter answering, said to Jesus: Rabbi, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. ⁶For he knew not what to say, for they were greatly afraid. ⁷And there was a cloud that overshadowed them; and a voice came from the cloud, This is my beloved Son; hear him. ⁸And suddenly looking around, they no longer saw any one but Jesus only with themselves.

⁹And as they were coming down from the mountain, he charged them to tell no one what they had seen, till the Son of man should rise from the dead. ¹⁰And they kept the matter to themselves, inquiring of one another what the rising from the dead could mean. ¹¹And they asked him, saying: Why do the scribes say that Elijah must come first? ¹²And he answered and said to them: Elijah comes first, and restores all things, and, as it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be despised, so *Elijah is to suffer*. ¹³But I say to you, that Elijah has already come, and they have clone to him what they wished: [as it is written of him.]

¹⁴And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and scribes disputing with them. ¹⁵And at once, all the multitude, on seeing him, were struck with awe, and ran to him and saluted him. ¹⁶And he asked the scribes: Why are you disputing with, them? ¹⁷And one of the multitude answered and said: Teacher, I brought to you my son, who has a dumb spirit. ¹⁸And wherever it seizes him, it throws him into convulsions; and he foams, and gnashes with his teeth, and pines away: and I spoke to your disciples to cast him out, and they were not able. ¹⁹And he answered them, and said: O faithless generation! how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? Bring him to me. ²⁰And they brought him to him. And when he saw him, the spirit immediately threw him into convulsions; and he fell on the ground, and rolled himself, foaming.

²¹And he asked his father: How long is it since this came upon him? He replied: From childhood. ²²And often it throws him into the fire, and into the water, to destroy him. But if you are able to do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us. ²³Jesus said to him: If you are able to believe, all things are possible to him that believes. ²⁴And immediately the father of the child cried out, and with tears said: Lord, I believe; help my unbelief. ²⁵When Jesus saw that a multitude came running together, he rebuked the unclean spirit, and said to it: Dumb and deaf spirit, I command you, come out of him, and enter into him no more. ²⁶And the spirit cried out, and threw him into strong convulsions, and came out of him; and he was like one dead, so that many said: He is dead. ²⁷But Jesus took him

by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose.

²⁸ And when he had come into the house, his disciples asked him privately: Why were we not able to cast it out? ²⁹ And he said to them: This kind can go out by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

³⁰ And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he wished no one to know it. ³¹ For he taught his disciples, and said to them: The Son of man is to be delivered into the hands of men, and they will put him to death; and after he is put to death, he will rise on the third day. ³² But they did not understand this saying, and they were afraid to question him.

³³ And he came into Capernaum; and when he was in the house, he asked them: What were you disputing about among yourselves along the road? ³⁴ But they were silent. For they had been disputing with one another along the road which was greatest. ³⁵ And he sat down and called the twelve, and said to them: If any one desires to be first, he shall be last of all, and servant of all. ³⁶ And he took a little child, and placed it in the midst of them; and when he had taken it in his arms, he said to them: ³⁷ Whoever will receive one of such children on my account, receives me; and whoever will receive me, receives not me, but him that sent me.

³⁸ And John answered him and said: Teacher, we saw one casting out demons in thy name, and he does not follow us: and we forbade him, because he does not follow us. ³⁹ But Jesus said: Forbid him not; for there is no one that will do a mighty deed in my name, and be able readily to speak evil of me. ⁴⁰ For he that is not against us, is for us. ⁴¹ For whoever will give you a cup of water to drink on this account, because you are Christ's, verily I say to you, he shall not lose his reward.

⁴² And whoever will ensnare one of these little ones that believe on me, it would be better for him if a millstone were hung about his neck, and he were thrown into the sea. ⁴³ And if your hand ensnare you, cut it off: it is better for you to enter maimed into life, than having two hands to go away into hell, into the fire that is not quenched, ⁴⁴ where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁵ And if your foot ensnare you, cut it off: it is better for you to enter into life lame, than having two feet to be thrown into hell, into the fire that is not

quenched, ⁴⁶ where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁷ And if your eye ensnare you, pull it out: it is better for you to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be thrown into hell-fire, ⁴⁸ where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁹ For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be seasoned with salt. ⁵⁰ Salt is good; but if the salt shall have become saltless, by what means will you season it? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace with one another.

X. ¹ And he arose and went thence into the borders of Judea, by the other side of the Jordan. And the multitudes again came together to him; and, as his custom was, he taught them again.

² And the Pharisees came to him, and that they might tempt him, asked him the question: Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? ³ He answered and said to them: What commandment did Moses give you? ⁴ They replied: Moses permitted us to write a bill of divorce, and put her away. ⁵ And Jesus answered and said to them: On account of the hardness of your hearts, he wrote this commandment for you. ⁶ But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female. ⁷ For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined to his wife; ⁸ and the two shall be one flesh. So, then, they are no longer two, but one flesh. ⁹ Therefore, what God has joined together, let not man put asunder.

¹⁰ And in the house, his disciples again asked him about the same matter. ¹¹ And he said to them: Whoever puts away his wife, and marries another, commits adultery against her; ¹² and if a woman puts away her husband, and is married to another, she commits adultery.

¹³ And they brought little children to him, that he might touch them: but his disciples rebuked those who brought them. ¹⁴ And when Jesus saw it, he was displeased, and said to them: Let the little children come to me, and forbid them not; for of such is the kingdom of God. ¹⁵ Verily I say to you, Whoever will not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall not enter into it. ¹⁶ And he took them in his arms, laid his hands on them, and blessed them.

¹⁷ And as he was going forth into the road, one ran and bowed the knee to him, and asked

him: Good Teacher, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? ¹⁸ Jesus said to him: Why do you call me good? None is good but one, that is God. ¹⁹ You know the commandments, You shall not commit adultery; You shall not kill; You shall not steal; You shall not give false testimony; You shall not defraud; Honor your father and mother. ²⁰ He answered and said to him: Teacher, all these I have kept from my youth. ²¹ And Jesus, looking on him, loved him, and said to him: One thing you lack; go, sell whatever you have, and give to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me. ²² But becoming sad at that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

²³ And Jesus looked around, and said to his disciples: With what difficulty will those who have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

²⁴ And his disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus, answering again, said to them: Children, how hard it is for those who trust in riches to enter the kingdom of God! ²⁵ It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. ²⁶ And they were astonished beyond measure, and said among themselves: Who, then, can be saved? ²⁷ Jesus looked on them and said: With men this is impossible, but not with God; for with God all things are possible.

²⁸ And Peter began to say to him: Behold, we have left all and followed thee. ²⁹ And Jesus answering, said: Verily I say to you, There is no one that has left house, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and for the sake of the gospel, ³⁰ who shall not receive a hundred-fold, now in this time, houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and lands, with persecutions; and in the age to come, eternal life. ³¹ But many that are first shall be last; and the last first.

³² And they were in the road going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them; and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid. And again taking the twelve aside, he began to tell them what was about to befall him. ³³ Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man will be delivered to the chief priests and the scribes, and they will condemn him to death, and deliver him to the Gentiles; ³⁴ and

they will deride him, and scourge him, and spit upon him, and kill him, and on the third day he will rise again.

³⁵ And James and John the sons of Zebedee came to him, and said: Teacher, we desire you to do for us whatever we shall ask. ³⁶ He said to them: What do you wish me to do for you? ³⁷ They said to him: Grant to us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and one on thy left, in thy glory. ³⁸ Jesus said to them: You know not what you ask. Are you able to drink the cup that I drink, and to be immersed with the immersion with which I am immersed? ³⁹ They said to him: We are able. Jesus said to them: You shall drink the cup that I drink, and you shall be immersed with the immersion with which I am immersed. ⁴⁰ But to sit on my right hand and on my left, is not mine to give; but it shall be given to those for whom it is prepared.

⁴¹ And when the ten heard it, they began to be displeased with James and John. ⁴² But Jesus called them to him, and said to them: You know that those who think they rule the Gentiles, act as lords over them; and their great men exercise authority over them. ⁴³ But it shall not be so among you. But whoever desires to be great among you, shall be your minister; ⁴⁴ and whoever among you desires to be first, shall be servant of all. ⁴⁵ For the Son of man came not to be ministered to, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

⁴⁶ And they came to Jericho: and as he was going out of Jericho, with his disciples and a great multitude, blind Bartimæus, the son of Timæus, was sitting on the roadside, begging. ⁴⁷ And when he heard that it was Jesus the Nazarene, he began to cry out and say: Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me! ⁴⁸ And many rebuked him, that he should be silent. But he cried out yet the more: Son of David, have mercy on me! ⁴⁹ And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they called the blind man, and said to him: Take courage; arise, he calls you. ⁵⁰ And throwing away his mantle, he arose, and came to Jesus. ⁵¹ And Jesus answered and said to him: What do you wish me to do for you? The blind man said to him: Rabboni, that I may receive my sight. ⁵² And Jesus said to him: Go, your faith has saved you. And he immediately received his sight, and followed Jesus on the road.

XI. ¹And when they drew near to Jerusalem, as far as Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, ²and said to them: Go into the village opposite you; and as soon as you enter it, you will find a colt tied, on which no man ever sat. Loose him and bring him. ³And if any say to you: Why are you doing this? say that the Lord has need of him; and he will immediately send him hither. ⁴And they went and found the colt tied near the door without, in the street. And they loosed him. ⁵And some of those who were standing there, said to them: Why are you loosing the colt? ⁶And they said to them as Jesus had commanded; and they gave them permission. ⁷And they brought the colt to Jesus, and put their mantles upon him, and he sat on him.

⁸And many spread their mantles in the road, and others cut branches from the trees, and spread them in the road. ⁹And those who went before, and those who followed after, cried, saying: Hosanna. Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord. ¹⁰Blessed is the coming kingdom of our Father David. Hosanna in the highest.

¹¹And Jesus entered Jerusalem, and went into the temple; and when he had looked around on all things, the hour being now late, he went out to Bethany with the twelve.

¹²And on the morrow, as they were coming from Bethany, he was hungry; ¹³and he saw at a distance a fig-tree that had leaves; and he went, if perhaps he might find any thing on it. And when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for it was not the time for figs. ¹⁴And he answered and said to it: No more may any one ever eat fruit from you. And his disciples heard it.

¹⁵And they came into Jerusalem; and Jesus entered the temple, and began to drive out those who sold, and those who bought in the temple; and he overturned the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of those who sold doves.

¹⁶And he suffered no one to carry a vessel through the temple. ¹⁷And he taught, saying to them: Is it not written, My house shall be called the house of prayer for all nations? But you have made it a den of robbers. ¹⁸And the scribes and the chief priests heard him; and they sought how they might destroy him; for they feared him, because all the multitude were astonished at his teaching. ¹⁹And when evening had come, he went out of the city.

²⁰And in the morning, as they were passing by, they saw the fig-tree withered from the roots. ²¹And Peter, calling his words to mind, said to him: Rabbi, see! the fig-tree which thou didst curse has withered. ²²And Jesus answered and said to them: Have faith in God. ²³For, verily I say to you, that whoever will say to this mountain, Be removed, and be cast into the sea, and will not doubt in his heart, but believe that what he says will come to pass, he shall have whatever he says. ²⁴For this reason I say to you: All things that you ask for in prayer, believe that you will receive them, and they shall be yours. ²⁵And when you stand praying, forgive, if you have any thing against any one, that your Father also who is in heaven may forgive you your offenses. ²⁶But if you do not forgive, your Father who is in heaven will not forgive your offenses.

²⁷And they came again into Jerusalem; and as he was walking in the temple, there came to him the chief priests and the scribes and the elders, ²⁸and said to him: By what authority do you these things? and who gave you this authority to do these things? ²⁹And Jesus answered and said to them: I also will ask you one thing, and if you answer me, I will also tell you by what authority I do these things. ³⁰Was the immersion of John from heaven, or from men? answer me. ³¹And they reasoned with themselves, saying: If we say, From heaven, he will reply, Why, then, did you not believe him? ³²But if we say, From men, they feared the people; for all regarded John as a prophet indeed. ³³And they answered and said to Jesus: We do not know. And Jesus answering, said to them: Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

XII. ¹And he began to speak to them in parables: A man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge around it, and digged a wine-press, and built a tower, and let it out to vine-dressers, and went into another country. ²And at the proper time, he sent a servant to the vine-dressers, that he might receive from the vine-dressers of the fruit of the vineyard. ³And they took him and scourged him, and sent him away without any thing. ⁴And again he sent to them another servant; and at him they threw stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully treated. ⁵And again he sent another; and him they killed. And he sent many others, some of whom they scourged, and some

they killed. ⁶Therefore, having yet one son, his beloved, he sent him also to them last, saying, They will reverence my son. ⁷But those vine-dressers said one to another, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be ours. ⁸And they took him, and killed him, and threw him out of the vineyard. ⁹What, then, will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy those vine-dressers, and give his vineyard to others. ¹⁰Have you not read this scripture: The stone which the builders rejected has become the head of the corner; ¹¹this was from the Lord, and it is wondrous in our eyes?

¹²And they sought to take him, but feared the multitude; for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them; and they left him, and went away.

¹³And they sent to him some of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, that they might entrap him in his words. ¹⁴And they came and said to him: Teacher, we know that you are true, and that you care for no one; for you do not regard the person of men, but teach the way of God in truth. Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not? ¹⁵Must we give, or must we not give? But, knowing their hypocrisy, he said to them: Why do you tempt me? Bring me a denarius, that I may see it. ¹⁶They brought it; and he said to them: Whose image and superscription is this? They said to him: Cæsar's. ¹⁷And Jesus answered and said to them: Give to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they were astonished at him.

¹⁸And the Sadducees, who say that there is no resurrection, came to him, and put a question to him, saying: ¹⁹Teacher, Moses wrote for us, If any man's brother die, and leave a wife, and leave no children, his brother shall take his wife, and raise up children for his brother. ²⁰Now there were seven brothers; and the first took a wife, and dying, left no child; ²¹and the second took her, and he died, and left no child; and the third, likewise; ²²and the seven took her, and left no child. Last of all, the woman also died. ²³Therefore, in the resurrection, when they rise, of which of them shall she be the wife? for the seven had her as a wife. ²⁴And Jesus answered and said to them: Do you not err for this reason, because you know not the scriptures, nor the power of God? ²⁵For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are

given in marriage, but are as the angels in heaven. ²⁶But concerning the dead, that they do rise, have you not read in the book of Moses, at The Bush, how God spoke to him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? ²⁷He is not the God of the dead, but of the living. Therefore, you do greatly err.

²⁸And one of the scribes came, and heard them reasoning together; and perceiving that he had answered them well, he asked him: Which is the first commandment of all? ²⁹And Jesus answered him: The first commandment of all is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord. ³⁰And you shall love the Lord your God with your whole heart, and with your whole soul, and with your whole mind, and with your whole strength. This is the first commandment. ³¹And the second, which is like it, is this: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. There is no other commandment greater than these. ³²And the scribe said to him: Teacher, in truth you have well said, that there is one God, and there is no other beside him; ³³and to love him with the whole heart, and with the whole understanding, and with the whole soul, and with the whole strength, and to love one's neighbor as himself, is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices. ³⁴And Jesus perceiving that he answered with understanding, said to him: You are not far from the kingdom of God. And no one, after that, ventured to ask him a question.

³⁵And Jesus, as he was teaching in the temple, answered and said: How say the scribes that the Christ is the son of David? ³⁶For David himself said by the Holy Spirit: The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make thy enemies thy footstool. ³⁷David himself, then, calls him Lord; and how is he his son? And the great multitude heard him with pleasure.

³⁸And he said to them in his teaching: Beware of the scribes, who love to walk in robes, and love salutations in the markets, ³⁹and the first seats in the synagogues, and the first places at suppers; ⁴⁰who eat up the houses of widows, and, as a pretext, make long prayers: these shall receive more abundant condemnation.

⁴¹And Jesus, sitting opposite the treasury, observed how the multitude threw money into the treasury. And many rich persons threw in much. ⁴²And there came one poor widow, and

she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. ⁴³ And he called his disciples to him, and said to them: Verily I say to you, this poor widow has thrown in more than all that have thrown into the treasury. ⁴⁴ For all have thrown in out of their abundance; but she, out of her poverty, has thrown in all that she had, her whole living.

XIII. ¹ And as he was going out from the temple, one of his disciples said to him: Teacher, see what stones and what buildings! ² And Jesus answering, said to him: Do you see these great buildings? There shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

³ And as he sat on the mount of Olives, opposite the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately: ⁴ Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign when all these things are about to be accomplished? ⁵ Jesus answering them, began to say: Take heed, lest any one deceive you. ⁶ For many will come in my name, saying, I am he, and will deceive many. ⁷ But when you hear of wars and rumors of wars, be not troubled; for these things must be: but not yet is the end. ⁸ For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there will be earthquakes in various places, and there will be famines, and tumults. ⁹ These are the beginning of sorrows. But take heed to yourselves; for they will deliver you up to councils, and you will be scourged in the synagogues; and you will stand before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them. ¹⁰ And the gospel must first be preached among all the nations.

¹¹ But when they lead you to deliver you up, be not anxious beforehand, nor premeditate what you shall speak; but whatever shall be given you in that hour, that do you speak; for it is not you that speak, but the Holy Spirit. ¹² Brother will deliver up brother to death, and the father the child; and children will rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death; ¹³ and you will be hated by all on my account. But he that endures to the end shall be saved.

¹⁴ But when you see that detestable thing that makes desolate, which is spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that reads understand,) then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains; ¹⁵ let not him that is on the house-top go down

into his house, nor enter in to take any thing from his house; ¹⁶ and let not him that is in the field turn back to take his mantle. ¹⁷ But alas for those who are with child, and for those who give suck in those days. ¹⁸ And pray that your flight may not be in the winter. ¹⁹ For these will be the days of affliction, such as has not been from the beginning of the creation which God created, till this time, and will never be. ²⁰ And unless the Lord had made those days few, no flesh could be saved: but for the sake of the elect whom he has chosen, he has made those days few. ²¹ And then, if any one say to you: Lo! here is the Christ, or, Lo! there; believe him not. ²² For false Christs and false prophets will arise, and will show signs and wonders, in order to lead astray, if possible, even the elect. ²³ But do you take heed: behold, I have told you all things beforehand.

²⁴ But in those days, after that affliction, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give her light, ²⁵ and the stars of heaven will fall, and the hosts that are in the heavens will be shaken. ²⁶ And then shall they see the Son of man coming in clouds with great power and glory. ²⁷ And then will he send his angels, and gather his elect from the four winds, from the most distant part of earth to the most distant part of heaven.

²⁸ But learn a parable from the fig-tree: As soon as its branch becomes tender, and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is near. ²⁹ So, also, when you see these things coming to pass, know that it is near, at the doors. ³⁰ Verily I say to you, this generation shall not pass away, till all these things take place. ³¹ Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. ³² But of that day or that hour no one knows: neither the angels who are in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father.

³³ Take heed, watch and pray: for you know not when the time is. ³⁴ As a man, going into another country, leaves his house, and gives authority to his servants, and to each one his own work, and commands the door-keeper to watch; ³⁵ watch you therefore; for you know not when the master of the house comes, whether at evening, or at midnight, or at the crowing of the cock, or in the morning; ³⁶ lest he come suddenly, and find you sleeping. ³⁷ What I say to you, I say to all, Watch.

XIV. ¹ After two days was the passover and the feast of unleavened bread;

and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and kill him.² But they said: Not during the feast, lest there be a tumult of the people.

³ And while he was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as he reclined at table, there came a woman that had an alabaster box of ointment of pure nard, very costly; and she broke the box, and poured it on his head.⁴ And some of them were displeased within themselves, and said: For what purpose was this waste of the ointment?⁵ For this ointment could have been sold for more than three hundred denarii, and given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

⁶ But Jesus said: Let her alone; why do you trouble her? She has performed a good work on me.⁷ For you have the poor with you always; and whenever you choose, you can do them good; but me you have not always.⁸ She has done what she could; she has come beforehand to anoint my body for its burial.⁹ Verily I say to you, wherever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also which she has done shall be told, for a memorial of her.

¹⁰ And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went away to the chief priests, that he might deliver him up to them.¹¹ And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently deliver him up.

¹² And on the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said to him: Where dost thou wish that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passover?

¹³ And he sent two of his disciples, and said to them: Go into the city, and there will meet you a man carrying a pitcher of water; ¹⁴ follow him, and wherever he enters, say to the master of the house: The Teacher says, Where is the room in which I may eat the passover with my disciples?

¹⁵ And he will show you a large upper room, furnished and made ready; there make ready for us.

¹⁶ And his disciples went out, and came into the city, and found as he had said to them; and they prepared the passover.

¹⁷ And in the evening, he came with the twelve.¹⁸ And while they were reclining at table, and were eating, Jesus said to them: Verily I say to you, One of you, he that eats with me, will deliver me up.¹⁹ And they began to be sad, and

to say to him, one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I?²⁰ He answered and said to them: It is one of the twelve, he that dips with me into the dish.²¹ The Son of man goes, as it is written of him; but alas for that man by whom the Son of man is delivered up! It would have been good for that man if he had never been born.

²² And while they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and broke it, and gave it to them, and said: Take, eat; this is my body.²³ And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them; and they all drank of it.²⁴ And he said to them: This is my blood of the new covenant, which is poured out for many.²⁵ Verily I say to you, I shall drink no more of the fruit of the vine, till that day when I shall drink it new in the kingdom of God.

²⁶ And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.²⁷ And Jesus said to them: All of you will find in me an occasion for offense this night; for it is written: I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.²⁸ But after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee.²⁹ Peter said to him: Though all should find occasion for offense, yet I will not.³⁰ And Jesus said to him: Verily I say to you, this day, during this very night, before the cock crows twice, you will deny me three times.³¹ But he said with the more vehemence: Though it should be necessary for me to die with thee, I would not deny thee. And so said they all.

³² And they came to a place called Gethsemane; and he said to his disciples: Sit here, while I pray.

³³ And he took with him Peter and James and John, and began to be in dismay and anguish of soul.³⁴ And he said to them: My soul is encompassed with sorrow, even to death; remain here, and watch.³⁵ And he went forward a little, and fell upon the ground, and prayed, that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him;³⁶ and he said: Abba, Father, all things are possible to thee; let this cup pass from me: but not what I will, but what thou wiliest.³⁷ And he came and found them sleeping; and he said to Peter: Simon, do you sleep? Had you not strength to watch one hour?³⁸ Watch, and pray, *all of you*, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

³⁹ And again he went away, and prayed, saying the same thing.⁴⁰ And he returned, and found them sleeping again, for their eyes were

heavy; and they knew not what to answer him. ⁴¹ And he came the third time, and said to them: Sleep the remaining time, and take your rest. It is enough; the hour has come; behold, the Son of man is delivered into the hands of sinners. ⁴² Arise, let us go; behold, he that delivers me up draws near.

⁴³ And immediately, while he was yet speaking, came Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude, with swords and clubs, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders. ⁴⁴ And he that delivered him up had given them a sign, saying: The one that I shall kiss, is he; take him, and lead him away securely. ⁴⁵ And when he came, he immediately went up to him and said: Rabbi, Rabbi, and kissed him. ⁴⁶ And they laid their hands on him and took him.

⁴⁷ And one of those who were standing by, drew a sword, and struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his ear. ⁴⁸ And Jesus answering, said to them: Have you come out as against a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? ⁴⁹ I was daily with you in the temple, and taught, and you did not take me; but *this is so*, that the scriptures may be fulfilled. ⁵⁰ And they all forsook him and fled. ⁵¹ And there followed him a certain young man, who had a linen garment around his naked body. And the young men laid hold of him; ⁵² and he left the linen garment, and fled from them naked.

⁵³ And they led Jesus away to the chief priest; and with him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders, and the scribes. ⁵⁴ And Peter followed him, at a distance, even into the palace of the chief priest, and sat with the attendants, and warmed himself at the fire. ⁵⁵ And the chief priests and the whole Sanhedrin sought for testimony against Jesus, in order to put him to death, and found none.

⁵⁶ For many testified falsely against him, and their testimony did not agree. ⁵⁷ And some rose up, and testified falsely against him, saying: ⁵⁸ We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and in three days I will build another made without hands. ⁵⁹ And not even in this did their testimony agree. ⁶⁰ And the chief priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying: Do you make no answer? What do these testify against you? ⁶¹ But he was silent, and made no answer.

Again, the chief priest asked him, and said to

him: Are you the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? ⁶² Jesus replied: I am. And you shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of the Almighty, and coming with the clouds of heaven. ⁶³ And the chief priest rent his clothes, and said: What further need have we of witnesses? ⁶⁴ You have heard his impious speech. What think you? They all condemned him to be a subject of death.

⁶⁵ And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to strike him with their fists, and to say to him: Give a response. And the attendants struck him with their open hands.

⁶⁶ And while Peter was in the court below, one of the maid-servants of the chief priest came; ⁶⁷ and when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked at him, and said: You also were with Jesus the Nazarene. ⁶⁸ But he denied, saying: I neither know, nor understand what you say. And he went out into the entrance, and the cock crew. ⁶⁹ And the maid-servant saw him again, and began to say to those who stood by: This man is one of them. ⁷⁰ He again denied. And again, after a little while, those who stood by said to Peter: Surely, you are one of them; for you are a Galilean, and your speech is like theirs. ⁷¹ But he began to curse and to swear, saying: I know not this man of whom you speak. ⁷² And immediately the cock crew the second time. And Peter remembered the word that Jesus had spoken to him: Before the cock crows twice, you will deny me three times. And when he thought upon it, he wept.

XV. ¹ And forthwith in the morning, the chief priests, with the elders and scribes, and the whole Sanhedrin, having held a consultation, and having bound Jesus, led him away, and delivered him to Pilate. ² And Pilate asked him: Are you the King of the Jews? And he answering, said: You say it. ³ And the chief priests accused him of many things. ⁴ Pilate again asked him, saying: Do you make no answer? See, how many things they testify against you. ⁵ But Jesus gave no further answer; so that Pilate was astonished.

⁶ Now it was his custom to release to them, at the feast, one prisoner, whomever they desired. ⁷ And there was one called Barabbas, lying bound with his fellow-insurgents, who had committed murder in the insurrection. ⁸ And the multitude cried out, and began to ask him to

do as he had always done for them.⁹ But Pilate answered them, saying: Do you wish me to release to you the King of the Jews?¹⁰ For he knew that, through envy, the chief priests had delivered him up.¹¹ But the chief priests instigated the multitude, that he should rather release Barabbas to them.¹² And Pilate answered and said again to them: What, then, do you wish me to do with him whom you call the King of the Jews?¹³ They again cried out: Crucify him.¹⁴ But Pilate said to them: Why, what evil has he done? But they cried vehemently: Crucify him.¹⁵ And Pilate, willing to gratify the multitude, released to them Barabbas; and delivered Jesus, after he had scourged him, to be crucified.

¹⁶ And the soldiers led him away within the court, which is the governor's house, and called together the whole band.¹⁷ And they clothed him in purple; and having plaited a crown of thorn branches, they put it on him,¹⁸ and began to salute him: Hail, King of the Jews!¹⁹ And they struck him on the head with a reed, and spit upon him, and bowing their knees, did him homage.²⁰ And when they had derided him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him.

²¹ And they compelled one Simon, a Cyrenian, (the father of Alexander and Rufus,) who was passing by, coming in from the country, to bear his cross.²² And they brought him to the place Golgotha, which is, when translated, the place of a skull.²³ And they gave him wine mingled with myrrh, to drink: but he did not receive it.²⁴ And when they had crucified him, they divided his clothes among themselves, casting lots for them, what each one should take.

²⁵ And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.²⁶ And the superscription containing his accusation was written above him: THE KING OF THE JEWS.

²⁷ And with him they crucified two robbers, one on his right hand, and the other on his left.²⁸ And the scripture was fulfilled, which says: And he was numbered with transgressors.²⁹ And those who passed by reviled him, shaking their heads, and saying: Aha! you that destroy the temple, and build it in three days,³⁰ save yourself, and come down from the cross.³¹ Likewise the chief priests, with the scribes, speaking in derision one to another, said: He saved others; himself he can not save.³² Let the Christ, the

King of Israel, come down now from the cross, that we may see and believe. Those also who were crucified with him, reproached him.

³³ And when the sixth hour had come, there was darkness over the whole land, till the ninth hour.³⁴ And at the ninth hour, Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying: Eloi, Eloi, lamma sabachthani? which is, when translated, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?³⁵ And some of those who stood by, when they heard it, said: Behold, he calls for Elijah.³⁶ And one ran, and filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave it to him to drink, saying: Wait; let us see if Elijah is coming to take him down.

³⁷ But Jesus, having cried with a loud voice, gave up his spirit.³⁸ And the veil of the temple was rent in two, from the top to the bottom.³⁹ And when the centurion that was standing opposite him, saw that he thus cried out, and gave up his spirit, he said: Truly, this man was the Son of God.

⁴⁰ And there were, at a distance, women also, looking on; among whom were Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the younger and of Joses, and Salome;⁴¹ who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered to him; and many other women, who had come up with him to Jerusalem.

⁴² And when the evening had come, because it was the preparation, which is the eve of the sabbath,⁴³ Joseph of Arimathea, an honorable counselor, who was himself looking for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.⁴⁴ But Pilate was astonished that he was already dead; and having called the centurion to him, he inquired of him whether he had been any while dead.⁴⁵ And having learned the fact from the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.⁴⁶ And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulcher that had been hewed out of a rock: and he rolled a stone to the door of the sepulcher.⁴⁷ And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses saw where he was laid.

XVI. ¹ And when the sabbath had passed, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, bought spices, that they might come and anoint him.² And very early, on the first day of the week,

when the sun had risen, they came to the sepulcher. ³And they said among themselves: Who will roll away the stone for us from the door of the sepulcher? ⁴for it was very great. And looking up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away. ⁵And they entered the sepulcher, and saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a white robe: and they were frightened. ⁶But he said to them: Be not frightened; you seek Jesus the Nazarene, who was crucified. He has risen; he is not here: see the place where they laid him. ⁷But go, tell his disciples, and Peter, that he goes before you into Galilee; there you shall see him, as he told you. ⁸And they went out, and fled from the sepulcher; for trembling and astonishment seized upon them. And they said nothing to any one, for they were afraid.

⁹Now when Jesus had risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven demons. ¹⁰And she went and told it to those who had been with him, as they mourned and wept. ¹¹And though they heard that he was alive, and had been seen by her, they did not believe.

¹²After this he appeared in another form to two of them, as they walked and went into the country. ¹³And they went and told it to the rest. But they did not believe them. ¹⁴Afterward he appeared to the eleven as they reclined at table; and he reproached them for their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they did not believe those who had seen him after he had risen.

¹⁵And he said to them: Go into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. ¹⁶He that believes and is immersed, shall be saved; he that believes not, shall be condemned. ¹⁷And these signs shall attend those who believe. In my name they shall cast out demons; they shall speak with new tongues; ¹⁸they shall take up serpents; and, if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

¹⁹The Lord, therefore, after he had spoken to them, was taken up into heaven: and he sat down at the right hand of God. ²⁰And they went forth and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following.

Testimony of Luke.

I. ¹Since many have undertaken to compose a history of the things that are fully believed among us, ²even as they were delivered to us by those who were, from the beginning, eye-witnesses and ministers of the word; ³it seemed good to me also, having obtained exact information of all things from the very first, to write them in order for you, most excellent Theophilus, ⁴that you might know the certainty of the things in which you have been instructed.

⁵There was, in the days of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest, named Zachariah, of the class of Abijah; and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth. ⁶They were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless. ⁷And they had no child, because Elizabeth was barren, and they were both advanced in years.

⁸It came to pass, while he was officiating as priest before God, in the order of his class, that, ⁹according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense, when he went into the temple of the Lord. ¹⁰And all the multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense. ¹¹And there appeared to him an angel of the Lord, standing at the right side of the altar of incense.

¹²And Zachariah was troubled at the sight, and fear fell upon him. ¹³But the angel said to him: Fear not, Zachariah; for your prayer is heard, and your wife Elizabeth shall bear you a son, and you shall call his name John. ¹⁴And you shall have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth. ¹⁵For he shall be great before the Lord; and he shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit even from his mother's womb. ¹⁶And many of the sons of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. ¹⁷And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient, by the wisdom of the just, in order to make ready for the Lord a prepared people.

¹⁸And Zachariah said to the angel: By what sign shall I know this? for I am old, and my wife is advanced in years. ¹⁹And the angel answered

and said to him: I am Gabriel, who stands in the presence of God; and I am sent to speak to you, and to announce to you this good news. ²⁰And behold, you shall be dumb and not able to speak, till the day in which these things shall take place, because you did not believe my words, which shall be fulfilled in their proper time. ²¹And the people were waiting for Zachariah, and they wondered that he stayed so long in the temple. ²²But when he came out, he was not able to speak to them; and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple; and he made signs to them, and remained speechless.

²³And it came to pass, when the days of his service were completed, that he departed to his own house. ²⁴And after those days, his wife Elizabeth conceived, and kept herself retired for five months, saying: ²⁵Thus has the Lord dealt with me in the days in which he has looked with regard upon me, to take away my reproach among men.

²⁶And in the sixth month, the angel Gabriel was sent from God into a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, ²⁷to a virgin betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the name of the virgin was Mary.

²⁸And the angel came into her presence, and said: Hail, graciously accepted: the Lord is with you; blessed are you among women. ²⁹And she was perplexed at his words, and reasoned, what this salutation could mean. ³⁰And the angel said to her: Fear not, Mary; for you have found favor with God. ³¹And behold, you shall conceive and bear a son, and you shall call his name Jesus. ³²He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most High; and the Lord God will give to him the throne of David his father; ³³and he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

³⁴But Mary said to the angel: How shall this be, since I know not a man? ³⁵And the angel answered and said to her: The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; for which reason, also, that which is begotten, being holy, shall be called the Son of God. ³⁶And behold, Elizabeth your kinswoman, even she has conceived a son in

her old age; and this is the sixth month with her who is called barren; ³⁷for nothing shall be impossible with God. ³⁸And Mary said: Behold the handmaid of the Lord; let it be to me according to your word. And the angel departed from her.

³⁹And Mary arose in those days, and went with haste into the mountainous country, into a city of Judah; ⁴⁰and she came into the house of Zachariah, and saluted Elizabeth. ⁴¹And it came to pass, when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, that the babe in her womb leaped for joy. ⁴²And Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit, and spoke with a loud voice, and said: Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the fruit of your womb. ⁴³And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? ⁴⁴For, behold, when the voice of your salutation sounded in my ears, the babe in my womb leaped for joy. ⁴⁵And blessed is she who believed; for there shall be a fulfillment of the things which were spoken to her from the Lord.

⁴⁶And Mary said: My soul magnifies the Lord, ⁴⁷and my spirit rejoices in God, my Savior; ⁴⁸for he has looked upon the lowly condition of his handmaid. For, behold, from this time, all generations shall call me blessed; ⁴⁹for He that is Mighty has done great things for me, and holy is his name: ⁵⁰and his mercy is from generation to generation upon those who fear him. ⁵¹He has done mighty deeds with his arm; he has scattered those who are proud in the understanding of their hearts. ⁵²He has cast down the mighty from their thrones, and exalted the lowly. ⁵³He has filled the hungry with good things, but the rich he has sent empty away. ⁵⁴He has helped Israel his servant, (as he spoke to our fathers,) ⁵⁵by remembering his mercy to Abraham and to his posterity forever.

⁵⁶And Mary remained with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

⁵⁷Now the time for Elizabeth to be delivered had fully come; and she gave birth to a son. ⁵⁸And her neighbors and relatives heard that the Lord had showed great mercy to her, and they rejoiced with her.

⁵⁹And it came to pass, on the eighth day, that they came to circumcise the child; and they called him by the name of his father, Zachariah. ⁶⁰And his mother answered and said: Not so; but he shall be called John. ⁶¹And they said to

her: There is no one among your relatives that is called by this name. ⁶²And they made signs to his father, to know what he wished him to be called. ⁶³And having asked for a writing tablet, he wrote, saying: His name is John. And they were all astonished.

⁶⁴And immediately his mouth was opened, and his tongue was loosed, and he spoke, and praised God. ⁶⁵And fear came on all that dwelt round about them; and all these things were talked of everywhere throughout the mountainous country of Judea. ⁶⁶And all that heard them, laid them up in their hearts, and said: What, then, will this child be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

⁶⁷And Zachariah his father was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying: ⁶⁸Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he has visited and redeemed his people; ⁶⁹and he has raised up for us, in the house of David his servant, a horn of salvation, ⁷⁰(as he spoke by the mouth of all his holy prophets of ancient times,) ⁷¹salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us, ⁷²in order to show the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant, ⁷³the oath which he swore to Abraham our father, ⁷⁴that he would grant to us, that being delivered from the hands of our enemies, we might serve him without fear, ⁷⁵in holiness and righteousness before him, all our days.

⁷⁶And you, child, shall be called the prophet of the Most High; for you shall go before the face of the Lord, to make ready his ways, ⁷⁷by giving to his people the knowledge of salvation in the remission of their sins, ⁷⁸through the tender mercies of our God; by which the dawn from on high has visited us, ⁷⁹to give light to those who sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, by guiding our feet in the way of peace.

⁸⁰And the child grew and became strong in spirit; and he was in the deserts till the day of his manifestation to Israel.

II. ¹And it came to pass in those days, that there went forth a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the inhabitants of the land should be enrolled. ²This enrollment first took place when Cyrenius was governor of Syria. ³And all went to be enrolled, each one to his own city. ⁴And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea,

to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, (for he was of the house and family of David,).⁵ to be enrolled with Mary his betrothed wife, who was with child.

⁶ And it came to pass while they were there, that the days for her to be delivered were completed; ⁷ and she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swathing-clothes, and laid him in the stable, because there was no place for them in the inn.

⁸ And there were in the same country shepherds, living in the open field, and guarding their flock by night. ⁹ And, behold, an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them; and they were greatly afraid. ¹⁰ And the angel said to them: Be not afraid; for, behold, I bring you good news of great joy, which shall be for all people. ¹¹ For there is born for you this day, in the city of David, a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. ¹² And this shall be to you the sign: you will find the babe wrapped in swathing-clothes, and lying in a stable. ¹³ And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God, and saying: ¹⁴ Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will among men.

¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, after the angels had gone away into heaven, the shepherds said one to another: Let us now go to Bethlehem, and see this thing that has come to pass, which the Lord has made known to us. ¹⁶ And they came with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in the stable. ¹⁷ And after they had seen it, they made known everywhere the words that had been spoken to them of this child. ¹⁸ And all that heard, wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. ¹⁹ But Mary kept all these things in her mind, and pondered them in her heart. ²⁰ And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all things which they had heard and seen, as it had been told to them.

²¹ And when eight days were completed for circumcising him, his name was called Jesus, as it had been called by the angel, before he was conceived in the womb.

²² And when the days for their purification were completed according to the law of Moses, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord, ²³(as it is written in the law of the Lord: Every male that opens the womb shall be

called holy to the Lord;) ²⁴and to offer a sacrifice, according to that which is commanded in the law of the Lord: A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons.

²⁵ And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon. And this man was just and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel. And the Holy Spirit was upon him: ²⁶and it had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death before he had seen the Lord's Anointed. ²⁷ And he came by the Spirit into the temple; and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him according to the custom of the law, ²⁸he took him in his arms, and blessed God, and said: ²⁹ Now, Lord, thou dost let thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word, ³⁰for my eyes have seen thy salvation, ³¹which thou hast prepared before the face of all people; ³²a light for a revelation to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

³³ And Joseph and his mother wondered at the things which were spoken of him. ³⁴ And Simeon blessed them, and said to Mary his mother: Behold, this child is appointed for the fall and rising again of many in Israel, and for a sign to be spoken against, ³⁵(and a sword shall pierce through your own soul,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

³⁶ And there was a prophetess, Anna, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher; she was of great age, and had lived with a husband seven years from her virginity: ³⁷ and she was a widow of about eighty-four years, and she departed not from the temple, but served, day and night, with fastings and prayers. ³⁸ And she came in at that hour, and gave thanks to Lord, and spoke of him to all that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

³⁹ And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to their own city Nazareth. ⁴⁰ And the child grew, and became strong in spirit, being filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

⁴¹ And his parents went up every year to Jerusalem, at the feast of passover. ⁴² And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem, according to the custom of the feast. ⁴³ And when they had kept the full number of days, and had set out to return, the child Jesus

stayed behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew it not.⁴⁴ But supposing that he was in the company, they went a day's journey; and they sought for him among their relatives and acquaintance;⁴⁵ and not finding him, they returned to Jerusalem in search of him.

⁴⁶ And it came to pass, after three days, that they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, both hearing them, and asking them questions.⁴⁷ And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding, and his answers.⁴⁸ And when they saw him they were amazed. And his mother said to him: Child, why have you acted thus toward us? Behold, your father and I have sought for you in sorrow.⁴⁹ And he said to them: Why did you seek for me? Did you not know that I must be in my Father's house?⁵⁰ And they did not understand the words which he spoke to them.⁵¹ And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was obedient to them. And his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.⁵² And Jesus increased in wisdom and in stature, and in favor with God and with man.

III. ¹In the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, when Pontius Pilate was governor of Judea, and Herod was tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip was tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias was tetrarch of Abilene,² Annas and Caiaphas being chief priests, the word of God came to John the son of Zachariah, in the wilderness.

³ And he came into all the country about the Jordan, preaching the immersion of repentance in order to the remission of sins;⁴ as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet, saying: The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ready the way of the Lord, make his paths straight;⁵ every ravine shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be made level; and the crooked ways shall be made straight; and the rough ways shall be made smooth;⁶ and all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

⁷ Therefore he said to the multitudes that came out to be immersed by him: Generation of vipers, who has warned you to flee from the coming wrath?⁸ Bring forth, therefore, fruits worthy of repentance. And begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham for our father; for I say to you, that God is able from

these stones to raise up children for Abraham.⁹ And now also the ax is lying at the root of the trees; therefore, every tree that does not produce good fruit, is cut down and cast into the fire.

¹⁰ And the multitudes asked him, saying: What, then, shall we do?¹¹ He answered and said to them: He that has two coats, let him give to him that has none; and he that has food, let him do likewise.¹² And the publicans also came to be immersed, and they said to him: Teacher, what shall we do?¹³ And he said to them: Exact no more than that which is appointed you.¹⁴ And soldiers also asked him, saying: And what shall we do? And he said to them: Take nothing from any one by extortion, nor by false accusation, and be content with your pay.

¹⁵ While the people were in suspense, and all were reasoning in their hearts about John, whether he was the Christ or not,¹⁶ John answered them all, saying: I indeed immerse you in water; but there comes One mightier than I, the strap of whose sandals I am not worthy to loose; he will immerse you in the Holy Spirit and in fire.¹⁷ His winnowing shovel is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing-floor, and gather the grain into his granary, but the chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire.¹⁸ With many other exhortations he proclaimed the good news to the people.

¹⁹ But Herod the tetrarch having been reproved by him on account of Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip, and for all the wicked deeds which Herod did,²⁰ added this also to them all, that he shut up John in prison.

²¹ And it came to pass, while all the people were being immersed, that Jesus also was immersed; and as he was praying, the heaven was opened,²² and the Holy Spirit descended upon him, in a bodily form, like a dove; and there came a voice from heaven, which said: Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I delight.²³ And Jesus was about thirty years old when he began *his ministry*, being, as was supposed, the son of Joseph, son of Heli,²⁴ son of Matthat, son of Levi, son of Malchi, son of Janna, son of Joseph,²⁵ son of Mattathiah, son of Amos, son of Nahum, son of Esli, son of Naggæ,²⁶ son of Maath, son of Mattathiah, son of Shimoï, son of Joseph, son of Judah,²⁷ son of Joannah, son of Rhesa, son of Zerubbabel, son of Shealtiel, son of Neri,²⁸ son of Malchi, son of Addi, son of

Kosam, son of Elmodam, son of Er,²⁹ son of Jose, son of Eliezer, son of Jorim, son of Matthat, son of Levi,³⁰ son of Simeon, son of Judah, son of Joseph, son of Jonan, son of Eliakim,³¹ son of Meleah, son of Mainan, son of Mattatha, son of Nathan, son of David,

³²Son of Jesse, son of Obed, son of Boaz, son of Salmon, son of Nahshon,³³ son of Aminidab, son of Aram, son of Esrom, son of Phares, son of Judah,³⁴ son of Jacob, son of Isaac, son of Abraham, son of Terah, son of Nahor,³⁵ son of Serug, son of Reu, son of Peleg, son of Eber, son of Salah,³⁶ son of Kenan, son of Arphaxad, son of Shem, son of Noah, son of Lamech,³⁷ son of Methusalah, son of Enoch, son of Jared, son of Mahalaleel, son of Kenan,³⁸ son of Enos, son of Seth, son of Adam, son of God.

IV. ¹And Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,² and *was there* forty days, to be tempted by the devil. And he ate nothing during those days; and when they were ended, he was afterward hungry.³ And the devil said to him: If you are the Son of God, command this stone to become bread.⁴ And Jesus answered him, and said: It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

⁵ And the devil took him up into a high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world, in a moment of time.⁶ And the devil said to him: I will give you all the authority and glory of these, for it is delivered to me; and to whomever I will, I give it.⁷ If, therefore, you will bow with reverence before me, all shall be yours.⁸ And Jesus answered and said to him: Get behind me, Satan; it is written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve.

⁹ And he brought him to Jerusalem, and placed him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to him: If you are the Son of God, throw yourself down from this place;¹⁰ for it is written, He will give his angels charge concerning you, to guard you carefully;¹¹ and in their hands they shall take you up, lest you strike your foot against a stone.¹² And Jesus answered and said to him: It is said, You shall not put the Lord your God to the proof.¹³ And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a time.

¹⁴ And Jesus returned in the power of the

Spirit into Galilee: and his fame went throughout the whole of that region.¹⁵ And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified by all.

¹⁶ And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up; and, as his custom was, he entered the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up to read.¹⁷ And the volume of Isaiah the prophet was given to him: and when he had unrolled the volume, he found the place where it was written:¹⁸ The Spirit of the Lord is upon me; because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he has sent me to heal the brokenhearted; to proclaim liberty to the captives, and recovery of sight to the blind; to set free the oppressed;¹⁹ to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.²⁰ And he rolled up the volume, and save it back to the attendant, and sat down; and the eyes of all that were in the synagogue were earnestly fixed upon him.

²¹ And he began to say to them: This scripture which you have heard, is this day fulfilled.

²² And all extolled him; and they wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth, and said: Is not this the son of Joseph?

²³ And he said to them: You will assuredly apply to me this proverb, Physician, heal yourself. Whatever things we have heard were done in Capernaum, do also here in your country.

²⁴ And he said: Verily I say to you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.²⁵ And I tell you, in truth, there were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up for three years and six months, so that a great famine was on all the land:²⁶ and to no one of them was Elijah sent, but to Sarepta, a city of Sidon, to a woman that was a widow.²⁷ And many lepers were in Israel, in the time of Elisha the prophet; and no one of them was cleansed but Naaman the Syrian.

²⁸ And all that were in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with anger,²⁹ and arose, and drove him out of the city, and brought him to the brow of the hill on which their city was built, that they might throw him down headlong.³⁰ But he passed through the midst of them, and went away.

³¹ And he went down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee. And he was teaching them on the sabbath-days.³² And they were astonished at his teaching, for his word was with authority.

³³ And there was in the synagogue a man who

had the spirit of an unclean demon; and he cried out with a loud voice,³⁴ saying: Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Nazarene? Hast thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.³⁵ And Jesus rebuked him, saying: Be silent, and come out of him. And the demon threw him into the midst, and came out of him, and hurt him not.³⁶ And amazement came upon all, and they spoke one to another, saying: What teaching is this? for with authority and power he commands the unclean spirits, and they come out.³⁷ And his fame went abroad into every place of the country round about.

³⁸ And he arose and went out of the synagogue into the house of Simon. And Simon's mother-in-law was confined with a violent fever: and they besought him in her behalf.³⁹ And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her: and she arose immediately, and ministered to them.

⁴⁰ And when the sun had gone down, all that had any sick with various diseases, brought them to him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and cured them.⁴¹ Demons also came out of many, crying out and saying: Thou art the Christ, the Son of God. And he rebuked them, and did not permit them to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.

⁴² And when it was day, he went out and departed into a desert place; and the multitudes sought for him, and came to him and endeavored to detain him, that he should not go away from them.⁴³ But he said to them: I must make known the good news of the kingdom of God to other cities also; for to this end I have been sent.⁴⁴ And he continued to preach in the synagogues of Galilee.

V. ¹ And it came to pass while the multitude was pressing on him to hear the word of God, and he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret,² that he saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing their nets.³ And he entered one of the ships, which was Simon's, and requested him to push out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the multitude from the ship.

⁴ And when he had made an end of speaking, he said to Simon: Push out into the deep water, and let down your nets for a draught.

⁵ And Simon answered and said to him: Master, we have toiled all night and have caught nothing; but at thy command, I will let down the net.

⁶ And when they had done this, they inclosed a great number of fishes, and their net began to break;⁷ and they beckoned to their partners who were in the other ship, to come and help them. And they came and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

⁸ And when Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at the knees of Jesus, and said: Depart from me, Lord, for I am a sinful man.⁹ For amazement at the draught of fishes which they had caught had seized upon him and all that were with him;¹⁰ and in like manner also upon James and John the sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said to Simon: Fear not; from this time forth you shall catch men.¹¹ And when they had brought their ships to the land, they left all and followed him.

¹² And it came to pass, that he was in one of their cities; and behold, a man full of leprosy; and when he saw Jesus, he fell on his face and besought him, saying: Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.¹³ And stretching out his hand, he touched him, and said: I will; be clean. And immediately his leprosy departed from him.¹⁴ And he charged him to tell no one; but go, show yourself to the priest, and make offering for your cleansing, as Moses commanded, that it may be a testimony to them.¹⁵ But his fame went abroad the more; and many multitudes came together to hear, and to be cured by him of their infirmities.¹⁶ And he withdrew to the deserts and prayed.

¹⁷ And it came to pass, on a certain day, that he was teaching, and there were Pharisees and teachers of the law sitting by, who had come from every village of Galilee and Judea and Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was exerted to heal them.¹⁸ And behold, men brought, on a bed, a man who was a paralytic. And they sought how they might bring him in, and lay him before him.¹⁹ And finding no way by which they could bring him in, because of the multitude, they went up on the top of the house, and, through the tiling, let him down, with his bed, into the midst before Jesus.²⁰ And when he saw their faith, he said to him: Man, your sins are forgiven you.²¹ And the scribes and Pharisees began to reason, saying: Who is this

that utters impious words? Who can forgive sins but God alone?

²²But Jesus perceived their reasonings, and answered and said to them: Why are you reasoning in your hearts? ²³Which is easier, to say, Your sins are forgiven you; or to say, Arise and walk? ²⁴But that you may know that the Son of man on the earth has power to forgive sins, (he said to the paralytic,) I say to you, Arise, and take up your bed, and go to your house. ²⁵And he immediately arose before them, took up that on which he had been lying, and went away to his own house, glorifying God. ²⁶And astonishment seized upon all, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying: We have seen strange things to-day.

²⁷And after these tilings, he went out and saw a publican named Levi, sitting at the custom-house; and he said to him: Follow me. ²⁸And leaving all, he arose and followed him. ²⁹And Levi made him a great feast at his own house; and there was a great multitude of publicans and others, who reclined at table with them. ³⁰And their scribes and the Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying: Why do you eat and drink with publicans and sinners? ³¹And Jesus answered arid said to them: They that are well have no need of a physician, but they that are sick. ³²I have not come to call righteous men, but sinners, to repentance.

³³And they said to him: Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees, but yours eat and drink? ³⁴And he said to them: Can you make the sons of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? ³⁵But the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them; then shall they fast in those days.

³⁶And he spoke also a parable to them: No one patches an old garment with a piece taken from a new garment. If so, the new tears it, and the patch from the new suits not the old. ³⁷And no one puts new wine into old bottles; if so, the new wine will burst the bottles, and it will be spilled, and the bottles will be destroyed. ³⁸But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both will be preserved. ³⁹And no one, after drinking old wine, immediately desires new; for he says: The old is better.

VI. ¹And it came to pass, on the first sabbath after the second day of the feast,

that he was going through the fields of grain; and his disciples pulled the ears and ate, rubbing them in their hands. ²And some of the Pharisees said to them: Why are you doing what it is not lawful to do on the sabbath-days? ³And Jesus answered and said to them: Have you not read even that which David did, when he was hungry himself, and those who were with him, ⁴that he entered the house of God, and took the loaves of the presence, and ate, and gave to those also who were with him, which it is not lawful, except for the priests alone, to eat? ⁵And he said to them: The Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

⁶And it came to pass, on another sabbath, that he entered the synagogue and taught; and a man was there, whose right hand was withered. ⁷And the scribes and Pharisees watched closely, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day, that they might find an accusation against him. ⁸But he knew their thoughts; and he said to the man that had the withered hand: Rise, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose, and stood. ⁹Then Jesus said to them, I will ask you a question: Which is lawful on the sabbath, to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? ¹⁰And looking round upon them all, he said to him: Stretch forth your hand. And he did so; and his hand was restored like the other. ¹¹But they were filled with madness, and began to consult with one another what they should do to Jesus.

¹²And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into the mountain to pray; and he spent the night in prayer to God. ¹³And when it was day, he called to him his disciples; and from them he chose twelve, whom he also named apostles: ¹⁴Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew, ¹⁵Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alphæus, and Simon who is called Zelotes, ¹⁶Judas the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, who was also the traitor. ¹⁷And he came down with them, and stood in a plain; and with him stood a multitude of his disciples, and a great number of people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, who had come to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases, ¹⁸and those who were oppressed by evil spirits; and they were cured. ¹⁹And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for power went forth from him, and healed them all.

²⁰ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said: Blessed are you that are poor, for yours is the kingdom of God. ²¹ Blessed are you that hunger now, for you shall be satisfied. Blessed are you that weep now, for you shall laugh. ²² Blessed are you when men shall hate you, and shall withdraw themselves from you, and reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, on account of the Son of man. ²³ Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy; for behold, your reward is great in heaven: for so did their fathers to the prophets.

²⁴ But alas for you that are rich! for you have received your consolation. ²⁵ Alas for you that are full! for you shall be hungry. Alas for you that laugh now! for you shall mourn and weep. ²⁶ Alas for you, when men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

²⁷ But I say to you that hear: Love your enemies; do good to them that hate you; ²⁸ bless them that curse you; pray for them that abuse you. ²⁹ To him that strikes you on one cheek, offer also the other; and from him that takes away your mantle, withhold not your coat. ³⁰ Give to every one that asks of you; and of him that takes away your goods, ask them not again. ³¹ And as you would that men should do to you, do you also in like manner to them. ³² And if you love them that love you, what thanks have you? for even sinners love those who love them. ³³ And if you do good to them that do good to you, what thanks have you? for even sinners do the same. ³⁴ And if you lend to them from whom you hope to receive, what thanks have you? for even sinners lend to sinners, that they may receive the same. ³⁵ But love your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing in return; and your reward shall be great, and you shall be sons of the Most High: for he is kind to the unthankful and the evil. ³⁶ Be you, therefore, merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

³⁷ Judge not, and you shall not be judged; condemn not, and you shall not be condemned. Forgive, and you shall be forgiven. ³⁸ Give, and it shall be given to you; good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your lap. For with the same measure with which you measure, it shall be measured to you in return.

³⁹ And he spoke a parable to them: Can the blind lead the blind? Will not both fall into the

pit? ⁴⁰ The disciple is not above his teacher; but every accomplished disciple shall be as his teacher.

⁴¹ And why do you look at the splinter that is in your brother's eye, but perceive not the beam that is in your own eye? ⁴² Or, how can you say to your brother: Brother, let me pull out the splinter that is in your eye, when you yourself see not the beam that is in your own eye? Hypocrite, first pull the beam out of your own eye, and then you shall see clearly to pull out the splinter that is in your brother's eye. ⁴³ For a good tree does not produce unsound fruit; nor does an unsound tree produce good fruit. ⁴⁴ For every tree is known by its own fruit. For figs are not gathered from thorns, nor are grapes gathered from brambles. ⁴⁵ The good man, out of the good treasury of his heart, brings forth that which is good; and the evil man, out of the evil treasury of his heart, brings forth that which is evil. For out of the abundance of his heart his mouth speaks.

⁴⁶ But why call me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I command? ⁴⁷ Every one that comes to me, and hears my words, and does them, I will show you to whom he is like. ⁴⁸ He is like a man that, when building a house, digged deep, and laid the foundation on the rock. And when a flood arose, the torrent dashed against that house, and it was not able to shake it, for it was founded on the rock. ⁴⁹ But he that hears, and does not, is like a man that built a house upon the earth, without a foundation, against which the torrent dashed with violence, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

VII. ¹ And when he had ended all his sayings in the hearing of the people, he went into Capernaum. ² And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear to him, was sick, and about to die. ³ But when he heard of Jesus, he sent to him elders of the Jews, and besought him to come and save his servant. ⁴ And they came to Jesus, and besought him earnestly, saying: He is worthy for whom thou shouldest do this; ⁵ for he loves our nation, and of his own accord has built us a synagogue. ⁶ And Jesus went with them.

And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, and said to him: Lord, give thyself no trouble; for I

am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof.⁷ For which reason, neither did I count myself worthy to go to thee; but command in a word, and my servant shall be healed. ⁸ For I am a man placed under authority, and have soldiers under me; and I say to this one, Go, and he goes; and to another, Come, and he comes; and to my servant, Do this, and he does it. ⁹ And when Jesus heard these things, he was filled with admiration for him; and, turning to the multitude that followed, he said: I say to you, Not even in Israel have I found so great faith. ¹⁰ And they that had been sent, returned to the house, and found the servant that had been sick restored to health.

¹¹ And it came to pass, the next day, that he was going to a city called Nain; and many of his disciples and a great multitude followed him. ¹² And when he came near the gate of the city, behold, they were carrying out a dead man, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow; and a great multitude from the city was with her. ¹³ And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said to her: Weep not. ¹⁴ And he went and touched the bier; and those who were carrying it, stood still. And he said: Young man, I say to you, Arise. ¹⁵ And he that had been dead, sat up and began to speak; and he gave him to his mother. ¹⁶ And fear seized on all; and they glorified God, saying: A great prophet has arisen among us; and, God has visited his people. ¹⁷ And this report concerning him went abroad into all Judea and all the neighboring region.

¹⁸ And the disciples of John told him of all these things. ¹⁹ And John called to him two of his disciples, and sent them to Jesus, and said: Art thou he that was to come, or must we look for another? ²⁰ And the men came to him and said: John the Immerser has sent us to thee, and says, Art thou he that was to come, or must we look for another? ²¹ And in that very hour he cured many of diseases and plagues and evil spirits, and bestowed sight on many that were blind. ²² And Jesus answered and said to them: Go and tell John what you have seen and heard; that the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, the poor have the gospel preached to them;²³ and blessed is he who shall find no cause of offense in me.

²⁴ And when the messengers of John had departed, he began to say to the multitudes concerning John: What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind? ²⁵ But what did you go out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear splendid apparel, and live in luxury, are in kings houses. ²⁶ But what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I say to you, and much more than a prophet. ²⁷ This is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee. ²⁸ For I say to you, Among those born of women, there is no prophet greater than John the Immerser. But the least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. ²⁹ And all the people, and the publicans that heard him, vindicated God, by being immersed with the immersion of John;³⁰ but the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected the counsel of God in regard to themselves, by not being immersed by him. ³¹ To what, then, shall I compare the men of this generation? and to what are they like? ³² They are like children sitting in the market-place, who call to one another, and say, We have played on the pipe for you, and you have not danced; we have sung mournful songs for you, and you have not lamented. ³³ For John the Immerser came, neither eating bread nor drinking wine, and you say, He has a demon. ³⁴ The Son of man has come, eating and drinking, and you say, Behold, a gluttonous man and a drinker of wine, a friend of publicans and sinners. ³⁵ Yet wisdom is vindicated by all her children.

³⁶ And one of the Pharisees invited him to eat with him. And he went into the house of the Pharisee, and reclined at table. ³⁷ And, behold, a woman of the city, who was a sinner, when she knew that he reclined at table in the house of the Pharisee, brought an alabaster box of ointment,³⁸ and stood behind at his feet, weeping; and she began to wash his feet with her tears; and she wiped them with the hair of her head, and kissed his feet and anointed them with the ointment. ³⁹ But when the Pharisee who had invited him, saw it, he said within himself: This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what sort of woman this is that touches him; for she is a sinner.

⁴⁰ And Jesus answered and said to him: Simon, I have something to say to you. He

replied: Teacher, say on. ⁴¹A certain creditor had two debtors; the one owed him five hundred denarii, the other, fifty. ⁴²But as they had nothing to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them, then, will love him the more? ⁴³Simon answered and said: I suppose he to whom he forgave the more. He said to him: You have decided correctly.

⁴⁴And turning toward the woman, he said to Simon: Do you see this woman? I entered your house, you gave me no water for my feet; but she has washed my feet with her tears, and wiped them with her hair. ⁴⁵You gave me no kiss; but she, from the time I came in, has not ceased to kiss my feet. ⁴⁶You did not anoint my head with oil; but she has anointed my feet with ointment. ⁴⁷Wherefore, I say to you, her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much. But he to whom little is forgiven, loves little. ⁴⁸And he said to her: Your sins are forgiven. ⁴⁹And those who reclined at table with him began to say within themselves: Who is this that also forgives sins? ⁵⁰But he said to the woman: Your faith has saved you; go in peace.

VIII. ¹And it came to pass afterward, that he went through every city and village, preaching, and making known the good news of the kingdom of God; and the twelve were with him; ²and also certain women that had been cured of evil spirits and diseases; Mary, called Magdalene, out of whom had gone seven demons, ³and Joanna, the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, who ministered to him from their means.

⁴And when a great multitude had assembled, and they were coming to him from every city, he spoke by a parable: ⁵The sower went forth to sow his seed; and as he sowed, some fell by the wayside, and it was trodden down, and the birds of the air ate it up. ⁶And some fell upon the rock; and when it had sprung up, it withered, because it had no moisture. ⁷And some fell in the midst of thorns; and the thorns grew up with it and choked it. ⁸And other seed fell into good ground, and sprung up, and produced fruit a hundred-fold. When he had said these things, he cried: He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

⁹And the disciples asked him, saying: What does this parable mean? ¹⁰He replied: To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of

God: but to others in parables; that when they see, they may not see, and when they hear, they may not understand. ¹¹But the meaning of the parable is this: The seed is the word of God; ¹²those by the wayside are they that hear; then comes the devil and takes the word from their heart, lest they should believe and be saved. ¹³Those on the rock are they that, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, who, for awhile, believe, and in time of temptation apostatize. ¹⁴That which fell among thorns are those who hear, and so conduct themselves, that they are choked by the cares and riches and pleasures of life, and bring no fruit to perfection. ¹⁵But that on the good ground are those who, in a good and honest heart, hear the word, and keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

¹⁶No one when he has lighted a lamp, covers it with a vessel, or puts it under a divan, but sets it on a lamp-stand, that they who come in may see the light. ¹⁷For there is nothing concealed, that shall not be made manifest, nor hid, that shall not be known and brought into view. ¹⁸Take heed, therefore, how you hear; for whoever has, to him shall be given; and whoever has not, even that which he seems to have shall be taken from him.

¹⁹And his mother and his brothers came to him, but were not able to get near him on account of the multitude. ²⁰And it was told him by some that said: Thy mother and thy brothers stand without, desiring to see thee. ²¹But he answered and said to them: My mother and my brothers are they that hear the word of God and do it.

²²And it came to pass, on a certain day, that he entered a ship with his disciples; and he said to them: Let us go over to the other side of the lake. And they set sail. ²³And while they were sailing, he fell asleep. And a storm of wind came down upon the lake, and they began to be filled, and were in danger. ²⁴And they came to him, and awoke him, saying: Master, master, we perish. But he arose and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water, and they ceased, and there was a calm. ²⁵And he said to them: Where is your faith? And being afraid, they wondered, and said one to another: Who, then, is this, that he commands even the wind and the water, and they obey him?

²⁶ And they sailed to the country of the Gadarenes, which is opposite to Galilee. ²⁷ And when he came out upon the land, there met him a certain man from the city, who had been possessed with demons for a long time, and who wore no clothes, and dwelt in no house, but in the tombs. ²⁸ When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and said with a loud voice: What have I to do with thee, Jesus, Son of God Most High? I beseech thee, torment me not. ²⁹ For he had O; commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For it had often seized upon him, and he had been bound with chains and fetters, and kept in confinement; and he broke the bonds, and was driven by the demon into the deserts. ³⁰ And Jesus asked him, saying: What is your name? He answered, Legion; for many demons had entered into him. ³¹ And they besought him, that he would not command them to go away into the abyss.

³² And there was in that place a herd of many swine feeding on the mountain. And they besought him to permit them to go into them. And he permitted them. ³³ And the demons came out of the man, and went into the swine; and the herd rushed down a steep place into the lake, and were drowned. ³⁴ And when those who fed them saw what was done, they fled, and told it in the city and in the country. ³⁵ And they came out to see what had been done; and they came to Jesus, and saw the man out of whom the demons had gone, clothed, and in his right mind, sitting at the feet of Jesus; and they were afraid. ³⁶ And those who had seen it, told them by what means the man who had been possessed with the demons, was saved.

³⁷ And the whole multitude of the neighboring country of the Gadarenes besought him to depart from them; for they were seized with great fear. And he entered the ship and returned. ³⁸ And the man out of whom the demons had gone, besought him that he might be with him. But Jesus sent him away, saying: ³⁹ Return to your house, and tell what things God has done for you. And he went away, proclaiming through the whole city what Jesus had done for him.

⁴⁰ And it came to pass, when Jesus returned, that the multitude received him gladly; for they were all waiting for him. ⁴¹ And, behold, there came a man, whose name was Jairus; and he was

a ruler of the synagogue; and he fell down at the feet of Jesus, and besought him to come into his house; ⁴² for he had a daughter, his only child, about twelve years of age, and she was dying. And as he went, the multitude pressed upon him.

⁴³ And a woman that had been afflicted with an issue of blood for twelve years, who had spent her whole living upon physicians, and could be cured by no one, ⁴⁴ came behind, and touched the fringe of his mantle; and her issue of blood immediately ceased. ⁴⁵ And Jesus said: Who touched me? When they all denied, Peter and those with him said: Master, the multitudes press upon thee, and throng thee, and dost thou say, Who touched me? ⁴⁶ But Jesus said: Some one touched me; for I perceive that power has gone forth from me. ⁴⁷ And the woman, seeing that she had not escaped notice, came trembling, and fell down before him, and told him, before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and that she was immediately restored to health. ⁴⁸ And he said to her: Take courage, daughter; your faith has saved you; go in peace.

⁴⁹ While he was yet speaking, there came some one from the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and said to him: Your daughter is dead; trouble not the Teacher. ⁵⁰ But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying: Fear not, only believe, and she shall be saved. ⁵¹ And when he came to the house, he permitted no one to go in but Peter and James and John, and the father and the mother of the child. ⁵² And all were weeping and lamenting her. But he said: Weep not; she is not dead, but sleeps. ⁵³ And they derided him, knowing that she was dead. ⁵⁴ But he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, and said: Child, arise. ⁵⁵ And her spirit returned, and she arose immediately. And he commanded that food should be given her. ⁵⁶ And her parents were amazed. But he charged them to tell no one what had been done.

IX. ¹ And he called his twelve disciples to him, and gave them power and authority over all demons, and to cure diseases: ² and he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. ³ And he said to them: Take nothing for your journey, neither staff, nor bag, nor bread, nor money; nor have two coats each. ⁴ And whatever house you enter, there remain, and thence depart. ⁵ And whoever will not

receive you, when you go out of that city, shake off even the dust from your feet, for a testimony against them. ⁶ And they departed, and went through every village, preaching the gospel, and performing cures everywhere.

⁷ And Herod the tetrarch heard of all things that were done by him; and he was perplexed, because it was said by some, that John had risen from the dead; ⁸ and by some, that Elijah had appeared; and by others, that a prophet of ancient times had risen again. ⁹ And Herod said: John I have beheaded; but who is this, of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

¹⁰ And the apostles returned, and told him all that they had done. And he took them, and withdrew privately to a desert place, that belonged to a city called Bethsaida. ¹¹ But the multitudes knew it, and followed him; and he received them, and spoke to them of the kingdom of God, and healed those who had need of healing.

¹² And the day began to decline; and the twelve came and said to him: Send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and the country round about, and lodge, and find food; for we are here in a desert place. ¹³ But he said to them: Do you give them food. They replied: We have nothing but five loaves and two fishes, unless we go and buy food for all these people. ¹⁴ For there were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples: Make them recline in companies of fifty. ¹⁵ And they did so, and made them all recline. ¹⁶ And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and broke, and gave them to the disciples, to set before the multitude. ¹⁷ And they all ate, and were satisfied; and there was taken up what remained to them of the broken pieces, twelve baskets.

¹⁸ And it came to pass, as he was praying in a retired place, that his disciples were with him; and he asked them, saying: Who do the multitudes say that I am? ¹⁹ They answered and said: John the Immerser; but some, Elijah; and others, that some prophet of ancient times has risen again. ²⁰ He said to them: But who do you say that I am? Peter answered and said: The Christ of God. ²¹ And he strictly charged them and commanded them to tell this to no one, ²² saying: The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders and chief priests

and scribes, and be put to death, and be raised the third day.

²³ And he said to them all: If any one determines to come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. ²⁴ For whoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whoever will lose his life for my sake, shall save it. ²⁵ For what will it profit a man, if he gain the whole world, and destroy himself, or be lost? ²⁶ For whoever will be ashamed of me and my words, of him will the Son of man be ashamed, when he comes in his own glory; and that of the Father, and of the holy angels. ²⁷ But I say to you, of a truth, there are some of these who stand here that shall not taste of death till they see the kingdom of God.

²⁸ And it came to pass, about eight days after these words, that he took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

²⁹ And as he prayed, the appearance of his face was changed, and his raiment became white and glittering. ³⁰ And, behold, two men conversed with him, who were Moses and Elijah; ³¹ they appeared in glory, and spoke of his departure, which he was about to accomplish in Jerusalem.

³² And Peter and those who were with him were heavy with sleep; but having fully awakened, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. ³³ And it came to pass, that, as they were withdrawing from him, Peter said to Jesus: Master, it is good for us to be here; let us make three tents, one for thee, one for Moses, and one for Elijah, not knowing what he said.

³⁴ While he was saying these things, there came a cloud, and it overshadowed them; and they were afraid as those men entered the cloud. ³⁵ And there came a voice from the cloud, saying: This is my beloved Son; hear him. ³⁶ And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. And they kept it secret, and told no one, in those days, any of the things which they had seen.

³⁷ And it came to pass, that, on the next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a great multitude met him. ³⁸ And, behold, a man from the multitude cried out, saying: Teacher, I beseech thee, look upon my son, for he is my only child; ³⁹ and, behold, a spirit seizes him, and he suddenly cries out, and it throws him into convulsions, and causes him to foam, and after depriving him of strength, hardly departs from him. ⁴⁰ And I entreated thy disci-

ples to cast it out; but they were not able.⁴¹ And Jesus answering, said: O unbelieving and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you and bear with you! Bring your son hither.⁴² And while he was coming, the demon cast him to the ground, and threw him into convulsions; but Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and restored the child to health, and gave him back to his father.⁴³ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God.

And while they were all wondering at every thing that Jesus did, he said to his disciples:
⁴⁴ Let these words sink into your ears; for the Son of man is about to be delivered into the hands of men.⁴⁵ But they did not understand this saying, and it was concealed from them, that they might not understand it; and they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

⁴⁶ And there arose a contention among them, which of them should be greatest.⁴⁷ But Jesus perceived the thought of their heart, and he took a little child, and made it stand by him,
⁴⁸ and said to them: Whoever will receive this little child on my account, receives me; and whoever will receive me, receives him that sent me. For he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

⁴⁹ And John answered and said: Master, we saw a certain one casting out demons in thy name; and we forbade him, because he does not follow with us.⁵⁰ And Jesus said to him: Forbid him not; for whoever is not against us, is for us.

⁵¹ And it came to pass, as the time for him to be taken up into heaven had fully come, that he set his face steadfastly to go up to Jerusalem.⁵² And he sent messengers before his face; and they went, and entered a village of the Samaritans, to prepare for him.⁵³ And they did not receive him, because his face was turned toward Jerusalem.⁵⁴ And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said: Lord, is it thy will that we command fire to come down from heaven and destroy them, even as Elijah did?⁵⁵ But he turned and rebuked them, and said: You know not of what spirit you are.⁵⁶ And they went to another village.

⁵⁷ And it came to pass, as they were going on their journey, that a certain man said to him: Lord, I will follow thee wherever thou shalt go.⁵⁸ And Jesus said to him: The foxes have dens, and the birds of the air have roosts, but the Son

of man has not where to lay his head.⁵⁹ And he said to another: Follow me. But he replied: Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father.⁶⁰ Jesus said: Let the dead bury their own dead; but do you go and publish abroad the kingdom of God.⁶¹ And another said: I will follow thee, Lord; but first permit me to take leave of those at home.⁶² Jesus said to him: No one that puts his hand to the plow, and looks back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

X. ¹ And after these things, the Lord appointed seventy others, also, and sent them, two and two, before his face, into every city and place to which he himself was about to go.² He said, therefore, to them: The harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few; pray, therefore, the Lord of the harvest that he send out laborers into his harvest.³ Go; behold, I send you as lambs in the midst of wolves.⁴ Carry no purse, nor bag, nor sandals; and salute no one on the road.⁵ Whatever house you enter, first say, Peace be to this house.⁶ And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest on him; but, if not, it shall return upon you.⁷ And in that house remain, eating and drinking what they have to give; for the laborer is worthy of his hire; go not from house to house.

⁸ And whatever city you enter, and they receive you, eat what is set before you;⁹ and heal those in it who are sick, and say to them: The kingdom of God has come near to you.¹⁰ But whatever city you enter, and they receive you not, go out into the streets of it, and say:¹¹ Even the dust of your city, which cleaves to us, we do wipe off against you; yet know this, that the kingdom of God has come near to you.¹² I say to you, It shall be more tolerable, in that day, for Sodom, than for that city.¹³ Alas for thee, Chorazin! alas for thee, Bethsaida! for, if the mighty works which have been done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.¹⁴ But for Tyre and Sidon it shall be more tolerable in the judgment, than for you.¹⁵ And thou, Capernaum, who hast been exalted to heaven, shalt be brought down to hades.¹⁶ He that hears you, hears me; and he that rejects you, rejects me; and he that rejects me, rejects him that sent me.

¹⁷ And the seventy returned with joy, and said: Lord, even the demons are subject to us

through thy name.¹⁸ And he said to them: I saw Satan, like lightning from heaven, falling.

¹⁹ Behold, I give you authority to tread on serpents and scorpions, and authority over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you.²⁰ However, rejoice not in this, that the spirits are subject to you; but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.

²¹ In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said: I thank thee, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them to babes; even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.²² All things are delivered to me by my Father; and no one knows who the Son is but the Father, and who the Father is but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.

²³ And he turned to his disciples, and said privately: Blessed are the eyes that see what you see.²⁴ For I say to you, that many prophets and kings desired to see what you see, and did not see; and to hear what you hear, and did not hear.

²⁵ And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up to tempt him, and said: Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?²⁶ He said to him: What is written in the law? How do you read?²⁷ He answered and said: You shall love the Lord your God with your whole heart, and with your whole soul, and with your whole strength, and with your whole understanding, and your neighbor as yourself.²⁸ He said to him: You have answered correctly; do this, and you shall live.

²⁹ But, wishing to justify himself, he said to Jesus: And who is my neighbor?³⁰ And Jesus answered and said: A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among robbers, who stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and went away, leaving him half dead.³¹ And by chance a certain priest went down along that road, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.³² In like manner, also, a Levite, when he came to the place, went and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.³³ But a certain Samaritan, who was on a journey, came near him; and when he saw him, he had compassion on him.³⁴ And he went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine; and he put him on his own beast, and carried him to an inn, and took care of him.³⁵ And on the morrow, when he departed, he took out two denarii, and gave them to the

innkeeper, and said to him: Take care of him; and whatever you spend more, on my return, I will repay you.

³⁶ Which, then, of these three do you think was neighbor to him that fell among the robbers?³⁷ He replied: He that showed mercy to him. Jesus said to him: Go, and do you likewise.

³⁸ And it came to pass, as they continued their journey, that he entered a certain village, and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.³⁹ And she had a sister called Mary, who also sat at the feet of Jesus, and heard his word.⁴⁰ But Martha made herself busy with much serving; and she came to him, and said: Lord, dost thou not care that my sister has left me to serve alone? Bid her, therefore, that she help me.⁴¹ But Jesus answered and said to her: Martha, Martha, you are anxious and troubled about many things:⁴² one thing is needful; and Mary has chosen the good part, which shall not be taken from her.

XI. ¹ And it came to pass, as he was in a certain place praying, that, when he ceased, one of his disciples said to him: Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.² And he said to them: When you pray, say, Our Father who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name; thy kingdom come; thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.³ Give us, day by day, the bread sufficient for our support;⁴ and forgive us our sins, for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us; and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.

⁵ And he said to them: Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go to him at midnight, and say to him, Friend, lend me three loaves;⁶ for a friend of mine, who is on a journey, has come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?⁷ And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not; the door is already closed, and my children and myself are in bed; I can not rise and give you.⁸ I say to you, Although he will not arise and give him, because he is his friend, yet, on account of his importunity, he will arise and give him as many as he needs.⁹ And I say to you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you.¹⁰ For every one that asks, receives; and he that seeks, finds; and to him that knocks, it shall be opened.

¹¹ If a son ask bread of any one of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a

fish, will he, instead of a fish, give him a serpent? ¹²Or if he ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion? ¹³If, then, you, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

¹⁴And he was casting out a demon, and it was dumb; and it came to pass, when the demon had gone out, that the dumb man spake: and the multitudes wondered. ¹⁵But some of them said: He casts out demons by Beelzebul, the prince of the demons. ¹⁶And others, that they might tempt him, asked of him a sign from heaven. ¹⁷But, knowing their purpose, he said to them: Every kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation; and a house that is divided against a house, falls. ¹⁸If Satan be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? For you say, that I cast out demons by Beelzebul. ¹⁹But if I cast out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore, they shall be your judges. ²⁰But if I cast out demons by the finger of God, then has the kingdom of God already come upon you.

²¹When the strong man armed keeps guard over his palace, his goods are in peace; ²²but when one stronger than he comes upon him and overcomes him, he takes away all his armor in which he trusted, and divides his spoils. ²³He that is not with me, is against me; and he that gathers not with me, scatters.

²⁴When the unclean spirit has gone out of a man, he goes through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he says, I will return to my house out of which I came. ²⁵And he comes and finds it swept, and set in order. ²⁶Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits, more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. ²⁷And it came to pass, that, when he said these things, a certain woman from among the multitude lifted up her voice, and said to him: Blessed is the womb that bore thee, and the breasts that thou didst suck. ²⁸And he said: Yes, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

²⁹And when the multitudes were crowded together, he began to say: This is an evil generation; it asks for a sign, and no sign shall be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet. ³⁰For as Jonah was a sign to the Ninevites, so the Son of

man shall also be to this generation. ³¹The queen of the south shall rise in the judgment with the men of this generation, and shall condemn them; for she came from the most distant parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and lo, something greater than Solomon is here. ³²The men of Nineveh shall rise in the judgment with this generation, and condemn it; for they repented in accordance with the preaching of Jonah; and lo, something greater than Jonah is here.

³³No one, when he has lighted a lamp, puts it in a secret place, nor under the measure, but upon the lamp-stand, that those who come in may see the light. ³⁴The lamp of the body is the eye; when, therefore, your eye is sound, your whole body also is light; but if it be diseased, your body also is dark. ³⁵Take heed, therefore, lest the light that is in you be darkness. ³⁶If, therefore, your whole body is light, having no part dark, the whole shall be light, as when a lamp, by its brightness, gives you light.

³⁷And as he spoke, a certain Pharisee asked him to dine with him. And he went in and reclined at table. ³⁸And when the Pharisee saw it, he wondered that he had not first immersed himself before dinner. ³⁹And the Lord said to him: Now you Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and the plate; but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness. ⁴⁰Senseless men, did not he who made the outside, make the inside also? ⁴¹But give as charity the contents of the cup, and behold, all things are clean for you.

⁴²But alas for you, Pharisees! for you tithe mint and rue and every herb, and pass by the justice and the love of God; these you ought to have done, and those you ought not to have left undone. ⁴³Alas for you, Pharisees! for you love the chief seat in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. ⁴⁴Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you are like graves that are not seen; and men that walk over them know it not.

⁴⁵And one of the lawyers answered and said to him: Teacher, in saying these things, you reproach us also. ⁴⁶He replied: Alas for you, lawyers, also! for you bind upon men burdens hard to be borne, and you yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers, ⁴⁷Alas for you! for you build the sepulchers of the

prophets, and your fathers killed them.⁴⁸ Therefore you attest and approve the deeds of your fathers; for they indeed killed them, and you build their sepulchers.⁴⁹ For this reason also the Wisdom of God said: I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they will kill, and persecute,⁵⁰ that the blood of all the prophets, which has been shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation;⁵¹ from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zachariah, who perished between the altar and the temple; yes, I say to you, It shall be required of this generation.⁵² Alas for you, lawyers! for you have taken away the key of knowledge; you did not go in yourselves, and those who were entering in, you prevented.

⁵³ And when he said these things to them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to be very angry, and to put questions to him about many things,⁵⁴ trying to entrap him, and seeking to lay hold on something from his mouth, that they might accuse him.

XII. ¹In the mean time, when myriads of the people had come together, so that they trod one upon another, he began to say to his disciples first of all: Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.² For there is nothing covered, which shall not be revealed, and hid, which shall not be made known.³ Wherefore, what you have spoken in the darkness, shall be heard in the light; and what you have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops.

⁴ But I say to you, my friends, Fear not them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do.⁵ But I will show you whom you shall fear: Fear him who, after he has killed, has authority to cast into hell; yes, I say to you, Fear him.⁶ Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? yet not one of them is forgotten before God.⁷ But even the hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not, therefore; you are of more value than many sparrows.

⁸ And I further say to you, Whoever confesses me before men, him will the Son of man also confess before the angels of God.⁹ But he that denies me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.¹⁰ And whoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but he that speaks impiously against the Holy Spirit, shall not be forgiven.

¹¹ When they bring you to the synagogues, and to rulers and authorities, be not anxious how or what you shall answer, or what you shall say;¹² for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that hour what you ought to say.

¹³ And a certain one of the multitude said to him: Teacher, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.¹⁴ But he said to him: Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?¹⁵ And he said to them: Take heed and beware of covetousness; for a man's life depends not on the abundance of his possessions.

¹⁶ And he spoke a parable to them, saying: The farm of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.¹⁷ And he reasoned within himself, saying: What shall I do? for I have no place in which I can store my fruits.¹⁸ And he said: This will I do: I will pull down my barns and I will build larger ones; and there I will store all my produce, and my good things;¹⁹ and I will say to my soul: Soul, you have many good things laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, be merry.²⁰ But God said to him: Senseless man, this night shall your soul be required of you; and who shall have the things which you have provided?²¹ So is he that lays up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

²² And he said to his disciples: For this reason I say to you, Be not anxious for your life, what you shall eat; nor for your body, what you shall put on.²³ Life is a greater gift than food, and the body, than clothing.²⁴ Consider the ravens, that they neither sow nor reap; which have neither storehouse nor granary; yet God feeds them: you are of far more value than the birds.²⁵ Which of you, by his anxiety, can add one span to his life?²⁶ If, therefore, you can not do that which is the least, why are you anxious about the rest?²⁷ Consider the lilies, how they grow. They toil not, they spin not; yet I say to you, that Solomon in all his glory was not clothed like one of these.²⁸ If, then, God so clothes the herb of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, will he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?

²⁹ And seek not what you shall eat, or what you shall drink, and be not in anxious suspense.³⁰ For all these things the nations of the world seek after; but your Father knows that you have need of these things.³¹ But seek the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be given you in

addition. ³²Fear not, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. ³³Sell what you have, and be charitable. Make for yourselves purses that do not become old, an unfailing treasure in the heavens, where no thief comes near, and no moth corrupts. ³⁴For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

³⁵Let your loins be girded, and your lamps burning; ³⁶and be like men that are waiting for their lord, when he shall return from the wedding; that, when he comes and knocks, they may open for him immediately. ³⁷Blessed are those servants whom their lord, when he comes, shall find watching. Verily I say to you, That he will gird himself and make them recline at table, and will come forth and serve them. ³⁸And if he shall come in the second watch, and if he shall come in the third watch, and find them thus, blessed are those servants. ³⁹But know this, that if the master of the house had known at what hour the thief comes, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken through. ⁴⁰Be you, therefore, ready also; for at an hour when you think not, the Son of man comes.

⁴¹Then Peter said to him: Lord, dost thou speak this parable to us, or also to all? ⁴²And the Lord said: Who, then, is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his servants, to give them their portion of food at the proper time? ⁴³Blessed is that servant whom his lord, when he comes, shall find so doing. ⁴⁴Of a truth, I say to you, that he will make him ruler over all that he has. ⁴⁵But if that servant shall say in his heart, My lord delays his coming, and shall begin to strike the men-servants and the maid-servants, and to eat and to drink, and to be drunk; ⁴⁶the lord of that servant will come in a day in which he looks not for him, and at an hour which he knows not; and will cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the unfaithful.

⁴⁷And that servant who knew his lord's will, but made no preparation, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes; ⁴⁸but he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few. To whomever much has been given, of him shall much be required; and to whom men have intrusted much, of him will they ask the more.

⁴⁹I have come to send fire on the earth; and

how greatly do I wish that it were already kindled! ⁵⁰I have an immersion with which to be immersed, and how distressed I am till it be accomplished! ⁵¹Do you think that I have come to give peace in the earth? I tell you, No; but rather dissension. ⁵²For from this time forth there shall be five in one house at variance, three with two, and two with three. ⁵³The father shall be at variance with the son, and the son with the father; the mother with the daughter, and the daughter with the mother; the mother-in-law with her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law with her mother-in-law.

⁵⁴And he said also to the multitudes: When you see the cloud rising from the west, you immediately say, There comes a shower: and so it is. ⁵⁵And when the south wind blows, you say, There will be heat: and it comes to pass. ⁵⁶Hypocrites, you know how to judge of the face of the earth, and of the heavens; but how is it that you do not judge of this time?

⁵⁷And why even of yourselves do you not judge what is right? ⁵⁸For when you are going with your opponent at law to the ruler, while you are on the way, endeavor to be delivered from him, lest he drag you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the collector, and the collector throw you into prison. ⁵⁹I say to you, You shall not come out thence, till you have paid the very last mite.

XIII. ¹And there were present, at that time, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. ²And Jesus answered and said to them: Do you think that those Galileans were greater sinners than all other Galileans, because they suffered such things? ³I tell you, No; but unless you repent, you shall all likewise perish. ⁴Or, those eighteen, on whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them; do you think that they were greater debtors than all other men that were living in Jerusalem? ⁵I tell you, No; but unless you repent, you shall all likewise perish.

⁶And he spoke this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree that was planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit on it, and found none. ⁷Then he said to his vine-dresser, Behold, for three years I have come and sought fruit on this fig-tree, and I have found none; cut it down; why does it occupy the ground unprofitably? ⁸But he answered and said to him, Sir, let it

alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and throw in manure; ⁹ and it may bear fruit; but if not, afterward you shall cut it down.

¹⁰ And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. ¹¹ And, behold, there was a woman who had had a spirit of infirmity for eighteen years; and she was bowed together, and was not able to raise herself up at all. ¹² And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said to her: Woman, you are released from your infirmity. ¹³ And he laid his hands on her; and she immediately stood erect, and glorified God.

¹⁴ But the ruler of the synagogue, indignant because Jesus had performed a cure on the sabbath-day, answered and said to the multitude: There are six days in which work ought to be done; on these, therefore, come and be cured, and not on the sabbath-day. Then the Lord answered him and said: ¹⁵ Hypocrites, does not each one of you, on the sabbath, loose his ox or his ass from the stable, and lead him away, and give him water? ¹⁶ And ought not this woman, who is a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound, lo, these eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day? ¹⁷ And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed; and all the multitude rejoiced on account of all the glorious things that were done by him.

¹⁸ Then he said: To what is the kingdom of God like; and to what shall I liken it? ¹⁹ It is like a grain of mustard, which a man took, and sowed in his garden; and it grew, and became a great tree; and the birds of the air roosted in its branches.

²⁰ And again he said: To what shall I liken the kingdom of God? ²¹ It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of flour, till the whole was leavened.

²² And he went through every city and village, teaching, and journeying to Jerusalem.

²³ And a certain man said to him: Lord, are there few that are saved? And he said to them: ²⁴ Strive to enter in through the strait gate; for many, I say to you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. ²⁵ When once the master of the house has risen, and closed the door, and you begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open for us, and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not, whence you are; ²⁶ then, you will begin to say,

We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. ²⁷ And he shall say, I tell you, I know you not, whence you are; depart from me, all you workers of iniquity. ²⁸ There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when you see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, but your selves cast out. ²⁹ And they shall come from the east and the west, and from the north and the south, and shall recline at table in the kingdom of God. ³⁰ And behold, there are last that shall be first, and there are first that shall be last.

³¹ On the same day, certain Pharisees came and said to him: Depart, and get away from this place; for Herod intends to kill you. ³² And he said to them: Go and toll that fox, Behold, I cast out demons, and perform cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I finish the work. ³³ But I must continue my journey to-day and to-morrow and the day following; for it is not possible that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. ³⁴ Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that killst the prophets and stonest them that are sent to thee: how often have I desired to gather thy children together, as a bird gathers her young under her wings, and you refused. ³⁵ Behold, your house is deserted; and I say to you, You shall not see me till the time come when you shall say, Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord.

XIV ¹ And it came to pass, that he went, on the sabbath-day, into the house of one of the chief men of the Pharisees, to eat bread; and they watched him. ² And behold, there was a man before him, who had the dropsy. ³ And Jesus answered and spoke to the lawyers and Pharisees, saying: Is it lawful to cure on the sabbath-day? ⁴ But they were silent. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go. ⁵ And he answered and said to them: Which of you, if his son or his ox should fall into a pit, would not immediately pull him out on the sabbath-day? ⁶ And they were not able to give him an answer to these things.

⁷ And he spoke a parable to those who had been invited, when he observed how they were choosing the first places at table; and he said to them: ⁸ When you are invited by any one to a wedding, do not recline in the first place, lest a more honorable man than you may have been invited by him; ⁹ and he that invited you and him, come and say to you, Give place to this

man; and then you shall begin with shame to take the last place.¹⁰ But when you are invited, go and recline in the last place, that when he that invited you shall come, he may say to you, Friend, go up higher. Then you shall have honor in the presence of those who recline with you.¹¹ For every one that exalts himself shall be humbled; and he that humbles himself shall be exalted.

¹² Then he said also to him that had invited him: When you make a dinner or a supper, call not your friends, nor your brothers, nor your relatives, nor your rich neighbors, lest they also invite you in return, and a recompense be made you.¹³ But when you make a feast, invite the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind;¹⁴ and you shall be blessed; for they have no power to repay you; but you shall be repaid at the resurrection of the just.

¹⁵ And a certain one of those who reclined at table with him, after hearing these things, said to him: Blessed is he who shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.¹⁶ And he said to him: A certain man made a great supper, and invited many.¹⁷ And he sent his servant at the hour of supper, to say to those who had been invited, Come, for all things are now ready.¹⁸ And they all, with one consent, began to make excuse. The first said to him, I have bought a farm, and I must go and see it; I pray you, have me excused.¹⁹ And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I am going to try them; I pray you, have me excused.²⁰ And another said, I have married a wife, and, for this reason, I can not come.²¹ And that servant came and told his lord these things.

Then the master of the house was angry, and said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor and the maimed, the lame and the blind.²² And the servant said, Lord, it is done as you commanded, and yet there is room.²³ And the lord said to his servant, Go out into the roads, and among the hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be full.²⁴ For I say to you, that not one of those men who have been invited, shall taste of my supper.

²⁵ And many multitudes were journeying with him; and he turned and said to them:²⁶ If any one comes to me, and hates not his father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, and his own life also, he can not be

my disciple.²⁷ And whoever does not bear his cross, and come after me, can not be my disciple.²⁸ For which of you, intending to build a tower, does not first sit down, and count the cost, whether he has the means to finish it?²⁹ Lest, when he has laid the foundation, and is not able to finish, all that see it begin to deride him,³⁰ saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

³¹ Or, what king, going to make war against another king, does not first sit down, and deliberate whether he is able, with ten thousand, to meet him that is coming; against him with twenty thousand?³² And if not, while he is yet at a distance, he sends an embassy, and asks for conditions of peace.³³ So, then, whoever of you does not forsake all that he has, can not be my disciple.³⁴ Salt is good; but if the salt become tasteless, by what means shall it become salt again?³⁵ It is fit neither for earth, nor for manure; but they cast it out. He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

XV. ¹ And all the publicans and the sinners came near to him to hear him.² And the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying: This man receives sinners, and eats with them.

³ And he spoke this parable to them, saying:⁴ What man of you that has a hundred sheep, and loses one of them, does not leave the ninety-nine in the desert, and go after that which is lost, till he find it?⁵ And when he finds it, he puts it on his shoulders, rejoicing.⁶ And when he comes home, he calls together his friends and neighbors, and says to them, Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep that was lost.⁷ I say to you, That thus there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repents, more than over ninety-nine just persons, who need no repentance.

⁸ Or, what woman that has ten drachmas, if she lose one drachma, does not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and search carefully till she find it?⁹ And when she finds it, she calls together her friends and neighbors, saying, Rejoice with me, for I have found the drachma that I lost.¹⁰ So, I say to you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repents.

¹¹ Then he said: A certain man had two sons.¹² And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of the

property that falls to me. And he divided his estate between them.¹³ And not many days after, the younger son, taking with him all that was his, left home for a distant country, and there wasted his property in riotous living.¹⁴ When he had spent all, there was a great famine throughout that country, and he began to be in want.¹⁵ And he went and attached himself to one of the citizens of that country, who sent him into his fields to feed swine.¹⁶ And he would gladly have filled his stomach with the pods which the swine did eat. And no one gave to him.

¹⁷ But when he came to himself, he said, How many of my father's hired servants have bread enough and to spare, and I am perishing with hunger!¹⁸ I will arise and go to my father, and I will say to him, Father, I have sinned against heaven and in your sight,¹⁹ and am no longer worthy to be called your son: make me as one of your hired servants.²⁰ And he arose, and came to his father. And while he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion on him, and ran and fell upon his neck, and kissed him.²¹ But his son said to him, Father, I have sinned against heaven and in your sight, and am no longer worthy to be called your son.²² But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and sandals on his feet.²³ And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us eat and be merry;²⁴ for this my son was dead, and is alive again: he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

²⁵ But his elder son was in the field; and as he came and drew near to the house, he heard music and dancing.²⁶ And he called to him one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.²⁷ And he said to him, Your brother has come, and your father has killed the fatted calf, because he has received him in health.²⁸ And he was angry, and would not go in. Then his father went out and entreated him.²⁹ But he answered and said to his father, Behold, for so many years do I serve you, and never have I transgressed your commandment, and yet you never gave me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends.³⁰ But as soon as this your son has come, Who has eaten up your estate with harlots, you have killed for him the fatted calf.³¹ And he said to him, Son, you are ever with me, and all that I have is yours.³² But it became us to make merry

and rejoice; for this your brother was dead, and is alive again: was lost, and is found.

XVI. ¹ And he said also to his disciples: There was a certain rich man, who had a steward; and he was accused to him of wasting his goods.² And he called him, and said to him: What is this that I hear of you? Give an account of your stewardship, for you can no longer act as steward.³ And the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord takes from me the stewardship. I have not strength to dig; I am ashamed to beg.⁴ I am resolved on what I shall do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, I may be received into their houses.

⁵ And he called to him every one of his lord's debtors, and said to the first, How much do you owe my lord?⁶ He replied, A hundred baths of oil. And he said to him, Take back your note, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.⁷ Then he said to another, How much do you owe? He replied, A hundred homers of wheat. And he said to him, Take back your note, and write eighty.⁸ And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he acted prudently. For the children of this age are more prudent toward their generation than the children of light.

⁹ And I say to you, Make for yourselves friends with the unrighteous riches, that when you fail, you may be received into the everlasting habitations.¹⁰ He that is faithful in the least, is faithful also in much. He that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.¹¹ If, therefore, you have not been faithful in the unrighteous riches, who will intrust you with the true?¹² And if you have not been faithful in that which is another's, who will give to you that which is your own?¹³ No servant can serve two masters; for he will either hate the one, and love the other; or he will cleave to the one, and despise the other. You can not serve God and riches.

¹⁴ And the Pharisees also, who were lovers of money, heard all these things, and they scoffed at him.¹⁵ And he said to them: You set yourselves forth as righteous before men, but God knows your hearts; for that which is highly esteemed among men, is detestable in the sight of God.¹⁶ The law and the prophets were till John. Since that time, the kingdom of God is preached, and every one enters it by force.¹⁷ But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one

point of the law to fail. ¹⁸Whoever divorces his wife and marries another, commits adultery: and whoever marries her that is divorced, commits adultery.

¹⁹There was a certain rich man, who was clothed in purple and fine linen, and feasted sumptuously every day. ²⁰And there was a certain poor man named Lazarus, who was laid at his gate, full of sores: ²¹and he would gladly have been fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table. And even the dogs came and licked his sores. ²²And it came to pass, that the poor man died, and was carried by angels to Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died, and was buried; ²³and in hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

²⁴And he called to him and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. ²⁵But Abraham said, Son, remember that, in your lifetime, you received your good things, and likewise Lazarus his evil things. But now he is comforted, and you are tormented. ²⁶And beside all this, between us and you there is a great chasm fixed, so that they that would pass hence to you, can not; nor can they that would, pass thence to us.

²⁷Then he said, I beseech you, therefore, father, that you would send him to my father's house; ²⁸for I have five brothers; that he may earnestly admonish them, lest they also come to this place of torment. ²⁹Abraham said to him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. ³⁰But he said, Not so, Father Abraham; but if one should go to them from the dead, they would repent. ³¹But he said to him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, they will not be persuaded, though one should rise from the dead.

XVII. ¹Then he said to his disciples: It is impossible that causes of offense should not come; but alas for him by whom they come! ²It would be better for him that a millstone were hung about his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, than that he should cause one of these little ones to sin. ³Take heed to yourselves; if your brother sin against you, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. ⁴And if he sin against you seven times in a day, and

seven times in a day turn again to you and say, I repent, you shall forgive him.

⁵And the apostles said to the Lord: Increase our faith. ⁶And the Lord said: If you had faith like a grain of mustard, you might say to this sycamine-tree, Be uprooted, and be planted in the sea, and it should obey you.

⁷Which of you that has a servant plowing, or feeding a flock, will say to him immediately, when he comes in from the field, Go and recline at table? ⁸But will he not say to him, Make ready my supper, and gird yourself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunk; and afterward, you shall eat and drink? ⁹Does he thank that servant, because he did what was commanded? I think not. ¹⁰So also you, when you shall have done all things that you are commanded to do, say, We are unprofitable servants; for we have done what was our duty to do.

¹¹And it came to pass, as he was journeying to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. ¹²And as he entered a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, who stood at a distance. ¹³And they lifted up their voice, saying: Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. ¹⁴And when he saw them, he said to them: Go, show yourselves to the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were made clean.

¹⁵But, one of them, seeing that he was restored to health, turned back, and, with a loud voice, glorified God. ¹⁶And he fell on his face at his feet, and gave him thanks; and he was a Samaritan. ¹⁷And Jesus answered and said: Were not the ten cleansed? but where are the nine? ¹⁸Were there none found to return and give glory to God, but this one of another race? ¹⁹And he said to him: Arise, and go; your faith has saved you.

²⁰And being asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said: The kingdom of God comes not so as to attract attention; ²¹nor shall it be said, Lo here! or Lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is among you.

²²And he said to his disciples: The days will come, when you will desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and shall not see it. ²³And they shall say to you, Lo here! or Lo there! go not after them, nor follow them. ²⁴For as the lightning that flashes out of one part under

heaven, shines to another part under heaven, so shall the Son of man be in his day. ²⁵ But first he must suffer many things, and be rejected by this generation.

²⁶ And as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. ²⁷ They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, till the day in which Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and destroyed them all. ²⁸ In like manner also, as it was in the days of Lot: they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; ²⁹ but in the day in which Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. ³⁰ Even thus shall it be in the day in which the Son of man is revealed.

³¹ In that day, let not him that is on the house-top, and whose goods are in the house, come down to take them away. Likewise, he that is in the field, let him not turn back. ³² Remember Lot's wife. ³³ Whoever will seek to save his life, shall lose it; and whoever will lose his life, shall save it. ³⁴ I say to you, on that night two men shall be in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other left. ³⁵ Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left. ³⁶ Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. ³⁷ And they answered and said to him. Where, Lord? And he said to them: Where the body is, there will the vultures be gathered.

XVIII. ¹ And he spoke a parable to them, that they ought always to pray, and not to become weary, ² saying: There was in a certain city a judge, who neither feared God nor regarded man. ³ And there was a widow in that city, and she came to him, and said: Avenge me on my opponent at law. ⁴ And for a while he refused. But afterward he said within himself: Though I fear not God, nor regard man, ⁵ yet, because this widow troubles me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

⁶ And the Lord said: Hear what the unjust judge says; ⁷ and will not God avenge his elect, who cry to him day and night, though he delay long in respect to them? ⁸ I say to you, that he will avenge them speedily. Yet, when the Son of man comes, will he find the faith on the earth?

⁹ And he spoke this parable to some, who trusted in themselves that they were righteous,

and who despised others. ¹⁰ Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. ¹¹ The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself: God, I thank thee that I am not as other men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. ¹² I fast twice in the week; I give tithes of all that I possess. ¹³ And the publican, standing afar off, would not even lift up his eyes to heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying: God, be merciful to me a sinner. ¹⁴ I say to you, this man went down to his house justified, rather than the other. For every one that exalts himself, shall be humbled; but he that humbles himself, shall be exalted.

¹⁵ And they brought to him infants also, that he might touch them. But when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them. ¹⁶ And Jesus called them to him, and said: Let the little children come to me, and hinder them not; for of such is the kingdom of God. ¹⁷ Verily I say to you, Whoever shall not receive the kingdom of God, as a little child, shall in no way enter into it.

¹⁸ And a certain ruler asked him, saying: Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? ¹⁹ And Jesus said to him: Why do you call me good? None is good but one, *that is* God. ²⁰ You know the commandments, Do not commit adultery; Do not kill; Do not steal; Do not bear false testimony; Honor your father and your mother. ²¹ He replied: All these have I kept from my youth. ²² When Jesus heard this, he said to him: One thing you yet lack; sell all that you have, and give to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. ²³ And when he heard this, he was very sad, for he was very rich.

²⁴ When Jesus saw that he was very sad, he said: How difficult it is for those who have riches to enter into the kingdom of God! ²⁵ For it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom, of God. ²⁶ And those who heard it said: Who, then, can be saved? ²⁷ He replied: Things that are impossible with men, are possible with God.

²⁸ Then Peter said: Behold, we have left all and followed thee. ²⁹ And he said to them: Verily I say to you, There is no one that has left house, or parents, or brothers, or wife, or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God, ³⁰ who shall not receive manifold more in this time, and in the age to come, eternal life.

³¹ And he took the twelve aside, and said to them: Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.: ³² For he shall be delivered to the Gentiles, and shall be derided and insulted and spit upon; ³³ and they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and on the third day he shall rise again. ³⁴ And they understood none of these things; and this saying was concealed from them; and they understood not the things that were spoken.

³⁵ And it came to pass, that, as he came near to Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the road begging. ³⁶ And when he heard the multitude passing by, he asked what this meant. ³⁷ And they told him that Jesus the Nazarene was passing by. ³⁸ And he cried out and said: Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me. ³⁹ And those who went before rebuked him, that he should be silent. But he cried so much the more: Son of David, have mercy on me.

⁴⁰ And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought to him. And when he came near, he asked him, ⁴¹ saying: What do you wish me to do for you? he replied: Lord, that I may receive my sight. ⁴² And Jesus said to him: Receive your sight; your faith has saved you. ⁴³ And he immediately received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God. And all the people, when they saw it, gave praise to God.

XIX. ¹ And he entered, and passed through Jericho. ² And, behold, there was a man called Zacchæus, who was a chief publican; and he was rich. ³ And he sought to see Jesus, who he was, and was not able on account of the multitude, because he was of small stature. ⁴ And he ran before, and climbed up a sycamore-tree, that he might see him, for he was about to pass that way. ⁵ And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him, and said to him: Zacchæus, make haste and come down, for I must spend this day at your house. ⁶ And he made haste and came down, and received him joyfully.

⁷ And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying: He has gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. ⁸ And Zacchæus stood, and said to the Lord: Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken from any one by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.

⁹ And Jesus said to him: To-day has salvation come to this house, since he also is a son of Abraham. ¹⁰ For the Son of man has come to seek and to save that which was lost.

¹¹ And as they heard these things, he also spoke a parable, because he was near Jerusalem, and they thought that the kingdom of God would immediately appear. ¹² He said, therefore: A certain nobleman went into a distant country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. ¹³ And he called his ten servants, and gave them ten pounds, and said to them, Engage in trade till I come. ¹⁴ But his citizens hated him, and sent an embassy after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, when he had returned, having received the kingdom, he commanded those servants to be called, to whom he had given the money, that he might know what each had gained by trading. ¹⁶ And the first came and said: Lord, your pound has gained ten pounds. ¹⁷ And he said to him: Well done, good servant; because you have been faithful in a very little, have authority over ten cities. ¹⁸ And the second came and said: Lord, your pound has gained five pounds. ¹⁹ And he said to him also: And be you over five cities. ²⁰ And another came and said: Lord, behold your pound, which I have kept laid away in a napkin. ²¹ For I was afraid of you, because you are a hard man; you take up that which you did not lay down, and reap that which you did not sow.

²² Then he said to him: Out of your own mouth will I judge you, you wicked servant. You knew that I was a hard man, taking up what I did not lay down, and reaping what I did not sow. ²³ And why then did you not put my money into the bank, that, when I came, I could have collected it with interest? ²⁴ And he said to those who stood by: Take from him the pound, and give it to him that has ten pounds. ²⁵ And they said to him: Lord, he has ten pounds. ²⁶ For I say to you, To every one that has, it shall be given; but from him that has not, even that which he has shall be taken away. ²⁷ But those who are my enemies, who were not willing that I should rule over them, bring hither, and slay them before me. ²⁸ And when he had said these things, he went before, going up to Jerusalem.

²⁹ And it came to pass, that, when he came near to Bethphage and Bethany, to the mount

called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,³⁰ saying: Go into the opposite village, in which, when you enter, you will find a colt tied, on which no man ever sat. Loose him, and bring him. ³¹ And if any one ask you why you loose him, thus shall you say to him: The Lord has need of him.

³² And those who were sent, went, and found as he had said to them. ³³ And as they were loosing the colt, the owners of him said to them: Why do you loose the colt? ³⁴ They replied: The Lord has need of him. ³⁵ And they brought him to Jesus, and threw their mantles upon the colt, and set Jesus on him. ³⁶ And as he was going on, they spread their mantles in the road. ³⁷ And when he was now near the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and to praise God, with a loud voice, for all the mighty deeds which they had seen, ³⁸ saying: Blessed is the king that comes in the name of the Lord; peace in heaven, and glory in the highest. ³⁹ And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude, said to him: Teacher, rebuke your disciples. ⁴⁰ And he answered, and said to them: I say to you, that if these had been silent, the stones would have cried out.

⁴¹ And when he came near, he looked upon the city, and wept over it, ⁴² saying: Hadst thou known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which were for thy peace! But now, they are hid from thy eyes. ⁴³ For the days will come upon thee, when thy enemies will throw up a mound about thee, and inclose thee around, and keep thee in on every side, ⁴⁴ and will destroy thee and thy children within thee, and will not leave in thee one stone upon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

⁴⁵ And he went into the temple, and began to drive out those who were selling in it, and those who were buying, ⁴⁶ and said to them: It is written, My house is a house of prayer; but you have made it a den of robbers.

⁴⁷ And he was teaching daily in the temple. But the chief priests, and the scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him, ⁴⁸ and found nothing that they could do, for all the people hung on his words.

XX. ¹ And it came to pass, that, on one of those days, while he was teaching the people in the temple, and preaching the

gospel, the chief priests and the scribes, with the elders, came to him, ² and spoke to him, saying: Tell us by what authority you do these things? or, who is he that gave you this authority? ³ And he answered and said to them: I also will ask you one thing, and do you answer me. ⁴ Was the immersion of John from heaven, or from men? ⁵ And they reasoned among themselves, saying: If we say, From heaven, he will reply: Why, then, did you not believe him? ⁶ But if we say, From men, all the people will stone us; for they believe that John was a prophet. ⁷ And they answered, that they knew not whence it was. ⁸ And Jesus said to them: Nor do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

⁹ And he began to speak this parable to the people: A man planted a vineyard, and let it out to vine-dressers, and was absent from home for a long time. ¹⁰ And at the proper season, he sent a servant to those vine-dressers, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard. But the vine-dressers scourged him, and sent him away empty-handed. ¹¹ And he then sent another servant. But they scourged him also, and treated him shamefully, and sent him away empty-handed. ¹² And he also sent a third; but they wounded him, and drove him out.

¹³ And the owner of the vineyard said: What shall I do? I will send my beloved son; perhaps, when they see him, they will reverence him. ¹⁴ But when the vine-dressers saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying: This is the heir; come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. ¹⁵ And they drove him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What, then, will the owner of the vineyard do to them? ¹⁶ He will come and destroy these vine-dressers, and will give his vineyard to others.

And when they heard it, they said: Be it not so! ¹⁷ And he looked on them and said: What, then, does this mean, which is written, The stone which the builders rejected has become the head of the corner? ¹⁸ Whoever shall fall on this stone, shall be dashed to pieces; but on whomever it shall fall, it will make him as chaff for the wind. ¹⁹ And the chief priests and the scribes sought to lay hands on him, the same hour; (and yet they feared the people;) for they knew that he spoke this parable against them.

²⁰ And they watched him, and sent spies, who feigned themselves to be just men, that

they might take hold of his words, in order to deliver him up to the power and authority of the governor. ²¹ And they asked him, saying: Teacher, we know that you speak and teach rightly, and do not regard the person of any, but teach the way of God in truth. ²² Is it lawful for us to give tribute to Cæsar, or not? ²³ But he perceived their cunning, and said to them: Why do you tempt me? ²⁴ Show me a denarius. Whose image and superscription has it? They answered and said: Cæsar's. ²⁵ He said to them: Give, therefore, to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are God's. ²⁶ And they were not able to take hold of his words before the people. And they were astonished at his answer, and were silent.

²⁷ Then there came to him some of the Sadducees, (these deny that there is any resurrection,) and asked him, ²⁸ saying: Teacher, Moses wrote for us, If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up children for his brother. ²⁹ There were, therefore, seven brothers; and the first took a wife, and died without children; ³⁰ and the second took his wife, and he died without children; ³¹ and the third took her; and in like manner also the seven; and they left no children, and died. ³² Last of all, the woman also died. ³³ Therefore, in the resurrection, of which of them shall she be the wife? for the seven had her as a wife.

³⁴ And Jesus answered and said to them: The children of this age marry, and are given in marriage. ³⁵ But those who shall be accounted worthy to attain that age, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage. ³⁶ For they can die no more; for they are like the angels, and are the sons of God, being the sons of the resurrection. ³⁷ But: that the dead are raised, even Moses showed at The Bush, since he calls the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. ³⁸ He is not a God of the dead, but of the living; for all live to him. ³⁹ And certain of the scribes answered and said: Teacher, thou hast answered well. ⁴⁰ And after this they durst not ask him any question at all.

⁴¹ But he said to them: How say they that the Christ is the son of David? ⁴² Even David himself says, in the book of Psalms: The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, ⁴³ till I

make thy enemies thy footstool. ⁴⁴ David, therefore, calls him Lord; and how is he his son?

⁴⁵ And while all the people were listening, he said to his disciples: ⁴⁶ Beware of the scribes, who delight to walk in robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the first seats in the synagogues, and the first places at suppers; ⁴⁷ who eat up the houses of widows, and, for a pretext, make long prayers. These shall receive the greater condemnation.

XXI. ¹ And he looked up, and saw the rich throwing their gifts into the treasury. ² And he saw also a certain poor widow throw in thither two mites. ³ And he said: Of a truth, I say to you, that this poor widow has thrown in more than they all. ⁴ For all these, from their abundance, have thrown in among the gifts of God; but she, from her poverty, has thrown in all the living that she had.

⁵ And as some were saying of the temple, that it was adorned with beautiful stones and offerings, he said: ⁶ As for these things which you see, the days will come in which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. ⁷ And they asked him, saying: Teacher, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign when these things come to pass? ⁸ He replied: Take heed that you be not deceived; for many will come in my name, saying: I am he; and, The time is near. Go not, therefore, after them. ⁹ But when you hear of wars, and tumults, be not terrified; for these things must first take place; but the end comes not immediately. ¹⁰ Then he said to them: Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; ¹¹ and there shall be great earthquakes in various places, and famines, and pestilences; and there shall be fearful sights and great signs from heaven.

¹² But before all these things, they will lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to synagogues, and into prisons, after being brought before kings and governors for my name's sake. ¹³ But this shall become to you the means of bearing testimony. ¹⁴ Therefore, determine in your hearts not to meditate beforehand what you shall answer; ¹⁵ for I will give you a mouth, and wisdom, which all your opposers shall not be able to gainsay or withstand. ¹⁶ But you will be delivered up by parents and brothers and relatives and friends; and some of you they

will put to death;¹⁷ and you will be hated by all for my name's sake.¹⁸ Yet a hair of your head shall not perish.¹⁹ By your patient endurance, preserve your lives.

²⁰ But when you shall see Jerusalem besieged by armies, then know that its desolation is near.²¹ Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains; and let those who are in the midst of it, withdraw from it. Let those who are in the count try, not come within it.²² For these are the days of vengeance, that all things that are written may be fulfilled.²³ But alas for them that are with child, and for them that give suck in those days! for there shall be great distress upon the land, and wrath upon this people.²⁴ And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and be led away captive among all nations; and Jerusalem shall be trodden down by the Gentiles, till the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

²⁵ And there shall be signs in the sun and in the moon and in the stars; and on the earth, distress of nations in perplexity; the sea and its waves roaring;²⁶ men's hearts failing on account of the fearful expectation of the things that are coming on the land; for the hosts of the heavens shall be shaken.²⁷ And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.²⁸ When these things begin to take place, look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draws near.

²⁹ And he spoke a parable to them: See the fig-tree, and all the trees;³⁰ when they now put forth leaves, you see, and know of yourselves that summer is near.³¹ So likewise, when you see these things taking place, you know that the kingdom of God is near.³² Verily I say to you, This generation shall not pass away till all be fulfilled.³³ Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

³⁴ And take heed to yourselves, lest your hearts become heavy with reveling and drunkenness and the cares of life, and that day come upon you when you look not for it.³⁵ For as a snare, it shall come on all that dwell on the face of all the land.³⁶ Watch, therefore, and pray at all times, that you may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

³⁷ And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple. But he went out and passed the nights in the mount called the mount of Olives.

³⁸ And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, in order to hear him.

XXII. ¹Now the feast of unleavened bread, which is called the passover, was at hand.² And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.³ But Satan entered into Judas surnamed Iscariot, who was of the number of the twelve.⁴ And he went away, and conferred with the chief priests and the captains how he might deliver him up to them.⁵ And they were glad, and agreed to give him money.⁶ And he consented, and sought an opportunity to deliver him up to them without tumult.

⁷ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.⁸ And he sent Peter and John, saying: Go, make ready the passover for us, that we may eat it.⁹ They said to him: Where dost thou wish that we make it ready?¹⁰ And he said to them: Behold, as you go into the city, there shall meet you a man carrying a pitcher of water; follow him into the house that he enters;¹¹ and say to the master of the house: The Teacher says to you, Where is the room in which I may eat the passover with my disciples?¹² And he will show you a large upper room furnished; there make ready.¹³ And they went, and found as he had said to them; and they made ready the passover.

¹⁴ And when the hour had come, he reclined at table, and the twelve apostles with him.¹⁵ And he said to them: I have greatly desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer.¹⁶ For I say to you, I will eat of it no more till it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God.¹⁷ And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said: Take this, and divide it among yourselves;¹⁸ for I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine till the kingdom of God has come.

¹⁹ And he took bread, and gave thanks; and he broke, and gave it to them, saying: This is my body, which is given for you: do this in remembrance of me.²⁰ In like manner also, the cup, after he had supped, saying: This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which is shed for you.

²¹ But, behold, the hand of him that delivers me up is with me on the table.²² And the Son of man goes, as it is determined; but alas for that man by whom he is delivered up.²³ And they began to inquire among themselves, which of them it could be that was about to do this thing.

²⁴ And there had been also a contention among them, which of them was thought to be the greatest. ²⁵ And he said to them: The kings of the nations have dominion over them, and those who exercise authority over them are called benefactors. ²⁶ But you shall not be so; but let the greatest among you be as the younger, and him that is chief, as he that serves. ²⁷ For which is greater, he that reclines at table, or he that serves? Is not he that reclines at table? But I am among you as one that serves. ²⁸ You are they that have continued with me in my trials; ²⁹ and I appoint to you a kingdom, as my Father has appointed to me, ³⁰ that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

³¹ And the Lord said: Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has demanded you apostles for himself, that he may sift you as wheat. ³² But I have prayed for you, Simon, that your faith fail not. And when you have turned to me again, strengthen your brethren. ³³ And he said to him: Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both to prison and to death. ³⁴ He replied: I tell you, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day before you have three times denied that you know me.

³⁵ And he said to them: When I sent you without purse and bag and sandals, did you need any thing? They replied: Nothing. ³⁶ Then he said to them: But now, he that has a purse, let him take it, and likewise a bag; and he that has no sword, let him sell his mantle and buy one. ³⁷ For I say to you, That even this which is written must be fulfilled in me: And he was numbered with transgressors. For the things concerning me have an end. ³⁸ And they said: Lord, behold, here are two swords. He said to them: It is enough.

³⁹ And after he had gone out, he went, according to custom, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples followed him. ⁴⁰ And when he came to the place, he said to them: Pray, that you enter not into temptation. ⁴¹ And he withdrew from them about a stone's throw, and kneeled down, and prayed, ⁴² saying: Father, if thou art willing that this cup should pass from me—yet, not my will, but thine be done.

⁴³ And there appeared to him an angel from heaven, to strengthen him. ⁴⁴ And he was in agony, and prayed more earnestly. And his sweat was like great drops of blood falling to the

ground. ⁴⁵ And he arose from prayer, and came to his disciples, and found them asleep for sorrow. ⁴⁶ And he said to them: Why do you sleep? Arise and pray, lest you enter into temptation.

⁴⁷ And while he was yet speaking, behold a multitude; and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and came near to Jesus to kiss him. ⁴⁸ But Jesus said to him: Judas, do you deliver up the Son of man with a kiss? ⁴⁹ When those who were about him saw what would be done, they said to him: Lord, shall we strike with the sword? ⁵⁰ And a certain one of them struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his right ear. ⁵¹ And Jesus answered and said: Let this matter proceed thus far. And he touched his ear and healed him.

⁵² And Jesus said to the chief priests, and the captains of the temple, and the elders that had come against him: Have you come out with swords and clubs, as against a robber? ⁵³ While I was daily with you in the temple, you did not lay hands on me. But this is your hour, and the authority of darkness. ⁵⁴ And they took him, and led him away, and brought him into the house of the chief priest.

But Peter followed at a distance. ⁵⁵ And when they had kindled a fire in the middle of the court, and had sat down together, Peter sat down in the midst of them. ⁵⁶ And a certain maid-servant saw him sitting by the fire; and, looking intently at him, she said: This man also was with him. ⁵⁷ But he denied, saying: Woman, I know him not. ⁵⁸ And after a little, another saw him, and said: You also are one of them. Peter replied: Man, I am not. ⁵⁹ And about one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying: Of a truth, this man also was with him; for he is a Galilean. ⁶⁰ But Peter said: Man, I know not what you say. And immediately, while he was speaking, the cock crew. ⁶¹ And the Lord turned and looked at Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, that he had said to him, Before the cock crows, you will deny me three times. ⁶² And Peter went out and wept bitterly.

⁶³ And the men that had Jesus in custody mocked him, and smote him. ⁶⁴ And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying: Give a response; who is it that struck you? ⁶⁵ And many other impious things they said to him.

⁶⁶ And when it was day, the elders of the

people, the chief priests also and scribes, met together, and led him up to the Sanhedrin, and said: ⁶⁷If you are the Christ, tell us. But he said to them: If I tell you, you will not believe; ⁶⁸and if I also ask you a question, you will not answer me, nor let me go. ⁶⁹Henceforth the Son of man shall sit on the right hand of the power of God. ⁷⁰And they all said: You are, then, the Son of God? He said to them: You say that I am. ⁷¹They replied: What further need have we of testimony? For we ourselves have heard from his own mouth.

XXIII. ¹And the whole number of them arose, and led him away to Pilate. ²And they began to accuse him, saying: We found this man turning the people away, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying that he himself is Christ, a king. ³And Pilate asked him, saying: Are you the king of the Jews? He answered and said to him: You say it. ⁴Pilate said to the chief priests and to the multitudes: I find no fault in this man. ⁵But they became the more urgent, and said: He excites the people, teaching throughout the whole of Judea, beginning from Galilee to this place. ⁶When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked if the man was a Galilean.

⁷And when he learned that he belonged to the dominion of Herod, he sent him to Herod, who was at that time in Jerusalem. ⁸When Herod saw Jesus, he rejoiced greatly; for he had, for a long time, desired to see him, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to see some sign done by him. ⁹And he questioned him concerning many things; but he made him no answer. ¹⁰And the chief priests and the scribes stood by, and vehemently accused him. ¹¹But Herod and his guards treated him with contempt; and having mocked him, and put on him a gaudy robe, he sent him back to Pilate. ¹²And on the same day, Pilate and Herod became friends to each other; for, before this, they had been at enmity the one toward the other.

¹³And Pilate called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people, ¹⁴and said to them: You have brought to me this man as one that turns the people away; and behold, I have examined him before you, and have found in this man no fault, with respect to the things of which you accuse him; ¹⁵nor indeed did Herod;

for I sent you to him, and behold, nothing worthy of death has been done by him. ¹⁶I will, therefore, chastise him, and release him.

¹⁷For it was necessary that he should release to them one at the feast. ¹⁸And the whole multitude cried out, saying: Away with this man, and release to us Barabbas. ¹⁹He, for a certain seditious movement that had been made in the city, and for murder, had been thrown into prison. ²⁰Therefore Pilate, desiring to release Jesus, again called to them. ²¹But they answered, saying: Crucify, crucify him. ²²He said to them the third time: Why, what evil has he done? I have found nothing in him worthy of death. I will, therefore, chastise him, and release him. ²³But they were urgent with loud voices, demanding that he should be crucified. And their voices, and those of the chief priests, prevailed. ²⁴And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they demanded. ²⁵And he released him that for a seditious movement, and for murder, had been thrown into prison, whom they demanded; but Jesus, he delivered up to their will.

²⁶And as they led him away, they laid hold of Simon, a certain Cyrenian, who was coming from the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might carry it after Jesus. ²⁷And there followed him a great number of the people, and of women that bewailed and lamented him. ²⁸But Jesus turned, and said to them, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. ²⁹For, behold, the days are coming in which they will say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bore, and the breasts that never gave suck. ³⁰Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. ³¹For, if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

³²And two others, who were evil-doers, were led out to be put to death with him. ³³And when they came to the place called Skull, they there crucified him and the evil-doers; one on the right, and the other on the left. ³⁴And Jesus said: Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. And dividing his clothing into parts, they cast lots. ³⁵And the people stood and looked on. And the rulers, with them scoffed at him, saying: He saved others, let him save himself if he is the Christ, the chosen of God. ³⁶The soldiers also derided him, coming to him and

offering him vinegar,³⁷ and saying: If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself.³⁸ And a superscription was also written over him in Greek and in Roman and in Hebrew letters, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

³⁹ And one of the evil-doers that were hanged reviled him, saying: If you are the Christ, save yourself and us.⁴⁰ But the other answering, rebuked him, saying: Do you not fear God, since you are in the same condemnation?⁴¹ And we justly; for we are receiving the due reward of our deeds; but this man has done nothing wrong.⁴² And he said to Jesus: Remember me, Lord, when thou comest in thy kingdom.⁴³ And Jesus said to him: Verily I say to you, to-day you shall be with me in paradise.

⁴⁴ And it was about the sixth hour, and there was darkness over the whole land till the ninth hour.⁴⁵ And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.⁴⁶ And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and said: Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit. And when he had said this, he gave up his spirit.

⁴⁷ When the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying: Truly, this was a righteous man.⁴⁸ And all the multitudes that had come together to that sight, when they saw what was done, returned, smiting their breasts.⁴⁹ And all his acquaintance, and the women that had followed him from Galilee, stood at a distance looking on these things.

⁵⁰ And, behold, there was a man named Joseph, a counselor, a good and a just man;⁵¹ (he had not given his consent to their counsel and deed;) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, and he himself also waited for the kingdom of God:⁵² this man came to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.⁵³ And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulcher that had been hewed in rock, in which no one had yet been laid.⁵⁴ And the day was the preparation, and the sabbath was beginning.

⁵⁵ And the women that had come with him from Galilee followed after and saw the sepulcher, and how his body was laid.⁵⁶ And they returned, and prepared spices and ointment; and they rested on the sabbath, according to the commandment.

XXIV. ¹ And on the first day of the week, at early dawn, they came to the sepulcher, bringing the spices which

they had prepared; and with them came certain others.² And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulcher;³ and they entered in, but found not the body of the Lord Jesus.⁴ And it came to pass, while they were much perplexed at this, behold, two men stood by them in shining raiment.⁵ And while they feared and bowed their faces to the earth, they said to them: Why seek you among the dead for him that lives?⁶ He is not here, but he has risen; remember that he spoke to you while he was yet in Galilee,⁷ saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

⁸ And they remembered his words,⁹ and returned from the sepulcher, and told all these things to the eleven and to the rest.¹⁰ It was Mary Magdalene and Joanna and Mary the mother of James, and the others with them, that told these things to the apostles.¹¹ And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.¹² But Peter arose and ran to the sepulcher, and stooping down, he saw the linen clothes lying by themselves; and he departed, wondering in himself at that which had come to pass.

¹³ And, behold, two of them were going, on the same day, to a village called Emmaus, distant from Jerusalem sixty furlongs.¹⁴ And they were talking to one another about all these things which had taken place.¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, while they conversed and reasoned together, Jesus himself drew near, and went on with them.¹⁶ But their eyes were restrained, so that they did not recognize him.¹⁷ And he said to them: What matters are these which you are discussing with one another as you walk and are sad?

¹⁸ And one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answered and said to him: Are you only a stranger in Jerusalem, and have not known the things that have taken place there in these days?¹⁹ And he said to them: What things? They said to him: The things concerning Jesus the Nazarene, who was a prophet mighty in deed and in word before God and all the people;²⁰ and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to be condemned to death, and crucified him.²¹ But we trusted that it was he that was about to redeem Israel. And besides all this, to-day is the third day since these things were

done. ²² And further, certain women of our company, who were early at the sepulcher, astonished us: ²³ for they found not his body, and came and told that they had seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive. ²⁴ And some of those who were with us went to the sepulcher, and found it even as the women had said, but him they saw not.

²⁵ And he said to them: O inconsiderate, and slow of heart to believe all things that the prophets have spoken! ²⁶ Ought not the Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? ²⁷ And beginning from Moses, and all the prophets, he explained to them, in all the Scriptures, the things concerning himself. ²⁸ And they drew near the village to which they were going; and he made as if he would go further. ²⁹ And they constrained him, saying: Remain with us, for it is near the evening, and the day has declined. And he went in to remain with them.

³⁰ And it came to pass, while he reclined at table with them, that he took bread and blessed; and he broke, and gave it to them. ³¹ And their eyes were opened, and they recognized him, and he disappeared from them. ³² And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

³³ And they arose the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven, and those who were with them, assembled, ³⁴ and saying: The Lord has risen indeed, and has appeared to Simon. ³⁵ And they told what had taken place on the way, and how he was made known to them in the breaking of bread.

³⁶ And while they were speaking of these

things, Jesus him self stood in the midst of them, and said to them: Peace be to you. ³⁷ But they were terrified and frightened, and thought that they saw a spirit. ³⁸ And he said to them: Why are you troubled, and why do doubts arise in your hearts? ³⁹ See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself; handle me and see; for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as you see me have. ⁴⁰ And when he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet. ⁴¹ And while they did not believe as yet for joy, and were astonished, he said to them: Have you any thing here to eat? ⁴² And they gave him a piece of broiled fish, and of a honeycomb. ⁴³ And he took it, and did eat before them.

⁴⁴ And he said to them: These are the words that I spoke to you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled that are written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. ⁴⁵ Then he opened their mind, that they might understand the scriptures, ⁴⁶ and he said to them: Thus it is written, and thus was it necessary that the Christ should suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day, ⁴⁷ and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. ⁴⁸ You are witnesses of these things. ⁴⁹ And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you. But do you remain in the city of Jerusalem, till you be clothed with power from on high.

⁵⁰ And he led them out as far as Bethany; and he lifted up his hands and blessed them. ⁵¹ And it came to pass, that as he blessed them, he was separated from them, and carried up into heaven. ⁵² And they worshiped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy; ⁵³ and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God.

Testimony of John.

I. ¹In the beginning was the WORD, and the WORD was with God, and the WORD was God. ²He was in the beginning with God. ³All things were made by him, and without him not one thing was made that now exists. ⁴In him was life, and the life was the light of men. ⁵And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness comprehends it not.

⁶There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. ⁷This man came as a witness, to testify of the Light, that all through him might believe. ⁸He was not the Light; but he came to testify of the Light.

⁹He was the true Light, which, coming into the world, gives light to every man. ¹⁰He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. ¹¹He came to his own country, and his own people received him not. ¹²But as many as received him, to them he gave the privilege of becoming the children of God, even to those who believe on his name; ¹³who were begotten, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. ¹⁴And the WORD became flesh, and tabernacled among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and of truth.

¹⁵John testified of him, and cried, saying: This is he of whom I said: He that comes after me, is now before me, for he existed before me. ¹⁶And from his fullness have we all received, even grace for grace; ¹⁷for the law was given through Moses, but the grace and the truth came through Jesus Christ. ¹⁸No one has seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he has revealed him.

¹⁹And this is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him: Who are you? ²⁰And he confessed, and did not deny; and he confessed: I am not the Christ. ²¹And they asked him: What then? Are you Elijah? And he said: I am not. Are you the prophet? And he answered: No. ²²They then said to him: Who are you? that we may give an answer to those who sent us; what say you of yourself? ²³He said: I am the voice of one crying

in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord; as said the prophet Isaiah.

²⁴And those who were sent were of the Pharisees; ²⁵and they asked him, and said to him: Why, then, do you immerse, if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor the prophet? ²⁶John answered them, saying: I immerse in water; but there stands one among you whom you know not. ²⁷He it is, who, though he comes after me, is now before me; the strap of whose sandal I am not worthy to loose. ²⁸These things were done in Bethany, beyond the Jordan, where John was immersing.

²⁹The next day John saw Jesus coming to him, and said: Behold the Lamb of God, that takes away the sin of the world. ³⁰This is he of whom I said, After me comes a man who is now before me, for he existed before me. ³¹And I knew him not; but that he might be made manifest to Israel, for this reason I have come immersing in water. ³²And John testified, saying: I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it remained on him. ³³And I knew him not; but he that sent me to immerse in water, said to me, On whom you shall see the Spirit descending and remaining, this is he that immerses in the Holy Spirit. ³⁴And I saw, and do testify that this is the Son of God.

³⁵Again the next day, John was standing with two of his disciples. ³⁶And looking on Jesus as he walked, he said: Behold the Lamb of God. ³⁷And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. ³⁸And Jesus turned, and saw them following, and said to them: ³⁹What do you seek? They said to him: Rabbi, (which, when translated, is called Teacher,) where abidest thou? ⁴⁰He said to them: Come and see. They went and saw where he abode; and they remained with him that day; for it was about the tenth hour. ⁴¹One of the two that heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter. ⁴²He first found his own brother Simon, and said to him: We have found the Messiah; (which, when translated, is the Christ;) ⁴³and he brought him to Jesus. Jesus looking on him, said: You are Simon, the son of Jonah; you shall be called Cephas (which, when translated, is Rock).

⁴⁴The day following, Jesus wished to go into Galilee; and he found Philip, and said to him: Follow me. ⁴⁵Now, Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. ⁴⁶Philip found Nathaniel, and said to him: We have found him of whom Moses in the law and the prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. ⁴⁷And Nathaniel said to him: Can any thing good come out of Nazareth? Philip said to him: Come and see.

⁴⁸Jesus saw Nathaniel coming to him, and said of him: Be hold, an Israelite in truth, in whom there is no guile. ⁴⁹Nathaniel said to him: How knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said to him: Before Philip called you, while you were under the fig-tree, I saw you. ⁵⁰Nathaniel answered and said to him: Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. ⁵¹Jesus answered and said to him: Do you believe, because I said to you, I saw you under the fig-tree? You shall see greater things than these. And he said to him: Verily, verily I say to you, From this time you shall see heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

III. ¹And on the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there. ²And both Jesus and his disciples were invited to the marriage. ³And the wine having failed, the mother of Jesus said to him: They have no wine. ⁴Jesus said to her: Woman, what have I to do with you? my hour has not yet come. ⁵His mother said to the servants: Whatever he says to you, do. ⁶Now, according to the Jewish custom of purifying, six water-pots of stone had been set there, containing each two or three baths.

⁷Jesus said to them: Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them to the brim. ⁸And he said to them: Draw out now, and carry it to the governor of the feast. And they carried it. ⁹When the governor of the feast had tasted the water that had been made wine, (and he knew not whence it was, but the servants that had drawn the water knew,) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, and said to him: ¹⁰Every man sets out the good wine first, and when they have drunk freely, then that which is inferior; but you have kept the good wine till now. ¹¹This beginning of signs Jesus made in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

¹²After this he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother and his brothers and his disciples. And they continued there not many days.

¹³And the passover of the Jews was near, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. ¹⁴And he found in the temple those who were selling oxen and sheep and doves, and the money-changers sitting. ¹⁵And when he had made a whip of cords, he drove them all out of the temple, the sheep also, and the oxen, and he poured out the money of the money-changers, and overthrew their tables; ¹⁶and said to those who sold doves: Take these things hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. ¹⁷And his disciples remembered that it was written, Zeal for thy house has eaten me up.

¹⁸Then answered the Jews and said to him: What sign do you show us, seeing that you do these things? ¹⁹Jesus answered and said to them: Destroy this temple, and I will raise it up in three days. ²⁰Then the Jews said to him: Forty and six years was this temple in building, and will you rebuild it in three days? ²¹But he spoke of the temple of his body. ²²When, therefore, he was raised from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this. And they believed the scripture, and the word that Jesus had spoken.

²³And while he was in Jerusalem, during the feast of passover, many believed on his name, because they saw the signs that he did. ²⁴But Jesus did not trust himself to them, because he knew all men, ²⁵and had no need that any one should testify of man, for he himself knew what was in man.

III. ¹There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews. ²This man came to Jesus by night, and said to him: Rabbi, we know that thou hast come as a teacher from God; for no man can do these signs which thou doest, unless God be with him.

³Jesus answered and said to him: Verily, verily I say to you, unless a man be born again, he can not see the kingdom of God.

⁴Nicodemus said to him: How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter his mother's womb the second time, and be born?

⁵Jesus answered: Verily, verily I say to you, unless a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he can not enter into the kingdom of God.

⁶That which is begotten of the flesh, is flesh; and that which is begotten of the Spirit, is spirit.

⁷ Wonder not that I said to you, you must all be born again, ⁸The Spirit breathes where he pleases, and you hear his voice, but you know not whence he comes, and whither he goes; so is every one that is begotten of the Spirit.

⁹ Nicodemus answered and said to him: How can these things be? ¹⁰ Jesus answered and said to him: Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not understand these things? ¹¹ Verily, verily, I say to you, we speak that which we know, and testify to that which we have seen; and you receive not our testimony. ¹² If I have told you of earthly things, and you believe not, how will you believe, if I tell you of heavenly things? ¹³ And no man has ascended into heaven, but he who came down from heaven, the Son of man, who is in heaven. ¹⁴ And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so must the Son of man be lifted up; ¹⁵ that whoever believes on him may not perish, but have eternal life. ¹⁶ For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whoever believes on him should not perish, but have eternal life. ¹⁷ For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world, through him, might be saved.

¹⁸ He that believes on him is not condemned; but he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God. ¹⁹ And this is the condemnation, that light has come into the world, and men have loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. ²⁰ For every one that does evil, hates the light, and comes not to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed.

²¹ But he that does the truth, comes to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest that they are done in God.

²² After these things, Jesus and his disciples came into the land of Judea, and he remained there with them, and immersed. ²³ And John also was immersing in Ænon, near Salim, because there was much water there. And they came and were immersed; ²⁴ for John had not yet been thrown into prison.

²⁵ There arose, therefore, a dispute between some of John's disciples and a Jew, about purification. ²⁶ And they came to John, and said to him: Rabbi, he who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you bore testimony, behold, he immerses, and all are going to him.

²⁷ John answered and said: A man can receive nothing unless it be given to him from heaven. ²⁸ You yourselves will testify for me, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. ²⁹ He that has the bride, is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, rejoices greatly on account of the voice of the bridegroom. This, my joy, is therefore complete. ³⁰ He must increase, but I must decrease.

³¹ He that comes from above, is over all. He that is from the earth, is from the earth, and speaks from the earth. He that comes from heaven, is over all; ³² and what he has seen and heard, this he testifies; and no one receives his testimony. ³³ He that has received his testimony has solemnly declared that God is true. ³⁴ For he whom God has sent, speaks the words of God; for God gives not the Spirit by measure to him. ³⁵ The Father loves the Son, and has given all things into his hand. ³⁶ He that believes on the Son has eternal life. But he that believes not the Son, shall not see life, but the wrath of God remains on him.

IV ¹ When, therefore, the Lord knew that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was making and immersing more disciples than John, ² (though not Jesus himself, but his disciples immersed,) ³ he left Judea, and went again into Galilee. ⁴ And it was necessary that he should go through Samaria. ⁵ He came, therefore, to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, near the field that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. ⁶ And Jacob's well was there. Jesus, therefore, wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well. It was about the sixth hour.

⁷ There came a woman of Samaria to draw water. And Jesus said to her: Give me to drink. ⁸ For his disciples had gone into the city to buy food. ⁹ Then the woman of Samaria said to him: How is it that you, who are a Jew, ask drink of me, who am a woman of Samaria? (For the Jews have no social intercourse with the Samaritans.) ¹⁰ Jesus answered and said to her: If you had known the gift of God, and who it is that said to you, Give me to drink, you would have asked of him, and he would have given you living water. ¹¹ The woman said to him: Sir, you have no vessel with which you can draw, and the well is deep; whence have you that living water? ¹² Are you greater than our father Jacob, who gave us

the well, and drank from it himself, and his sons, and his cattle?

¹³Jesus answered and said to her: Whoever drinks of this water, will thirst again; ¹⁴but whoever drinks of the water that I will give him, shall never thirst. But the water that I will give him, shall be in him a fountain of water springing up in order to eternal life.

¹⁵The woman said to him: Sir, give me this water, that I may not thirst, nor come hither to draw.

¹⁶Jesus said to her: Go, call your husband, and come hither. ¹⁷The woman answered and said: I have no husband.

Jesus said to her: You have well said. I have no husband; ¹⁸for you have had five husbands, and he whom you now have is not your husband. In this you have spoken truly. ¹⁹The woman said to him: Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. ²⁰Our fathers worshiped in this mountain, and you Jews say that in Jerusalem is the place where we ought to worship.

²¹Jesus said to her: Woman, believe me, the hour is coming, when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, will you worship the Father. ²²You worship you know not what; we know what we worship; for salvation is of the Jews. ²³But the hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and in truth; for the Father seeks such to worship him. ²⁴God is spirit; and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth. ²⁵The woman said to him: I know that Messiah (who is called Christ) is coming; when he comes, he will tell us all things.

²⁶Jesus said to her: I who speak to you am he. ²⁷And upon this his disciples came, and were astonished that he was talking with the woman. Yet no one said: What seekest thou? or, why talkest thou with her?

²⁸Then the woman left her water-pot, and went into the city, and said to the men: ²⁹Come, see a man who has told me all things that I ever did. Is not this the Christ? ³⁰Then they went out of the city and came to him.

³¹In the mean time, the disciples besought him, saying: Rabbi, eat. ³²But he said to them: I have food to eat of which you know not. ³³Then the disciples said one to another: Has any one brought him food? ³⁴Jesus said to them: My food is to do the will of him that sent me, and to

finish his work. ³⁵Do you not say, There are yet four months, and harvest comes? Behold, I say to you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields, for they are already white for the harvest. ³⁶And he that reaps receives wages, and gathers fruit for life eternal; that he that sows, and he that reaps, may rejoice together. ³⁷For in this is the saying true, One sows and another reaps. ³⁸I have sent you to reap that on which you bestowed no labor. Others have labored, and you have entered into their labors.

³⁹And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him, because of the word of the woman who testified, He told me all things that I ever did. ⁴⁰When, therefore, the Samaritans came to him, they besought him to abide with them. And he abode there two days. ⁴¹And many more believed because of his own word; ⁴²and they said to the woman: We no longer believe because of what you said, for we ourselves have heard, and we know that this is in truth the Savior of the world, the Christ.

⁴³And after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee; ⁴⁴for Jesus himself testified that a prophet has no honor in his own country. ⁴⁵Therefore, when he came into Galilee, the Galileans received him, because they had seen all things that he had done in Jerusalem during the feast; for they themselves had gone to the feast.

⁴⁶Then Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he had made the water wine. And there was a certain courtier, whose son was sick in Capernaum. ⁴⁷When he heard that Jesus had come from Judea into Galilee, he went to him, and besought him that he would come down, and restore his son to health, for he was about to die. ⁴⁸Then said Jesus to him: Unless you see signs and wonders, you will not believe. ⁴⁹The courtier said to him: Sir, come down before my child die. ⁵⁰Jesus said to him: Go, your child lives. And the man believed the word that Jesus spoke, and departed. ⁵¹And as he was going down, his servants met him, and said: Your son lives. ⁵²Then he inquired of them the hour in which he was restored to health. And they said to him: Yesterday, at the seventh hour, the fever left him. ⁵³Then his father knew that it was in the same hour in which Jesus said to him, Your son lives. And he himself, and all his house, believed. ⁵⁴This is the second sign which Jesus did, when he came out of Judea into Galilee.

V. ¹After this was the feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. ²Now there is in Jerusalem, near the sheep-gate, a pool, called, in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, with five porches. ³In these lay a great multitude of sick persons, blind, lame, withered, who waited for the moving of the water. ⁴For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and stirred the water. Then he who entered first after the motion of the water, was cured of whatever disease he had.

⁵ And a certain man was there, who had been sick thirty-eight years. ⁶When Jesus saw him lying, and knew that he had been already a long time in that condition, he said to him: Do you wish to be restored to health? ⁷The sick man answered him: Sir, I have no man to put me into the pool when the water is stirred; but while I am coming, another goes down before me. ⁸Jesus said to him: Arise, take up your bed and walk. ⁹And the man was immediately restored to health; and he took up his bed and walked. And that day was the sabbath.

¹⁰ The Jews, therefore, said to him that was cured: It is the sabbath; it is not lawful for you to carry your bed. ¹¹He answered them: He that restored me to health said to me, Take up your bed and walk. ¹²Then they asked him: Who is he that said to you, Take up your bed and walk?

¹³ But he that had been restored to health knew not who he was; for Jesus had withdrawn himself, because a multitude was in the place.

¹⁴ After this Jesus found him in the temple, and said to him: Behold, you have been restored to health; sin no more, lest some worse thing befall you. ¹⁵The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus that had restored him to health.

¹⁶ And for this reason did the Jews persecute Jesus, and seek to kill him, because he had done these things on the sabbath.

¹⁷ But Jesus answered them: My Father works till now, and I also work. ¹⁸For this reason, therefore, the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he had not only broken the sabbath, but also said that God was his own father, making himself equal with God.

¹⁹ Then Jesus answered and said to them: Verily, verily I say to you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he sees the Father do; for whatever things he does, these also the Son does in like manner. ²⁰For the Father loves the

Son, and shows him all things that he himself does; and he will show him greater works than these, that you may be astonished. ²¹For as the Father raises the dead, and makes them alive, so also the Son makes alive whom he will. ²²For the Father judges no one, but has given all judicial authority to the Son; ²³that all may honor the Son, as they honor the Father. He that honors not the Son, honors not the Father who sent him.

²⁴Verily, verily I say to you, He that hears my word, and believes on him that sent me, has eternal life, and comes not into condemnation, but has passed from death into life. ²⁵Verily, verily I say to you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear, shall live. ²⁶For as the Father has life in himself, so has he given to the Son also to have life in himself; ²⁷and he has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. ²⁸Be not astonished at this; for the hour is coming in which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, ²⁹and shall come forth; those who have done good, to the resurrection of life, and those who have done evil, to the resurrection of condemnation. ³⁰I can of myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge; and my judgment is just, because I seek not my own will, but the will of him that sent me.

³¹ If I testify concerning myself, my testimony is not worthy of credit. ³²There is another that testifies concerning me, and I know that the testimony which he testifies concerning me is worthy of credit. ³³You sent to John, and he bore testimony to the truth. ³⁴But I receive not testimony from man; yet I say these things that you may be saved. ³⁵He was the burning and shining lamp; and you were willing, for a time, to rejoice in his light. ³⁶But I have testimony greater than that of John; for the works which the Father has given me to finish, these very works which I do, testify concerning me, that the Father has sent me. ³⁷And the Father, who sent me, has testified concerning me. You have, neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape. ³⁸And his word you have not remaining in you; for whom he has sent, him you believe not.

³⁹ You search the scriptures, because in them you think you have eternal life; and these are they which testify concerning me: ⁴⁰and yet you

refuse to come to me, that you may have life. ⁴¹I receive not honor from men. ⁴²But I know you, that you have not the love of God in you. ⁴³I have come in my Father's name, and you receive me not; if another should come in his own name, him you would receive. ⁴⁴How can you believe who receive honor one from another, and seek not the honor that comes from God alone? ⁴⁵Think not that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, Moses, in whom you trust. ⁴⁶For if you had believed Moses, you would have believed me; for he wrote of me. ⁴⁷But if you believe not his writings, how shall you believe my words?

VI. ¹After these things Jesus went away to the other side of the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias. ²And a great multitude followed him, because they had seen the signs which he did in the case of the sick. ³And Jesus went up into the mountain, and sat there with his disciples. ⁴And the passover, the feast of the Jews, was near. ⁵Then Jesus, lifting up his eyes, and seeing that a great multitude was coming to him, said to Philip: Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat? ⁶But this he said to try him; for he himself knew what he was about to do.

⁷Philip answered him: Two hundred denarii worth of bread is not enough for them, that each may take a little. ⁸One of his disciples, Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, said to him: ⁹There is a lad here that has five barley loaves, and two little fishes; but what are these among so many? ¹⁰But Jesus said: Make the men recline. Now, there was much grass in the place. So the men reclined, in number about five thousand. ¹¹And Jesus took the loaves, and after giving thanks, distributed them to the disciples, and the disciples to those who had reclined; and in like manner of the fishes, as much as they wished. ¹²And when they were satisfied, he said to his disciples: Gather up the broken pieces which remain, that nothing be lost. ¹³Then they gathered them up, and filled twelve baskets with the broken pieces of the five barley loaves, which remained after they had eaten.

¹⁴Then the men, after having seen the sign which Jesus did, said: This is, in truth, the prophet that was to come into the world. ¹⁵Therefore, Jesus perceiving that they were about to come and take him by force, to make

him king, withdrew into the mountain himself alone.

¹⁶And when evening had come, his disciples went down to the sea, ¹⁷and, having entered the ship, went across the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus had not come to them. ¹⁸And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that was blowing. ¹⁹Then, having rowed about twenty-five or thirty furlongs, they saw Jesus walking on the sea, and coming near the ship; and they were afraid. ²⁰But he said to them: It is I; be not afraid. ²¹Then they willingly received him into the ship; and immediately the ship was at the land to which they were going.

²²The next day, the multitude that stood on the other side of the sea, seeing that no other boat had been there but the one which his disciples had entered, and that Jesus had not entered the boat with his disciples, but that his disciples had gone away alone; ²³(but there came other boats from Tiberias near the place where they had eaten bread, after the Lord had given thanks;) ²⁴when, therefore, the multitude saw that neither Jesus nor his disciples were there, they also entered the ships, and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus.

²⁵And finding him on the opposite side of the sea, they said to him: Rabbi, when didst thou come hither? ²⁶Jesus answered them, and said: Verily, verily I say to you, You seek me, not because you saw the signs, but because you ate of the loaves, and were satisfied. ²⁷Labor not for the food that perishes, but for the food that endures to life eternal, which the Son of man will give you; for him has God the Father attested. ²⁸Then they said to him: What shall we do, that we may work the works of God? ²⁹Jesus answered and said to them: This is the work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent. ³⁰Therefore, they said to him: What sign do you show, then, that we may see, and believe you? What work do you perform? ³¹Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

³²Then Jesus said to them: Verily, verily I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven; but my Father gives you the true bread from heaven. ³³For the bread of God is he who comes down from heaven, and gives life for the world. ³⁴Then they said to him: Lord, evermore give us this bread. ³⁵Jesus said to them: I am the

bread of life; he that comes to me shall never hunger; he that believes on me shall never thirst. ³⁶But I said to you, that you have seen me, and yet you do not believe. ³⁷All that the Father gives me, will come to me; and him that comes to me, I will by no means cast out. ³⁸For I came down from heaven, not to do my own will, but the will of him that sent me. ³⁹And this is the will of him who sent me, that of all that he gives me, I shall lose nothing, but shall raise it up at the last day. ⁴⁰For this is the will of him that sent me, that every one who sees the Son, and believes on him, may have eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

⁴¹Then the Jews murmured at him, because he said, I am like bread that came down from heaven. ⁴²And they said: Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How, then, does he say, I came down from heaven? ⁴³Jesus answered and said to them: Murmur not among yourselves; ⁴⁴no man can come to me, unless the Father, who sent me, draw him; and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁴⁵It is written in the prophets, And they shall all be taught of God. Every one that hears from the Father, and learns, comes to me. ⁴⁶Not that any one has seen the Father, but he who is from God; he has seen the Father.

⁴⁷Verily, verily I say to you, He that believes on me has eternal life. ⁴⁸I am the bread of life. ⁴⁹Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and died. ⁵⁰This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that any one may eat of it, and not die. ⁵¹I am the bread that lives, which came down from heaven. If any one eat of this bread, he shall live forever. And the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

⁵²The Jews, therefore, contended among themselves, saying: How can this man give us his flesh to eat? ⁵³Then Jesus said to them: Verily, verily I say to you, Unless you eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, you have no life in you. ⁵⁴He that eats my flesh and drinks my blood, has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day; ⁵⁵for my flesh is food indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. ⁵⁶He that eats my flesh and drinks my blood, dwells in me, and I in him. ⁵⁷As the living Father has sent me, and I live by the Father, so he that eats me, even he shall live by me. ⁵⁸This is the bread that came

down from heaven; not as your fathers ate the manna, and died; he that eats this bread shall live forever.

⁵⁹These things he spoke in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum. ⁶⁰Therefore, many of his disciples, when they heard him, said: This is a hard saying; who can hear it? ⁶¹But Jesus, knowing in himself that his disciples murmured at it, said to them: Does this offend you? ⁶²Then, what if you should see the Son of man go up where he was before? ⁶³It is the spirit that makes alive; the flesh profits nothing; the words that I speak to you are spirit and life. ⁶⁴But there are some among you who believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who he was that would betray him. ⁶⁵And he said: For this reason I said to you: No one can come to me unless it be given him from my Father.

⁶⁶After this, many of his disciples went back, and walked with him no more. ⁶⁷Then Jesus said to the twelve: Will you also go away? ⁶⁸Simon Peter answered him: Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life; ⁶⁹and we believe, and know that thou art the Christ, the Son of God. ⁷⁰Jesus answered them: Have I not chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? ⁷¹He spoke of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; for he was about to deliver him up, being one of the twelve.

VII. ¹And after this Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill him.

²Now the feast of tabernacles, a feast of the Jews, was near. ³Then his brothers said to him: Depart hence, and go into Judea, that your disciples may see your works which you do; ⁴for no one does any thing in secret, while he himself seeks to be before the public. If you do these things, show yourself to the world. ⁵For neither did his brothers believe on him. ⁶Then Jesus said to them: My time has not yet come; but your time is always ready. ⁷The world can not hate you; but me it hates, because I testify of it, that its works are evil. ⁸Do you go up to this feast. I go not up now to this feast, because my time has not yet fully come. ⁹These things said he to them, and remained in Galilee. ¹⁰But when his brothers had gone up, then he also went up to the feast, not openly, but, as it were, in secret.

¹¹ Then the Jews sought for him at the feast, and said: Where is he? ¹² And there was much murmuring among the multitudes concerning him. Some said: He is a good man. Others said: No; but he deceives the multitude. ¹³ However, no one spoke openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

¹⁴ Now in the middle of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. ¹⁵ And the Jews were astonished, and said: How has this man a knowledge of letters, having never been taught? ¹⁶ Then Jesus answered and said: My teaching is not mine, but his who sent me. ¹⁷ If any one will do his will, he shall know with respect to the teaching, whether it is of God, or I speak of myself. ¹⁸ He who speaks of himself, seeks his own glory; he who seeks the glory of him that sent him, he is true, and there is no unrighteousness in him. ¹⁹ Did not Moses give you the law? and not one of you keeps the law. Why do you seek to kill me? ²⁰ The multitude answered and said: You have a demon: who seeks to kill you?

²¹ Jesus answered and said to them: I have done one work, and you are all astonished on account of this. ²² Moses gave you circumcision, (not that it is of Moses, but of the fathers,) and you circumcise a man on the sabbath-day. ²³ If a man receives circumcision on the sabbath-day, that the law of Moses may not be broken, are you angry with me, because I have restored the entire man to health on the sabbath-day? ²⁴ Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

²⁵ Then said some of the men of Jerusalem: Is not this he whom they seek to kill? ²⁶ and, lo, he is speaking boldly, and they say nothing to him. Have the rulers really learned that this is the Christ? ²⁷ But we know this man, whence he is. But when the Christ comes, no one knows whence he is.

²⁸ Then Jesus cried out in the temple, as he was teaching, and said: You both know me, and you know whence I am; and I have not come of myself; but he who sent me is true, whom you know not. ²⁹ But I know him, because I am from him, and he has sent me. ³⁰ Then they sought to take him; yet no one laid his hand on him, because his hour had not yet come. ³¹ And many of the multitude believed on him, and said: When the Christ comes, will he do more signs than these which this man has done?

³² The Pharisees heard the multitude mur-

muring such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and chief priests sent attendants to take him. ³³ Then Jesus said to them: Yet a little while I am with you, and I go away to him that sent me. ³⁴ You will seek me, and shall not find me; and where I am, you can not come. ³⁵ Then the Jews said among themselves: Whither is this man about to go, that we shall not find him? Is he about to go to those who are dispersed among the Greeks, and to teach the Greeks? ³⁶ What means this saying which he uttered, You will seek me, and will not find me; and, Where I am you can not come?

³⁷ On the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying: If any one thirst, let him come to me and drink. ³⁸ He that believes on me, as the scripture has said, from his inner self shall flow rivers of living water. ³⁹ But this he spoke of the Spirit, which those who believe on him were about to receive; for the Holy Spirit had not yet been given, because Jesus had not yet been glorified. ⁴⁰ Therefore, many of the multitude, when they had heard this word, said: This is, in truth, the prophet. ⁴¹ Others said: This is the Christ. But others said: Does the Christ come out of Galilee? ⁴² Has not the scripture said that the Christ comes from the posterity of David, and from Bethlehem, the town where David was? ⁴³ So there was a division among the multitude because of him. ⁴⁴ And some of them desired to take him; but no one laid hands on him.

⁴⁵ Then came the attendants to the chief priests and the Pharisees; and they said to them: Why have you not brought him? ⁴⁶ The attendants answered: Never did man speak like this man. ⁴⁷ Then the Pharisees answered them: Are you also deceived? ⁴⁸ Has any one of the rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him? ⁴⁹ But this multitude that know not the law are cursed. ⁵⁰ Nicodemus said to them (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them): ⁵¹ Does our law condemn a man unless it first hear from him, and know what he does? ⁵² They answered and said to him: Are you also from Galilee? Search, and see that out of Galilee arises no prophet.

⁵³ And every one departed to his own house.
VIII. ¹ But Jesus went to the mount of Olives. ² And in the morning he again entered the temple, and all the people

came to him, and he sat down and taught them. ³And the scribes and Pharisees brought to him a woman who had been detected in adultery; and they made her stand in the midst, ⁴and said to him: Teacher, this woman was detected in adultery; in the very act. ⁵Now Moses, in his law, commanded us, that such should be stoned; but what say you? ⁶This they said to tempt him, that they might bring an accusation against him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. ⁷But as they continued to ask him, he stood up, and said to them: Let him among you who is without sin, first throw a stone at her. ⁸And again he stooped down and wrote on the ground. ⁹But having heard him, and being convicted by their conscience, they went out, one by one, beginning from the oldest, even to the last. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. ¹⁰And when Jesus stood up, and saw no one but the woman, he said to her: Woman, where are those who accused you? Has no one condemned you? ¹¹She said: No one, sir. Jesus said to her: Neither do I condemn you; go, and sin no more.

¹²Then Jesus spoke to them again, saying: I am the light of the world; he that follows me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. ¹³Then the Pharisees said to him: You testify concerning yourself; your testimony is not worthy of credit. ¹⁴Jesus answered and said to them: Though I testify concerning myself, my testimony is worthy of credit; for I know whence I came, and whither I go. But you know not whence I came, and whither I go. ¹⁵You judge according to the flesh; I judge no man. ¹⁶And yet if I judge, my judgment is true, because I am not alone, but I and the Father who sent me. ¹⁷It is also written in your law, The testimony of two is worthy of credit. ¹⁸I am one that testify concerning myself, and the Father who sent me, testifies of me.

¹⁹Then they said to him: Where is your Father? Jesus answered: You know neither me, nor my Father. If you had known me, you would have known my Father also. ²⁰These words Jesus spoke in the treasury, as he taught in the temple; and no one laid hands on him, because his hour had not yet come.

²¹Then spoke Jesus to them again; I go away, and you will seek me, and in your sin you shall die; whither I go, you can not come.

²²Then said the Jews: Will he kill himself, because he says, Whither I go, you can not come? ²³And he said to them: You are from beneath, I am from above; you are of this world, I am not of this world. ²⁴Therefore said I to you, that you shall die in your sins. For if you believe not that I am, He, you shall die in your sins. ²⁵Then they said to him: Who are you? And Jesus said to them: The same that I said to you at the beginning. ²⁶I have many things to say, and to judge with respect to you; but he that sent me is true; and what things I have heard from him, these I speak to the world. ²⁷They knew not that he was speaking to them of the Father.

²⁸Then said Jesus to them: When you have lifted up the Son of man, then you will know that I am He, and that I do nothing of myself, but as the Father has taught me I speak these things. ²⁹And he that sent me is with me. The Father has not left me alone, because I always do what is pleasing to him.

³⁰While he was speaking these words, many believed on him. ³¹Then said Jesus to those Jews that believed on him: If you continue in my word, you are my disciples indeed, ³²and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. ³³They answered him: We are the posterity of Abraham, and have never been in bondage to any one. How say you, You shall be made free?

³⁴Jesus answered them: Verily, verily I say to you, whoever works sin is the servant of sin. ³⁵The servant continues not in the house forever; but the Son continues forever. ³⁶Therefore, if the Son make you free, you shall be free indeed. ³⁷I know that you are the posterity of Abraham; yet you seek to kill me, because my word has no place in you. ³⁸I speak what I have seen with my Father, and you do what you have seen with your father. ³⁹They answered and said to him: Abraham is our father.

Jesus said to them: If you were the children of Abraham, you would do the works of Abraham. ⁴⁰But now you seek to kill me, a man that has spoken to you the truth, which I have heard from God; this Abraham did not. ⁴¹You do the works of your father. They said to him: We were not born of lewdness; we have one father, God.

⁴²Jesus said to them: If God were your father, you would love me; for I came forth from God and have come hither; nor, indeed, did I

come of myself, but he sent me. ⁴³Why do you not know what I say? Because you can not understand my words. ⁴⁴You are of your father, the devil; and the desires of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and stood not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks that which is false, he speaks from what is his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it. ⁴⁵But because I speak the truth, you believe me not. ⁴⁶Which of you convicts me of sin? If I speak the truth, why do you not believe me? ⁴⁷He that is of God, hears God's words. For this reason you do not hear them, because you are not of God.

⁴⁸The Jews answered, and said to him: Do we not well say that you are a Samaritan, and have a demon? ⁴⁹Jesus answered: I have not a demon; but I honor my Father, and you dis-honor me. ⁵⁰I seek not my own glory; there is one that seeks and judges. ⁵¹Verily, verily I say to you, if any one will keep my word, he shall never see death.

⁵²Then said the Jews to him: Now we know that you have a demon. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and you say, If a man keep my word, he shall never taste of death. ⁵³Are you greater than our father Abraham, who is dead? And the prophets are dead; whom do you make yourself?

⁵⁴Jesus answered: If I honor myself, my honor is nothing; it is my Father that honors me, of whom you say, that he is your God. ⁵⁵And yet you have not known him. But I know him; and if I should say that I do not know him, I should be like yourselves, a liar. But I know him, and I keep his word. ⁵⁶Abraham, your father, rejoiced that he could see my day; and he saw it, and was glad. ⁵⁷Then the Jews said to him: You are not yet fifty years old, and have you seen Abraham?

⁵⁸Jesus said to them: Verily, verily I say to you, before Abraham came into being, I was. ⁵⁹Then they took up stones to throw at him. But Jesus concealed himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them; and so passed by.

IX. ¹And as he passed by, he saw a man that had been blind from his birth. ²And his disciples asked him, saying: Rabbi, who sinned, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? ³Jesus answered: Neither this man sinned, nor his parents; but that the works of

God might be made manifest in him. ⁴I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day; the night comes, when no man can work. ⁵While I am in the world, I am the light of the world. ⁶Having said this, he spit on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and spread the clay on the eyes of the blind man, ⁷and said to him: Go, wash in the pool of Siloam; which, translated, means Sent. He went, therefore, and washed and came seeing.

⁸Then his neighbors, and those who had before seen him, that he was blind, said: Is not this he that sat and begged? ⁹Some said: It is he. Others: He is like him. But he said: I am he. ¹⁰Then they said to him: How were your eyes opened? ¹¹He answered and said: A man called Jesus made clay and spread it on my eyes, and said to me: Go to the pool of Siloam and wash. After I had gone and washed, I received my sight. ¹²Then they said to him: Where is he? He said: I know not.

¹³They brought to the Pharisees him that had formerly been blind. ¹⁴And it was the sabbath when Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes. ¹⁵Then again the Pharisees also inquired of him how he had received his sight. He said to them: He put clay on my eyes, and I washed, and I see. ¹⁶Then some of the Pharisees said: This man is not from God, for he keeps not the sabbath. Others said: How can a man that is a sinner do such signs? And there was a division among them?

¹⁷Again they said to the blind man: What say you of him, seeing that he opened your eyes? He said: He is a prophet. ¹⁸The Jews did not, therefore, believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and had received his sight, till they called the parents of him that had received his sight, ¹⁹and asked them, saying: Is this your son, who, you say, was born blind? How, then, does he now see? ²⁰His parents answered them, and said: We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind; ²¹but how he now sees we know not; or who opened his eyes we know not. He is of age; ask him; he will speak for himself.

²²His parents said this, because they feared the Jews. For the Jews had already agreed, that if any one should confess him to be the Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. ²³For this reason his parents said: He is of age; ask him.

²⁴Then, the second time, they called the

man who had been blind, and said to him: Give glory to God; we know that this man is a sinner.

²⁵ He answered and said: If he is a sinner, I know it not. One thing I do know, that having been blind, I now see. ²⁶ They said to him again: What did he for you? How did he open your eyes? ²⁷ He answered them: I have already told you, and you did not understand; why would you hear it again? Do you also wish to become his disciples? ²⁸ They reviled him, and said: You are the disciple of that man; but we are the disciples of Moses. ²⁹ We know that God spake to Moses; but as for this man, we know not whence he is.

³⁰ The man answered and said to them: Why, there is something wonderful in this, that you know not whence he is, and yet he has opened my eyes. ³¹ We know that God hears not sinners; but if any one be a worshiper of God, and do his will, him he hears. ³² Since the beginning it has not been heard that any one opened the eyes of one who had been born blind. ³³ If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. ³⁴ They answered and said to him: You were wholly born in sins, and do you teach us? And they cast him out.

³⁵ Jesus heard that they had cast him out. And having found him, he said to him: Do you believe on the Son of God? ³⁶ He answered and said: Who is he, sir, that I may believe on him? ³⁷ Jesus said to him: You have seen him; and it is he that talks with you. ³⁸ He said: Lord, I believe; and he worshiped him. ³⁹ And Jesus said: For judgment have I come into this world, that those who see not, may see; and that those who see, may become blind.

⁴⁰ And some of the Pharisees who were with him, heard these things, and said to him: Are we also blind? ⁴¹ Jesus said to them: If you were blind, you would not have sin; but now you say, We see; therefore your sin remains.

X. ¹Verily, verily I say to you, he that goes not through the door into the sheepfold, but climbs up some other way, he is a thief, and a robber. ² But he that enters through the door, is the shepherd of the sheep. ³ To him the door-keeper opens; and the sheep hear his voice, and he calls his own sheep by name, and leads them out. ⁴ And when he puts his own sheep out, he goes before them; and the sheep follow him; for they know his voice. ⁵ And a stranger they will not follow, but will flee from him; for they know

not the voice of strangers.

⁶ This parable spoke Jesus to them; but they knew not the meaning of the things which he spoke to them. ⁷ Therefore Jesus spoke again to them: Verily, verily I say to you, I am the door of the sheep. ⁸ All that came before me were thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not hear them. ⁹ I am the door: if any one enters through me, he shall be saved; and he shall go in and out, and find pasture. ¹⁰ The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy. I have come that they may have life, and have it in abundance. ¹¹ I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd lays down his life for the sheep. ¹² But he that is a hireling, and not the shepherd, to whom the sheep do not belong, sees the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep, and flees; and the wolf catches the sheep, and scatters them. ¹³ The hireling flees because he is a hireling, and cares not for the sheep.

¹⁴ I am the good shepherd, and I know my sheep, and am known by mine. ¹⁵ As the Father knows me, I also know the Father, and I lay down my life for the sheep. ¹⁶ And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold; those, also, must I bring, and they will hear my voice: and there shall be one flock, one shepherd. ¹⁷ For this reason, my Father loves me, because I lay down my life that I may take it again. ¹⁸ No one takes it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to take it again. This commandment I have received from my Father.

¹⁹ Again, therefore, there was a division among the Jews, on account of these words. ²⁰ And many of them said: He has a demon, and is mad; why do you hear him? ²¹ Others said: These are not the words of one that has a demon. Can a demon open the eyes of the blind?

²² And the feast of the dedication was celebrated in Jerusalem, and it was winter: ²³ and Jesus was walking in the temple, in Solomon's porch.

²⁴ Then the Jews came round him, and said to him: How long do you keep us in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us plainly. ²⁵ Jesus answered them: I have told you, and you do not believe. The works which I do in my Father's name, these testify of me. ²⁶ But you believe not, because you are not of my sheep. As I said to you, ²⁷ my sheep hear my voice, and I know

them, and they follow me: ²⁸and I give them eternal life; and they shall never perish, and no one shall take them out of my hand. ²⁹My Father, who gave them to me, is greater than all; and no one is able to take them out of my Father's hand. ³⁰I and my Father are one.

³¹Then the Jews took up stones again, to stone him. ³²Jesus answered them: Many good works have I showed you from my Father: for which of these works do you stone me? ³³The Jews answered and said to him: We do not stone you for a good work, but for your impious words; and because you, being man, make yourself God. ³⁴Jesus answered them: Is it not written in your law, I said, you are gods? ³⁵If he called them gods, to whom the word of God was committed, (and the scripture can not be made void,) ³⁶do you say of him, whom the Father has sanctified, and sent into the world, You speak impiously, because I said, I am the Son of God? ³⁷If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not; ³⁸but if I do, though you believe not me, believe the works, that you may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him.

³⁹Then they sought again to take him, but he escaped from their hands. ⁴⁰And he went away again beyond the Jordan, to the place where John first immersed, and there he abode. ⁴¹And many came to him, and said: John did no sign; but all things that John said of this man were true. ⁴²And many who were there believed on him.

XI. ¹Now a certain man was sick, Lazarus, of Bethany, the village of Mary and Martha her sister. ²It was the Mary that anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick. ³Therefore his sisters sent to him, saying: Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

⁴But when Jesus heard it, he said: This sickness is not to death, but for the glory of God, that by it the Son of God may be glorified. ⁵Now, Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. ⁶When, therefore, he heard that he was sick, he still remained two days in the place where he was. ⁷Then after this, he said to his disciples: Let us go into Judea again. ⁸His disciples said to him: Rabbi, the Jews just now sought to stone thee, and art thou going thither again? ⁹Jesus answered: Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any one walks during the day, he does

not stumble, for he sees the light of this world. ¹⁰But if any one walks in the night, he stumbles, because there is no light in him.

¹¹Thus spoke he; and after this he said to them: Our friend Lazarus sleeps; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep. ¹²Then his disciples said: Lord, if he sleeps, he will be saved. ¹³Jesus spoke of his death; but they thought that he spoke of taking rest in sleep. ¹⁴Therefore, Jesus then said to them plainly: Lazarus is dead. ¹⁵And I rejoice, on your account, that I was not there, in order that you may believe. But let us go to him. ¹⁶Then Thomas, who is called Didymus, said to his fellow-disciples: Let us also go, that we may die with him.

¹⁷Then when Jesus came, he found that he had already been four days in the tomb. ¹⁸Now Bethany was near Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off. ¹⁹And many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. ²⁰Then Martha, when she heard that Jesus was coming, went out to meet him; but Mary sat still in the house. ²¹Then Martha said to Jesus: Lord, if thou hadst been here my brother would not have died. ²²But even now, I know that whatever thou wilt ask of God, God will give thee.

²³Jesus said to her: Your brother shall rise again. ²⁴Martha said to him: I know that he will rise, in the resurrection at the last day. ²⁵Jesus said to her: I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believes on me, though he were dead, yet shall he live; ²⁶and he that lives and believes on me, shall never die. Do you believe this? ²⁷She said to him: Yes, Lord; I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, who was to come into the world.

²⁸And when she had said this, she went away, and called Mary, her sister, secretly, saying: The Teacher has come, and calls for you. ²⁹When she heard it, she rose quickly and came to him. ³⁰Now Jesus had not yet come into the village, but was in the place where Martha met him. ³¹Then the Jews that were with her in the house, and were comforting her, seeing Mary rise and go out quickly, followed her, saying: She is going to the tomb to weep there. ³²Then, when Mary came where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell at his feet, saying to him: Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother would not have died.

³³ Then, when Jesus saw her weeping, and the Jews that came with her weeping also, he was greatly moved in spirit, and troubled; ³⁴ and he said: Where have you laid him? They said to him: Lord, come and see. ³⁵ Jesus wept. ³⁶ Then said the Jews: See how he loved him! ³⁷ And some of them said: Could not he, who opened the eyes of the blind man, have caused that even this man should not have died? ³⁸ Then Jesus, again greatly moved within himself, came to the tomb. It was a cave, and a stone was laid against it. ³⁹ Jesus said: Take away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, said to him: Lord, the body is offensive; for he has been dead four days.

⁴⁰ Jesus said to her: Did I not tell you, that, if you would believe, you should see the glory of God? ⁴¹ Then they took away the stone. And Jesus lifted up his eyes and said: Father, I thank thee, that thou hast heard me. ⁴² I know, in deed, that thou dost always hear me. But for the sake of the multitude who stand around me, I have said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. ⁴³ And when he had said these things, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. ⁴⁴ And he that had been dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes; and his face was bound around with a handkerchief. Jesus said to them: Loose him, and let him go.

⁴⁵ Then many of the Jews that had come to Mary, and who saw what he had done, believed on him. ⁴⁶ But some of them went away to the Pharisees, and told them what Jesus had done.

⁴⁷ Then the chief priests and the Pharisees called together the Sanhedrin, and said: What are we doing? For this man does many signs. ⁴⁸ If we thus let him alone, all will believe on him, and the Romans will come and take away our place and our nation. ⁴⁹ But one of them, Caiaphas, who was chief priest that year, said to them: You know nothing, ⁵⁰ nor do you consider that it is profitable for us, that one man should die for the people, and not that the whole nation should perish. ⁵¹ But this he did not speak of himself; but being chief priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus was about to die for the nation; ⁵² and not for the nation only, but that he should gather into one the children of God that were scattered abroad. ⁵³ From that day, therefore, they consulted together to put him to death.

⁵⁴ Therefore, Jesus no longer walked openly among the Jews, but withdrew thence to the region near the wilderness, to a city called Ephraim, and there he remained with his disciples. ⁵⁵ And the passover of the Jews was near; and many went up from the country to Jerusalem, before the passover, to purify themselves. ⁵⁶ Then they sought for Jesus, and said one to another, as they stood in the temple: What think you, that he will not come to the feast? ⁵⁷ Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given orders, that, if any one knew where he was, he should inform them, that they might take him.

XII. ¹ Then, six days before the passover, Jesus came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, who had been dead, whom he had raised from the dead. ² There they made him a supper, and Martha served; but Lazarus was one of those who reclined at table with him.

³ Then Mary took a pound of ointment of pure nard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair. And the house was filled with the perfume of the ointment. ⁴ Then said one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, who was about to deliver him up: ⁵ Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred denarii, and given to the poor? ⁶ But he said this, not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and had the purse, and took what was put in it. ⁷ Then Jesus said: Let her alone; she has kept this for the day of my burial. ⁸ For the poor you have always with you; but me you have not always.

⁹ Therefore, a great multitude of the Jews learned that he was there; and they came, not on account of Jesus only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. ¹⁰ But the chief priests consulted that they might kill Lazarus also, ¹¹ because on account of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

¹² On the next day, a great multitude that had come to the feast, having heard that Jesus was coming into Jerusalem, ¹³ took branches of palm-trees, and went out to meet him, and cried: Hosanna, blessed is the king of Israel that comes in the name of the Lord. ¹⁴ And Jesus, having found a young ass, sat upon him, as it is written: ¹⁵ Fear not, daughter of Zion; behold, your king comes, sitting on the colt of an ass. ¹⁶ His

disciples did not understand these things at first; but when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things to him.

¹⁷The multitude therefore that was with him, testified that he had called Lazarus out of the tomb, and raised him from the dead. ¹⁸For this reason, also, the multitude met him, because they had heard that he had done this sign. ¹⁹Then the Pharisees said among themselves: You see that you gain nothing. Behold, the world has gone after him.

²⁰Among those who came to worship at the feast were certain Greeks. ²¹These then came to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, saying: Sir, we wish to see Jesus. ²²Philip came and told Andrew; and then Andrew and Philip told Jesus. ²³But Jesus answered them, saying: The hour has come that the Son of man must be glorified. ²⁴Verily, verily I say to you, unless a grain of wheat fall into the ground and die, it remains alone; but if it die, it produces much fruit. ²⁵He that loves his life shall lose it; and he that hates his life in this world shall keep it to eternal life. ²⁶If any one serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall my servant also be. If any one serve me, him will my Father honor.

²⁷Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour? But for this purpose came I to this hour. ²⁸Father, glorify thy name. Then there came a voice from heaven: I have glorified it, and will glorify it again. ²⁹Then the multitude that stood by and heard it, said: It thundered. Others said: An angel spoke to him. ³⁰Jesus answered and said: This voice came not for my sake, but for yours. ³¹Now is the judgment of this world: now is the prince of this world cast out. ³²And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men to myself. ³³This he said, signifying what death he was about to die.

³⁴The multitude answered him: We have heard out of the law, that the Christ remains forever: and how say you that the Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of man? ³⁵Then Jesus said to them: Yet a little while is the light with you: walk while you have the light, lest the darkness overtake you. For he that walks in the darkness knows not whither he goes. ³⁶While you have the light, believe in the light, that you

may become the sons of light. These things spoke Jesus, and he departed, and concealed himself from them.

³⁷But though he had done so many signs in their presence, yet they believed not on him, ³⁸that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke: Lord, who has believed our report? and to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed? ³⁹For this reason they could not believe, because Isaiah said again: ⁴⁰He has blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, lest they should see with their eyes, and understand with their heart, and should turn, and I should give them health. ⁴¹These things said Isaiah, when he saw his glory, and spoke of him. ⁴²But yet, many even of the rulers believed on him; but on account of the Pharisees, they would not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue; ⁴³for they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.

⁴⁴Jesus cried, and said: He that believes on me, believes not on me, but on him that sent me. ⁴⁵And he that sees me, sees him that sent me. ⁴⁶I have come a light into the world, that he who believes on me, may not remain in darkness. ⁴⁷And if any one hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not; for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. ⁴⁸He that rejects me, and receives not my words, has that which judges him: the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day. ⁴⁹For I have not spoken of myself: but the Father who sent me, he gave me commandment what I should say, and what I should speak. ⁵⁰And I know that his commandment is life eternal. What things I speak therefore, as the Father has said to me, so I speak.

XIII. ¹Now before the feast of the passover, Jesus knew that his hour had come that he must go out of this world to his Father; and having loved his own that were in the world, he loved them to the end. ²And supper being over, the devil having already put it into the heart of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, to deliver him up, ³Jesus, knowing that the Father had delivered all things into his hands, and that he had come from God, and was going to God, ⁴arose from supper, and laid aside his garments, and taking a towel, he girded himself. ⁵Then he poured water into a basin, and began to wash his disci-

ples feet, and to wipe them with the towel with which he was girded.

⁶Then he came to Simon Peter; and Peter said to him: Lord, dost thou wash my feet? ⁷Jesus answered and said to him: What I am doing you know not now, but you will know hereafter. ⁸Peter said to him: Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him: Unless I wash you, you have no part with me. ⁹Simon Peter said to him: Lord, not my feet only, but my hands and my head. ¹⁰Jesus said to him: He that has bathed needs nothing else save to wash his feet, but is wholly clean. And you are clean, but not all. ¹¹For he knew who would deliver him up; for this reason he said, You are not all clean.

¹²Therefore, when he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, he reclined at table again, and said to them: Do you understand what I have done for you? ¹³You call me Teacher and Lord; and you say well, for so I am. ¹⁴If, then, I, your Lord and your Teacher, have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's feet. ¹⁵For I have given you an example, that you also may do as I have done for you. ¹⁶Verily, verily I say to you, the servant is not greater than his master, nor is he that is sent greater than he that sent him. ¹⁷If you know these things, blessed are you, if you do them. ¹⁸I speak not of you all. I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eats bread with me has lifted up his heel against me. ¹⁹I tell you this now, before it comes to pass, that when it comes to pass, you may believe that I am he.

²⁰Verily, verily I say to you, he that receives him that I shall send, receives me; and he that receives me, receives him that sent me.

²¹When Jesus had spoken these things, he was troubled in spirit, and testified and said: Verily, verily I say to you, that one of you will deliver me up. ²²Then the disciples looked at one another, doubting of whom he spoke. ²³There was reclining on the bosom of Jesus, one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. ²⁴Then Simon Peter beckoned to this one, that he should inquire who it was of whom he spoke. ²⁵And he that was reclining on Jesus breast, said to him: Lord, who is it?

²⁶Jesus answered: It is he to whom I shall give this morsel after I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the morsel, he gave it to Judas

Iscariot, the son of Simon. ²⁷And after the morsel was given, then Satan entered into him. Then Jesus said to him: What you do, do quickly. ²⁸But none of those who reclined at table with him knew for what purpose he said this to him. ²⁹For some thought, because Judas had the purse, that Jesus had said to him: Buy what we need for the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. ³⁰Then, on receiving the morsel, he immediately went out; and it was night.

³¹When he had gone out, Jesus said: Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. ³²If God is glorified in him, God will also glorify him in himself, and will immediately glorify him. ³³Little children, yet a little while I am with you. You will seek me, and, as I said to the Jews, whither I go, you can not come, so now I say to you. ³⁴A new commandment I give to you, That you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. ³⁵By this shall all men know that you are my disciples, if you have love one for another.

³⁶Simon Peter said to him: Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him: Whither I go, you can not follow me now; but you shall follow me hereafter. ³⁷Peter said to him: Lord, why can I not follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thee. ³⁸Jesus answered him: Will you lay down your life for me? Verily, verily I say to you, the cock will not crow till you have denied me three times.

XIV. ¹Let not your heart be troubled; believe in God; believe also in me. ²In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. ³And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and take you with myself, that where I am, you may be also. ⁴And whither I go you know, and the way you know.

⁵Thomas said to him: Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how can we know the way? ⁶Jesus said to him: I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but through me. ⁷If you had known me, you would have known my Father also. And from this time you know him, and have seen him.

⁸Philip said to him: Lord, show us the Father, and we shall be content. ⁹Jesus said to him: Have I been so long with you, and have you

not known me, Philip? He that has seen me, has seen the Father; and how say you, Show us the Father? ¹⁰Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and that the Father is in me? The words that I speak to you, I speak not of myself. The Father who dwells in me, he does the works. ¹¹Believe me, that I am in the Father, and that the Father is in me. If not, believe me on account of the works themselves. ¹²Verily, verily I say to you, he that believes on me, the works that I do he also shall do. Even greater works than these shall he do, because I go to my Father; ¹³and whatever you ask in my name, I will do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴If you ask any thing in my name, I will do it.

¹⁵If you love me, keep my commandments; ¹⁶and I will pray the Father, and he will give you another Paraclete, that he may dwell with you forever; ¹⁷the Spirit of the truth, whom the world can not receive, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, because he dwells with you, and shall be in you. ¹⁸I will not leave you orphans; I am coming to you. ¹⁹Yet a little while, and the world sees me no more; but you shall see me. Because I live, you also shall live. ²⁰In that clay you shall know that I am in my Father, arid you in me, and I in you. ²¹He that has my commandments and keeps them, he it is that loves me; and he that loves me shall be loved by my Father; and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

²²Judas, not Iscariot, said to him: Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself to us, and not to the world? ²³Jesus answered and said to him: If any one loves me, he will keep my word, and my Father will love him, and we will come to him, and make our abode with him. ²⁴He that loves me not, keeps not my words; and the word which you hear is not mine, but the Father's who sent me.

²⁵These things have I spoken to you, while I am yet with you. ²⁶But the Paraclete, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things that I have spoken to you. ²⁷Peace I leave to you; my peace I give to you; not as the world gives, do I give to you. Let not your heart be troubled, and let it not be afraid. ²⁸You have heard that I said to you, I am going away, and am coming again to you. If you loved me, you would rejoice, because I go to the

Father; for my Father is greater than I. ²⁹And now I have told you before it comes to pass, that when it does come to pass, you may believe. ³⁰I will not talk much more with you; for the prince of this world is coming, and has nothing in me. ³¹But *this takes place* that the world may know that I love the Father, and even as he gave me commandment, so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

XV. ¹I am the true vine, and my Father is the vine-dresser. ²Every branch in me that bears no fruit, he takes away; and every branch that bears fruit, he prunes, that it may bear more fruit. ³Now are you pure, through the word which I have spoken to you. ⁴Abide in me, and I will abide in you. As the branch can not bear fruit of itself, unless it abide in the vine, so neither can you, unless you abide in me. ⁵I am the vine, you are the branches. He that abides in me and I in him, he will bear much fruit; for apart from me you can do nothing.

⁶If any one abide not in me, he is thrown out as a branch, and withers; and such are gathered, and thrown into the fire, and burned. ⁷If you abide in me, and my words abide in you, you shall ask what you will, and it shall be done for you. ⁸In this is my Father glorified, that you bear much fruit; and in this you will be my disciples. ⁹As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you; abide in my love. ¹⁰If you keep my commandments, you shall abide in my love, even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

¹¹These things have I spoken to you, that my joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be full. ¹²This is my commandment: That you love one another, as I have loved you.

¹³Greater love has no man than this, that one should lay down his life for his friends. ¹⁴You are my friends, if you do whatever I command you.

¹⁵I no longer call you servants, because the servant knows not what his master does. But I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard from my Father, I have made known to you.

¹⁶You have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and appointed you, that you may go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit may remain; that whatever you ask of the Father in my name, he may give you. ¹⁷These things I command you, that you may love one another.

¹⁸If the world hates you, you know that it hated me before it hated you. ¹⁹If you were of

the world, the world would love its own. But because you are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hates you.²⁰ Remember the word which I spoke to you, The servant is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my word, they will keep yours also.²¹ But all these things they will do to you on my account, because they know not him that sent me.²² If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have had sin; but now they have no excuse for their sin.²³ He that hates me, hates my Father also.²⁴ If I had not done among them the works that no other man has done, they would have had no sin; but now they have both seen, and hated both me and my Father.²⁵ But this is so, that the word may be fulfilled which is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.

²⁶ But when the Paraclete has come, whom I will send to you from my Father, the Spirit of the truth, which proceeds from the Father, he will testify of me;²⁷ and you also will testify, because you have been with me from the beginning.

XVI. ¹These things have I spoken to you, that you may not be ensnared.² They will put you out of the synagogues; indeed, the time is coming, when he that kills you, will think that he is offering service to God.³ And these things they will do, because they know neither the Father nor me.⁴ But these things I have told you, that, when the time has come, you may remember that I told you of them. But these things I did not tell you at the beginning, because I was with you.⁵ And now I go to him that sent me, and no one of you asks me, Whither goest thou?⁶ But because I have spoken these things to you, sorrow has filled your heart.

⁷ But yet I tell you the truth: it is profitable for you that I go away. For if I go not away, the Paraclete will not come to you. But if I go away, I will send him to you.⁸ And when he has come, he will convince the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.⁹ Of sin, because they believe not on me;¹⁰ of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and you see me no more;¹¹ of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

¹²I have yet many things to say to you; but you can not bear them now.¹³ But when he, the

Spirit of the truth, has come, he will guide you into all the truth; for he will not speak of himself; but what he hears, that will he speak, and he will show you things to come.¹⁴ He will glorify me; for he will take of mine, and show it to you.¹⁵ All things that the Father has are mine; for this reason I said, that he will take of mine, and show it to you.¹⁶ A little while, and you will not see me; and again, a little while, and you will see me, because I go to the Father.

¹⁷ Then some of his disciples said one to another: What is this that he says to us, A little while, and you will not see me; and again, a little while, and you will see me? and, Because I go to the Father?¹⁸ Therefore they said: What is this that he says, The little while? We know not what he says.¹⁹ Then Jesus knew that they wished to ask him; and he said to them: Are you inquiring of one another about this, because I said, A little while and you will not see me; and again, a little while, and you will see me?²⁰ Verily, verily I say to you, you shall weep and lament, but the world will rejoice. You shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.²¹ A woman, when she is in labor, has sorrow, because her hour has come; but when the child is born, she no longer remembers the pain, for joy that a man is born into the world.²² You, therefore, have sorrow now; but I shall see you again, and your heart will rejoice, and your joy no one takes from you.²³ And in that day you shall ask nothing of me; verily, verily I say to you, whatever you ask of the Father in my name, he will give you.²⁴ Till this time you have asked for nothing in my name; ask, and you shall receive, that your joy may be full.

²⁵ These things I have spoken to you in parables; the time is coming when I will no longer speak to you in parables, but will teach you plainly concerning the Father.²⁶ In that day you shall ask in my name; and I say not to you, that I will ask the Father in your behalf;²⁷ for the Father himself loves you, because you have loved me, and have believed that I came forth from God.²⁸ I came forth from the Father, and have come into the world: again I leave the world, and go to the Father.

²⁹ His disciples said to him: Lo, now thou speakest plainly, and speakest no parable.³⁰ Now we know that thou knowest all things, and hast no need that any one should ask thee. By this we

believe that thou hast come forth from God. ³¹Jesus answered them: Do you now believe? ³²Behold, the hour is coming, and has now come, in which you shall be scattered, each one to his own home, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, for the Father is with me. ³³These things I have spoken to you, that in me you may have peace. In the world you shall have affliction, but be of good courage; I have overcome the world.

XVII. ¹Jesus spoke these words, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said: Father, the hour has come: glorify thy Son, that thy Son may also glorify thee; ²as thou hast given him authority over all flesh, that he may give eternal life to all that thou hast given him. ³And this is life eternal, to know thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou has sent. ⁴I have glorified thee on the earth; I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. ⁵And now, Father, glorify me with thyself, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

⁶I have made known thy name to the men that thou gavest me out of the world. Thine they were, and thou gavest them, to me, and they have kept thy word. ⁷Now they know that all things that thou hast given me are from thee; ⁸for the words which thou gavest me I have given them; and they have received them, and they know surely that I came forth from thee, and they believe that thou didst send me. ⁹I pray for them; I pray not for the world, but for them whom thou hast given me; for they are thine. ¹⁰And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them. ¹¹And I am no longer in the world; but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep in thy name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are one. ¹²While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name. Those whom thou gavest me, I have kept; and none of them is lost but the son of perdition, that the scripture may be fulfilled. ¹³And now I come to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

¹⁴I have given them thy word; and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. ¹⁵I do not pray thee to take them out of the world, but to keep them from the Evil One. ¹⁶They are not of

the world, as I am not of the world. ¹⁷Sanctify them through thy truth; thy word is truth. ¹⁸As thou hast sent me into the world, so I send them into the world; ¹⁹and for them I sanctify myself, that they also may be sanctified through the truth. ²⁰I pray, not for these only, but for those also who shall believe on me through their word; ²¹that they all may be one, as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. ²²And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them, that they may be one, as we are one; ²³I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

²⁴Father, I wish that they also, whom thou hast given me, may be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me; for thou didst love me before the foundation of the world. ²⁵Righteous Father, though the world has not known thee, yet I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. ²⁶And I have made known to them thy name, and will continue to make it known, that the love with which thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

XVIII. ¹When Jesus had spoken these things, he went out with his disciples beyond the brook Kedron, where was a garden, which he and his disciples entered. ²And Judas, who delivered him up, also knew the place, because Jesus often went thither with his disciples. ³Judas, then, having received the band of soldiers and attendants from the chief priests and Pharisees, came thither with torches and lamps and weapons.

⁴Then Jesus, knowing all things that were coming upon him, went forth, and said to them: Whom do you seek? ⁵They answered him: Jesus the Nazarene. Jesus said to them: I am he. Judas, also, who delivered him up, was standing among them. ⁶Then, when he said to them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground. ⁷Then he asked them again: Whom do you seek? They said: Jesus the Nazarene. ⁸Jesus answered: I have told you that I am he. If, then, you seek me, let these go away. ⁹This he said, that the word might be fulfilled which he had spoken: Of those whom thou hast given me; I have lost none.

¹⁰Then Simon Peter, who had a sword, drew it, and struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his right ear. The name of the servant was Malchus. ¹¹Then Jesus said to Peter: Put up your sword into its scabbard. Shall I not drink the cup that my Father has given me?

¹²Then the band of soldiers, and the officer, and the attendants of the Jews, took Jesus and bound him, ¹³and led him first to Annas; for he was the father-in-law of Caiaphas, who was chief priest that year. ¹⁴It was Caiaphas who had given counsel to the Jews, that it was profitable that one man should die for the people.

¹⁵And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. And that other disciple was acquainted with the chief priest, and he went in with Jesus into the palace of the chief priest. ¹⁶But Peter stood without near the door. Then the other disciple, who was acquainted with the chief priest, went out and spoke to the door-keeper, and brought Peter in. ¹⁷Then the maid-servant who kept the door said to Peter: Are you not also one of the disciples of this man? He said: I am not. ¹⁸And the servants and the attendants, having made a fire of coals, for it was cold, were standing and warming themselves. And Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

¹⁹Then the chief priest questioned Jesus concerning his disciples and his teaching. ²⁰Jesus answered him: I have spoken openly to the world; I always taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, where the Jews come together, and in secret I have spoken nothing. ²¹Why do you ask me? Ask those who have heard, what things I said to them. Behold, they know what I have said. ²²When he had spoken thus, one of the attendants, who was standing by, struck Jesus with his open hand, saying: Do you answer the chief priest thus? ²³Jesus answered him: If I have spoken evil, testify of the evil; but if well, why do you strike me? ²⁴Then Annas sent him bound to Caiaphas the chief priest.

²⁵And Simon Peter was standing and warming himself. Then they said to him: Are not you also one of his disciples? He denied, and said: I am not. ²⁶One of the servants of the chief priest, who was a kinsman of him whose ear Peter had cut off, said: Did I not see you in the garden with him? ²⁷Then Peter denied again. And immediately the cock crew.

²⁸Then they led Jesus from Caiaphas to the governor's palace. It was the morning hour. And, in order that they might not be denied, but that they might eat the passover, they did not go into the governor's palace. ²⁹Then Pilate came out to them, and said: What accusation do you bring against this man? ³⁰They answered and said to him: If this man were not an evil-doer, we would not have delivered him to you. ³¹Then Pilate said to them: Take him yourselves, and judge him according to your law. Then the Jews said to him: It is not lawful for us to put any one to death; ³²that the word of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spoke, signifying by what death he was about to die.

³³Then Pilate again entered the governor's palace, and called Jesus, and said to him: Are you the king of the Jews? ³⁴Jesus answered him: Do you say this of yourself, or did others speak to you of me? ³⁵Pilate answered: Am I a Jew? Your own nation, and the chief priests have delivered you to me; what have you done? ³⁶Jesus answered: My kingdom is not of this world; if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I might not be delivered up to the Jews. But now my kingdom is not hence. ³⁷Then Pilate said to him: You are a king, then? Jesus answered: You say that I am a king. For this purpose was I born, and for this purpose I came into the world, that I might testify to the truth. Every one that is of the truth, hears my voice. ³⁸Pilate said to him: What is truth?

And when he had said this, he again came out to the Jews, and said to them: I find no fault in him. ³⁹But you have a custom, that I release to you one during the passover. Are you willing, then, that I should release to you the king of the Jews? ⁴⁰They all, then, cried out, saying: Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

XIX. ¹Then Pilate, therefore, took Jesus and scourged him. ²And the soldiers plaited a crown of thorn-branches, and put it upon his head; and they put on him a purple robe, ³and said: Hail, King of the Jews. And they struck him with their open hands.

⁴Then Pilate came out again, and said to them: Behold, I bring him out to you, that you may know that I find no fault in him. ⁵Then Jesus came out, wearing the crown of thorn-branches, and the purple robe. And Pilate said

to them: Be hold the man! ⁶When the chief priests and their attendants saw him, they cried out, saying: Crucify him, crucify him. Pilate said to them: Do you take him and crucify him; for I find no fault in him. ⁷The Jews answered: We have a law, and according to our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

⁸Then, when Pilate heard this word, he was the more afraid; ⁹and he went into the governor's palace again, and said to Jesus: Whence are you? But Jesus gave him no answer. ¹⁰Then Pilate said to him: Do you not speak to me? Do you not know that I have authority to crucify you, and authority to release you? ¹¹Jesus answered: You could have no authority over me, had it not been given you from above. Therefore, he that delivered me to you, has the greater sin.

¹²After this Pilate sought to release him. But the Jews cried out, saying: If you release this man, you are not Cæsar's friend. Every one that makes himself a king, speaks against Cæsar ¹³Then Pilate, when he heard that word, led Jesus out, and sat on the judgment-seat, in a place called the Pavement, but in Hebrew, Gab-batha; ¹⁴it was the preparation for the passover, and about the third hour; and he said to the Jews, Behold your king! ¹⁵But they cried out: Away with him, away with him; crucify him! Pilate said to them: Shall I crucify your king? The chief priests answered: We have no king but Cæsar ¹⁶Then he, therefore, delivered him to them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led him away.

¹⁷And, bearing his cross, he went forth into a place called the Place of a Skull, which is called, in Hebrew, Golgotha, ¹⁸where they crucified him, and with him two others, one on each side, and Jesus in the middle.

¹⁹And Pilate wrote a superscription, and put it on the cross; and the writing was, JESUS THE NAZAREN, THE KING OF THE JEWS. ²⁰Therefore many of the Jews read this superscription, because the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city. And it was written in Hebrew and in Greek and in Latin. ²¹Then the chief priests of the Jews said to Pilate: Write not, The king of the Jews; but, that he said, I am the king of the Jews. ²²Pilate answered: What I have written, I have written. ²³Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his clothing,

and made four parts, to each soldier a part; and they took his coat also. Now his coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. ²⁴Then they said, one to another, let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be. *This was done* that the scripture might be fulfilled, which says: They divided my clothing among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. The soldiers, therefore, did these things.

²⁵Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and Mary Magdalene. ²⁶Then Jesus, seeing his mother and the disciple whom he loved standing by, said to his mother: Woman, behold your son. ²⁷Then he said to the disciple: Behold your mother. And from that hour that disciple took her to his own home.

²⁸After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, said: I thirst. ²⁹Now a vessel full of vinegar had been set there; and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon a hyssop-stalk, and put it to his mouth. ³⁰Therefore, when Jesus had received the vinegar, he said: It is finished. And he bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.

³¹Then the Jews, as it was the preparation, that the bodies might not remain on the cross on the sabbath, for that sabbath-day was a great day, besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken down. ³²Then came the soldiers and broke the legs of the first, and of the other that was crucified with him. ³³But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was already dead, they did not break his legs: ³⁴but one of the soldiers pierced his side with a spear; and immediately there came out blood and water.

³⁵And he that saw it has given testimony, and his testimony is true, and he knows that he speaks the truth, that you may believe; ³⁶for these things were done that the scripture might be fulfilled: A bone of him shall not be broken. ³⁷And again another scripture says: They shall look on him whom they pierced.

³⁸And after this, Joseph of Arimathea, who was a disciple of Jesus, but secretly, for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus. And Pilate gave him permission. He then came and took away the body of Jesus. ³⁹Then came Nicodemus also, (who, at

the first, had come to Jesus by night,) bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds. ⁴⁰Then they took the body of Jesus, and bound it in linen cloths, with the spices, according to the Jewish custom of burying. ⁴¹Now, in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new tomb, in which no one had ever been laid. ⁴²There, then, on account of the preparation-day of the Jews, they laid Jesus, for the tomb was near.

XX. ¹And early on the first day of the week, while it was yet dark, Mary Magdalene came to the tomb, and saw that the stone had been taken away from the tomb. ²Then she ran and came to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and said to them: They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we know not where they have laid him. ³Then Peter and the other disciple went out, and came to the tomb.

⁴And the two ran together; and the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to the tomb; ⁵and he stooped down and saw the linen cloths lying, but he did not go in. ⁶Then came Simon Peter, following him; and he went into the tomb, and saw the linen cloths lying, ⁷and the handkerchief that had been on his head, not lying with the linen cloths, but folded in a place by itself. ⁸Then, therefore, the other disciple, who came first to the tomb, went in, and saw, and believed. ⁹For, as yet, they did not know the scripture, that he must rise from the dead. ¹⁰Then the disciples went away again by themselves.

¹¹But Mary stood without near the tomb, weeping; and as she wept, she stooped down and looked into the tomb, ¹²and saw two angels in white raiment, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the foot, where the body of Jesus had lain. ¹³And they said to her: Woman, why do you weep? She said to them: They have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. ¹⁴Having said this, she turned back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

¹⁵Jesus said to her: Woman, why do you weep? Whom do you seek? Supposing that it was the gardener, she said to him: Sir, if you have taken him hence, tell me where you have laid him, and I will take him away. ¹⁶Jesus said to

her: Mary. She turned, and said to him: Rabboni; which is, translated, Teacher. ¹⁷Jesus said to her: Touch me not, for I have not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say to them, I ascend to my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God. ¹⁸Mary Magdalen came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had said these things to her.

¹⁹Then, on that day, the first day of the week, when it was evening, and the doors of the house in which the disciples were assembled had been closed for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said to them: Peace be to you. ²⁰And having said this, he showed them his hands and his side. Then the disciples rejoiced, when they saw the Lord. ²¹Then Jesus said to them again: Peace be to you. As my Father has sent me, so I send you. ²²And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and said to them: Receive the Holy Spirit. ²³Whosoever sins you forgive, they are forgiven them: whosoever sins you retain, they are retained.

²⁴But Thomas, one of the twelve, who is called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. ²⁵Then the other disciples said to him: We have seen the Lord. But he said to them: Unless I see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger in the print of the nails, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe.

²⁶And after eight days, again his disciples were within, and Thomas was with them. Then Jesus came, though the doors had been closed, and stood in the midst, and said: Peace be to you. ²⁷Then he said to Thomas: Reach hither your finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither your hand, and put it into my side; and be not faithless, but believing. ²⁸And Thomas answered and said to him: My Lord and my God. ²⁹Jesus said to him: Because you have seen me you have believed: blessed are they who, though they have not seen, yet have believed.

³⁰Many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book; ³¹but these are written, that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life through his name.

XXI. ¹After this, Jesus showed himself again to his disciples, at the sea of Tiberias. And he showed himself in this way.

²There were together, Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathaniel of Cana of Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two others of his disciples. ³Simon Peter said to them: I am going a fishing. They said to him: We also are going with you. They went out and entered the ship; and that night they caught nothing.

⁴But when the morning had now come, Jesus stood on the shore; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. ⁵Then Jesus said to them: Children, have you any food? They answered him: No. ⁶He said to them: Throw the net on the right side of the ship, and you will find. They threw it, there fore, and were no longer able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. ⁷Then that disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter: It is the Lord. And when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girded on his outer coat, for he had on his inner garment only, and threw himself into the sea. ⁸And the other disciples came in a little ship, dragging the net with fishes, for they were not far from the land, only about two hundred cubits.

⁹As soon as they had come to the land, they saw there a fire of coals, and fish lying upon it, and bread. ¹⁰Jesus said to them: Bring of the fish that you have just taken. ¹¹Simon Peter went and drew the net to the land, full of large fishes, a hundred and fifty-three. And though they were so many, the net did not break. ¹²Jesus said to them: Come and breakfast. But no one of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? because they knew it was the Lord. ¹³Then Jesus came and took the bread, and gave it to them, and the fish likewise. ¹⁴This was now the third occasion on which Jesus showed himself to his disciples, after he had risen from the dead.

¹⁵When, therefore, they had taken breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter: Simon, son of

Jonah, Do you love me more than these? He said to him: Yes, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He said to him: Feed my lambs. ¹⁶He said to him again a second time: Simon, son of Jonah, do you love me? He said to him: Yes, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He said to him: Be a shepherd to my sheep. ¹⁷He said to him a third time: Simon, son of Jonah, do you love me? Peter was grieved because he said to him the third time, Do you love me? And he said to him: Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus said to him: Feed my sheep. ¹⁸Verily, verily I say to you, when you were young, you girded yourself, and walked whither you chose; but when you have become old, you shall stretch forth your hands, and another shall gird you, and lead you whither you would not. ¹⁹But this he said, signifying by what death he would glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he said to him: Follow me.

²⁰Then Peter, turning about, saw the disciple that Jesus loved, following, who also reclined at supper upon his breast, and said: Lord, who is he that delivers thee up? ²¹Peter seeing this one, said to Jesus: Lord, what shall this one do? ²²Jesus said to him: If I will that he remain till I come, what is that to you? Do you follow me. ²³Therefore, this saying went out among the brethren, that that disciple should not die. Yet Jesus did not say to him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he remain till I come, what is that to you?

²⁴This is the disciple who testifies of these things, and who has written these things; and we know that his testimony is true. ²⁵And there are also many other things that Jesus did; if they should be written, every one of them, I suppose that not even the world itself could contain the books that would be written.

Acts of Apostles.

I. ¹The former record I made, O Theophilus, of all things that Jesus began both to do and to teach, ²till the day on which he was taken up, after he had, through the Holy Spirit, given commandments to the apostles whom he had chosen. ³To whom, after he had suffered, he also showed himself alive, by many indubitable proofs; appearing to them for forty days, and speaking of the things that pertain to the kingdom of God. ⁴And calling them together, he commanded them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for the promise of my Father, which, *said he*, you have heard from me; ⁵for John indeed immersed in water, but you shall be immersed in the Holy Spirit, not many days hence.

Therefore, when they came together, they asked him, saying: Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdom to Israel? ⁷But he said to them: It is not for you to know times or seasons that the Father has reserved under his own control. ⁸But you shall receive power, after the Holy Spirit has come upon you, and you shall be witnesses for me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and to the most distant part of the earth.

⁹And when he had spoken these things, while they were looking on him, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight. ¹⁰And while they were looking earnestly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white raiment, ¹¹who also said: Men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? This Jesus, who has been taken up from you into heaven, shall come in the same manner in which you saw him go into heaven.

¹²Then they returned to Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, a sabbath-day's journey. ¹³And when they had come in, they went up into an upper room, in which dwelt Peter and James, and John and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James the son of Alphæus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James. ¹⁴All these, with one mind, continued in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brothers.

¹⁵And in those days Peter arose in the midst

of the disciples, (the number of the names together was about a hundred and twenty,) and said:

¹⁶Brethren, it was necessary for this scripture to be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit had before spoken by the mouth of David, concerning Judas, who was a guide to those who took Jesus: ¹⁷for he was numbered with us, and had been appointed to this ministry. ¹⁸Therefore he purchased a field with the reward of his iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. ¹⁹And it was known to all that dwelt in Jerusalem, so that the field is called, in their own language, Akeldama, that is, The field of blood. ²⁰For it is written in the book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no one dwell in it, and, His office let another take. ²¹Therefore, of these men who have associated with us during the whole time in which the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, ²²beginning from the immersion of John till the day on which he was taken up from us, must one be appointed as a witness with us of his resurrection.

²³And they set apart two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias; ²⁴and praying, they said: Thou, Lord, who knowest the hearts of all, make known which of these two thou hast chosen, ²⁵that he may be appointed to this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place. ²⁶And they gave in their lots, and the lot fell on Matthias: and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

II. ¹And when the day of Pentecost had fully come, they were all with one consent in one place. ²And suddenly there came from heaven a sound as of a rushing, violent wind, and it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. ³And there appeared to them tongues like fire, which distributed themselves, and sat one on each of them. ⁴And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

⁵Now there were dwelling in Jerusalem devout Jews, from every nation under heaven.

⁶When the report of this had gone abroad, the multitude came together; and they were perplexed, for each one heard them speak in his own language. ⁷They were amazed and astonished, and said one to another: Are not all these that are speaking Galileans? ⁸And how is it that we hear, every one in our own language in which we were born—— ⁹Parthians and Modes and Elamites, and we who dwell in Mesopotamia, Judea, and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, ¹⁰Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya about Cyrene, Roman residents, Jews and proselytes, ¹¹Cretes and Arabians——we hear them speaking, in our own tongues, the wonderful works of God? ¹²And they were all in amazement and doubt, and said, one to another: What can this mean? ¹³But others deriding, said: They are full of new wine.

¹⁴But Peter standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice and said to them: Men of Judea, and all you that dwell in Jerusalem, be this known to you, and give ear to my words. ¹⁵For these men are not drunk, as you suppose: for it is the third hour of the day. ¹⁶But this is that which was spoken of by the prophet Joel:

¹⁷And it shall come to pass in the last days, says God, that I will pour out of my Spirit on all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams. ¹⁸And also on my servants and on my handmaids, I will pour out of my Spirit in those days, and they shall prophesy. ¹⁹And I will show wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath, blood and fire and columns of smoke. ²⁰The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before that great and terrible day of the Lord comes. ²¹And it shall come to pass, that whoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.

²²Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus the Nazarene, clearly pointed out to you as a man from God, by mighty deeds and wonders and signs, which God did by him in your midst, as you yourselves also know, ²³him, delivered up by the fixed purpose and foreknowledge of God, you took, and with wicked hands did crucify and slay: ²⁴whom God raised up, having loosed the pains of death, because it was not possible for him to be held in subjection by it. ²⁵For David speaks with reference to him: I saw the

Lord always in my presence: for he is at my right hand, that I should not be moved. ²⁶Therefore my heart rejoiced, and my tongue sang praise. Moreover, my flesh shall rest in hope; ²⁷because thou wilt not leave my soul in hades, nor suffer thy Holy One to see corruption. ²⁸Thou didst make known to me the ways of life; thou wilt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

²⁹Brethren, I may say to you plainly of the patriarch David, that he died, and was buried, and his sepulcher is with us to this day. ³⁰Therefore, being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn to him with an oath, that he would cause one from the fruit of his loins to sit on his throne; ³¹foreseeing this, he spoke of the resurrection of the Christ, that his soul was not left in hades, nor did his flesh see corruption. ³²This Jesus has God raised up, of which we all are witnesses. ³³Therefore, having been exalted to the right hand of God, and having received from his Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, he has poured out this, which you now see and hear. ³⁴For David has not ascended into the heavens; but he himself says, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, ³⁵till I make thy enemies thy footstool. ³⁶Therefore, let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God has made this same Jesus whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ.

³⁷When they heard this, they were pierced to the heart, and said to Peter and the other apostles: Brethren, what shall we do?

³⁸And Peter said to them: Repent, and be immersed, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ, in order to the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. ³⁹For the promise is to you, and your children, and to all that are afar off, as many as the Lord our God shall call. ⁴⁰And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying: Save yourselves from this wicked generation.

⁴¹Then they that gladly received his word were immersed, and on that day there were added to them about three thousand souls. ⁴²And they attended constantly to the teaching of the apostles, and the fellowship, and the breaking of bread, and the prayers. ⁴³And fear came on every soul; and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles. ⁴⁴And all that believed were together, and had all things in common; ⁴⁵and they sold their possessions and

goods, and distributed them to all, as each had need.⁴⁶ And with one consent, they continued daily in the temple; and, breaking bread from house to house, they partook of their food with gladness and simplicity of heart,⁴⁷ praising God, and being in favor with all the people. And the Lord added the saved daily to the Church.

III. ¹Now Peter and John were going up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, which was the ninth hour. ²And a certain man, lame from his mother's womb, was carried along, whom they laid daily at that gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, that he might ask charity of those who were going into the temple. ³This man, seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked charity. ⁴But Peter, fixing his eyes on him with John, said: Look on us. ⁵And he gave heed to them, expecting to receive something from them.

⁶But Peter said: Silver and gold I have none: but what I have, this I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, arise and walk. ⁷And he took him by his right hand and raised him up: and immediately his feet and ankles received strength. ⁸And leaping up, he stood and walked, and went with them into the temple, walking and leaping and praising God. ⁹And all the people saw him walking and praising God; ¹⁰and they recognized him, that it was he that had sat for charity at the Beautiful gate of the temple. And they were filled with wonder and amazement at what had happened to him.

¹¹And while he was holding to Peter and John, all the people ran together to them in the porch called Solomon's, greatly astonished.

¹²But when Peter saw it, he answered the people:

Men of Israel, why are you astonished at this? or, why do you look so earnestly on us, as if by our own power or godliness we had caused this man to walk? ¹³The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his Son Jesus, whom you delivered up, and whom you rejected in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to release him. ¹⁴But you rejected the Holy and Just One, and demanded that a murderer should be given to you; ¹⁵and you slew the Author of life, whom God has raised from the dead, of which we are witnesses. ¹⁶And his name, by faith in his name, has made this man strong whom you see and

know; even the faith which is by him, has given him this entire soundness in the presence of you all.

¹⁷And now, brethren, I know that through ignorance you did this, as did also your rulers. ¹⁸But the things which God foretold by the mouth of all his prophets, that the Christ should suffer, he has thus fulfilled. ¹⁹Repent, therefore, and turn, in order that your sins may be blotted out, so that seasons of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord, ²⁰and that he may send Jesus Christ, who was destined for you; ²¹whom heaven must retain, till the time for restoring all things that God has spoken by the mouth of his holy prophets of ancient times.

²²For Moses said to the fathers, A prophet like me shall the Lord your God raise up for you from among your brethren; him shall you hear in all things that he shall say to you. ²³And it shall come to pass, that every soul that will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people. ²⁴And all the prophets, from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have also foretold these days. ²⁵You are the sons of the prophets, and of the covenant that God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, And in your offspring shall all the families of the earth be blessed. ²⁶To you first, God, having raised up his Son Jesus, has sent him to bless you, in turning every one of you away from his iniquities.

IV. ¹While they were speaking to the people, the priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them, ²being vexed because they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead. ³And they laid hands on them, and put them in prison till the next day, for it was already evening. ⁴But many of those who heard the word, believed: and the number of the men was about five thousand.

⁵And it came to pass, on the next day, that their rulers and elders and scribes, ⁶and Annas the chief priest, and Caiaphas and John and Alexander, and as many as were of the family of the chief priest, met together in Jerusalem. ⁷And when they had made them stand in the midst, they asked: By what power, or by what name have you done this? ⁸Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them: Rulers of the people,

and elders of Israel, ⁹if we are this day examined with respect unto the good deed done to the infirm man, by what means he has been saved, ¹⁰be it known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead, by him does this man stand before you in health. ¹¹This is the stone that was rejected with contempt by you builders, which has become the head of the corner. ¹²And there is salvation in no other; nor, indeed, is there another name under heaven, given among men, by which we must be saved.

¹³Now, when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and plain men, they were astonished; and they also recognized them, that they had been with Jesus; ¹⁴and, seeing the man who had been cured standing with them, they had nothing to say in reply. ¹⁵But, having commanded them to go aside out of the Sanhedrim, they consulted with one another, ¹⁶saying: What shall we do with these men? For that an evident sign has been done by them, is manifest to all that dwell in Jerusalem, and we can not deny it. ¹⁷But that it may spread no further among the people, let us severely threaten them, so that they speak no more to any man in this name. ¹⁸And they called them in, and commanded them to speak no more at all, nor to teach, in the name of Jesus.

¹⁹But Peter and John answering them, said: Whether it is right in the sight of God to obey you rather than God, judge you. ²⁰For we can not but speak the things that we have seen and heard. ²¹And when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing for which they could punish them, because of the people; for they all glorified God on account of that which had been done; ²²for the man on whom this sign of healing had been performed was more than forty years old.

²³And having been released, they went to their own, and told all that the chief priests and elders had said to them. ²⁴And when they heard it, they lifted up their voice with one consent to God, and said: Lord, thou art God, who didst make the heaven and the earth and the sea, and all things that are in them; who, by the mouth of David thy servant, didst say, ²⁵Why did the heathen rage, and the people devise vain things?

²⁶The kings of the land stood up, and the rulers met together against the Lord and against his anointed. ²⁷For, in truth, against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou didst anoint, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, did meet together, ²⁸to do whatever thy hand and thy counsel determined to be done. ²⁹And now, Lord, look upon their threatenings, and grant to thy servants that they may speak thy word with all boldness, ³⁰by stretching out thy hand to heal, that both signs and wonders may be done through the name of thy holy child Jesus.

³¹And when they had prayed, the place in which they were assembled was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and spoke the word of God with boldness.

³²And the multitude of believers were of one heart and of one soul; and no one said that any part of his possessions was his own; but they had all things in common. ³³And with great power did the apostles bear testimony to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great grace was on them all. ³⁴Nor, indeed, was there any needy person among them; for as many as were owners of lands or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of what had been sold, ³⁵and laid them down at the feet of the apostles; and distribution was made to every one as he had need.

³⁶And Joses, who, by the apostles, was surnamed Barnabas, (which name, when translated, is, Son of consolation,) a Levite, by birth a Cyprian, ³⁷having land, sold it, and brought the money and laid it at the feet of the apostles.

V. ¹But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, ²and kept back part of the price, and his wife was conscious of it; and he brought a certain part of it, and laid it at the feet of the apostles. ³But Peter said: Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart, that you should attempt to deceive the Holy Spirit, and keep back part of the price of the land? ⁴While it remained *unsold*, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not at your own disposal? Why have you purposed this thing in your heart? You have not lied to men, but to God. ⁵And when Ananias heard these words, he fell down, and expired. And great fear came on all that heard these things. ⁶And the young men arose and wound him in his mantle, and carried him out, and buried him.

⁷ And after an interval of about three hours, his wife, not knowing what had been done, came in. ⁸ And Peter answered her: Tell me, did you sell the land for so much? She replied: Yes; for so much. ⁹ But Peter said to her: Why is it that you have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? Behold, the feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they shall carry you out. ¹⁰ And she immediately fell down at his feet, and expired. And the young men came in and found her dead; and they carried her out, and buried her by the side of her husband. ¹¹ And great fear came on all the church, and on all that heard these things.

¹² And many signs and wonders were done among the people by the hands of the apostles; (and they were all with one consent in Solomon's porch. ¹³ And no one of the rest durst join himself to them; but the people magnified them. ¹⁴ And believers in the Lord were more and more added to them, multitudes both of men and women;) ¹⁵ so that they brought the sick out along the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that even the shadow of Peter, as he passed along, might fall on some of them. ¹⁶ And many people of the cities round about came to Jerusalem, bringing the sick, and those who were troubled by evil spirits, all of whom were cured.

¹⁷ But the chief priest arose, and all that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees,) and were filled with indignation; ¹⁸ and they laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the public prison. ¹⁹ But an angel of the Lord opened the doors of the prison by night, and brought them out, and said: ²⁰ Go, stand in the temple, and speak to the people all the words of this life. ²¹ And having heard this, they entered the temple, early in the morning, and taught. But the chief priest, and those who were with him, came and called together the Sanhedrim, and all the eldership of the sons of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

²² But when the attendants came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and reported, ²³ saying: We found the prison closed with all safety, and the guards standing before the doors; but when we had opened, we found no one within. ²⁴ When the priest and the captain of the temple and the chief priests heard these words, they were in doubt about them,

what this could mean. ²⁵ And some one came and reported to them: Behold, the men whom you put in prison are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.

²⁶ Then went the captain with the attendants, and brought them without violence; for they feared the people, lest they should be stoned. ²⁷ And when they had brought them, they made them stand before the Sanhedrim; and the chief priest asked them, ²⁸ saying: Did we not strictly charge you not to teach in this name? And behold, you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching, and you intend to bring this man's blood upon us.

²⁹ But Peter and the apostles answered and said: We must obey God rather than men. ³⁰ The God of our fathers has raised up Jesus, whom you slew by hanging him on a tree. ³¹ Him has God exalted to his right hand to be a Prince and a Savior, in order to give to Israel repentance and remission of sins: ³² and we are witnesses of these things, and so is the Holy Spirit also, whom God has given to them that obey him.

³³ And when they heard this, they were enraged; and they determined to put them to death. ³⁴ Then arose a certain man in the Sanhedrim, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a teacher of the law, who was honored by all the people; and he commanded them to put the apostles out for a little while, ³⁵ and said to them: Men of Israel, consider well with yourselves what you are about to do to these men. ³⁶ For before these days Theudas arose, declaring himself to be some great one; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves; and he was slain; and all, as many as believed him, were scattered and brought to naught. ³⁷ After this man, Judas the Galilean arose, in the days of the enrollment, and drew over many people after him; and he was destroyed, and all, as many as believed him, were scattered. ³⁸ And now I say to you, keep away from these men, and let them alone; for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to an end; ³⁹ but if it is of God, you can not bring it to an end: and take heed, lest you be found fighting also against God.

⁴⁰ And they were persuaded by him; and when they had called the apostles in and scourged them, they commanded them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. ⁴¹ Then, they went from the presence of the Sanhedrim,

rejoicing that they were thought worthy to suffer shame for his name's sake.⁴² And daily in the temple, and from house to house, they ceased not to teach and to preach Jesus the Christ.

VI. ¹In those days, when the disciples were increasing in number, there arose a murmuring of the Hellenists against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration. ²And the twelve called the multitude of the disciples to them, and said: It is not right that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. ³Therefore, brethren, select from among yourselves seven men, of good report, full of the Holy Spirit and of wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business: ⁴but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and to the ministry of the word.

⁵And the speech pleased the whole multitude; and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and Philip and Prochorus and Nicanor and Timon and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte of Antioch, ⁶whom they set before the apostles. And when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

⁷And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples in Jerusalem was greatly multiplied; and a great multitude of the priests became obedient to the faith.

⁸And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great wonders and signs among the people. ⁹Then there arose some who belonged to the synagogue called the synagogue of the Freedmen, and some of the Cyrenians and Alexandrians, and of those who were from Cilicia and Asia, and they disputed with Stephen. ¹⁰And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit with which he spoke. ¹¹Then they instigated men to say: We have heard him speak impious words against Moses, and against God.

¹²And they excited the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and took him by violence, and brought him into the Sanhedrim. ¹³And they brought forward false witnesses, who said: This man ceases not to speak words against this holy place, and the law. ¹⁴For we have heard him say, that this Jesus the Nazarene will destroy this place, and will change the customs which Moses delivered to us. ¹⁵And all that sat in the Sanhedrim, looking earnestly upon him, saw his face that it was like the face of an angel.

VII. ¹And the chief priest said: Are these things so? ²He replied: Brethren and fathers, hear: The God of glory appeared to our father Abraham, while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, ³and said to him: Get out from your land, and from your kindred, and come into a land that I will show you. ⁴Then he departed from the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran; and thence, after his father died, he removed into this land, in which you now dwell. ⁵And he gave him no inheritance in it, not a foot breadth: and yet he promised to give it for a possession to him, and to his posterity after him, when as yet he had no child.

⁶And God spoke thus: That his posterity should sojourn in a strange land, and they should enslave them and afflict them, for four hundred years. ⁷And the nation to which they shall be in bondage I will judge, said God; and after that, they shall come forth and serve me in this place. ⁸And he gave him the covenant of circumcision, and thus he begot Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day; and Isaac begot Jacob, and Jacob begot the twelve patriarchs.

⁹And the patriarchs, moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him, ¹⁰and delivered him from all his afflictions, and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh, king of Egypt: and he made him governor over Egypt, and his whole house. ¹¹And there came a famine, and great affliction on the whole land of Egypt, and of Chanaan: and our fathers found no sustenance. ¹²But when Jacob heard that there was grain in Egypt, he sent forth our fathers the first time: ¹³and, on their second visit, Joseph made himself known to his brothers, and the kindred of Joseph were made known to Pharaoh. ¹⁴And Joseph sent and called to him his father Jacob, and all his kindred, seventy-five souls. ¹⁵And Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, himself and our fathers; ¹⁶and they were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulcher which Abraham bought for its value in silver, from the sons of Emmor, the father of Sychem.

¹⁷And as the time of the promise which God had made with an oath to Abraham drew near, the people increased and multiplied in Egypt, ¹⁸till another king arose, who knew not Joseph. ¹⁹He dealt insidiously with our race,

and afflicted our fathers, so that they exposed their infants, in order that they might not live.

²⁰ At which time Moses was born; and he was exceedingly beautiful, and was nursed three months in his father's house. ²¹ But having been exposed, the daughter of Pharaoh took him up, and educated him as her own son. ²² And Moses was instructed in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds. ²³ When he had completed his fortieth year, it came into his heart to visit his brethren, the sons of Israel. ²⁴ And seeing one of them unjustly treated, he defended and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian. ²⁵ And he supposed that his brethren would understand that, by his hand, God would give them salvation: but they understood not.

²⁶ And on the next day he showed himself to them, as they were fighting, and endeavored to persuade them to peace, saying, Men, you are brothers: why do you injure one another? ²⁷ But he that was doing the injury to his neighbor, thrust him away, saying, Who made you a ruler or a judge over us? ²⁸ Do you intend to kill me, as you killed the Egyptian yesterday? ²⁹ And at that saying Moses fled, and became a resident in the land of Midian, where he begot two sons. ³⁰ And when forty years were completed, there appeared to him, in the wilderness of Mount Sinai, an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush. ³¹ When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight, and as he was drawing near to observe it, the voice of the Lord came to him: ³² I am the God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. And Moses trembled, and durst not observe it. ³³ Then said the Lord to him: Loose your shoes from your feet; for the place in which you stand is holy ground. ³⁴ I have surely seen the affliction of my people who are in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and I have come down to deliver them; and now come, and I will send you into Egypt.

³⁵ This Moses, whom they rejected, saying, Who made you a ruler and a judge? him God sent as a ruler and as a redeemer, by the hand of the angel that appeared to him in the bush. ³⁶ He brought them out, after he had performed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and at the Red Sea, and in the wilderness, forty years. ³⁷ This is that Moses, who said to the sons of Israel, A prophet like me will the Lord your God

raise up for you from among your brethren; him shall you hear.

³⁸ This is he who was in the congregation in the wilderness with the angel that spoke to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers; he received the living oracles, that he might give them to us. ³⁹ To him our fathers were not willing to be obedient; but they rejected him, and turned back in their hearts to Egypt, ⁴⁰ saying to Aaron: Make us gods that shall go before us; for, as for this Moses, who brought us out of the land of Egypt, we know not what has become of him. ⁴¹ And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice to the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands. ⁴² But God turned and delivered them up to serve the host of heaven, as it is written in the book of the prophets: Your victims and your sacrifices did you offer to me for forty years in the wilderness, O house of Israel? ⁴³ Yes, you took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your God Remphan, images which you made to worship; and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

⁴⁴ The tabernacle of the testimony was with our fathers in the wilderness, *built* as he who spoke to Moses commanded him to build it, according to the pattern which he had seen: ⁴⁵ which our fathers, who were with Joshua, received by succession, and brought into the land possessed by the Gentiles, whom God continued to drive out from the face of our fathers till the days of David, ⁴⁶ who found favor before God, and desired to find a dwelling-place for the God of Jacob. ⁴⁷ But Solomon built him a house. ⁴⁸ Yet the Most High dwells not in temples made with hands, as says the prophet: ⁴⁹ Heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool. What house will you build me? says the Lord; or what is the place of my rest? ⁵⁰ Has not my hand made all these things?

⁵¹ You stiff-necked, and uncircumcised in heart and in ears, you do always resist the Holy Spirit; as your fathers did, so also do you. ⁵² Which of the prophets did not your fathers persecute? They slew also those who foretold the coming of the Just One, of whom you have now become the betrayers and murderers; ⁵³ who received the law by the appointment of angels, and have not kept it.

⁵⁴ When they heard these things, they were enraged in their hearts, and gnashed upon him

with their teeth. ⁵⁵But being full of the Holy Spirit, he looked earnestly up into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God; ⁵⁶and he said: Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing at the right hand of God.

⁵⁷And they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and, with one consent, rushed upon him, ⁵⁸and drove him out of the city, and stoned him. And the witnesses laid down their clothes at the feet of a young man called Saul. ⁵⁹And they stoned Stephen while he was calling on the Lord, and saying: Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. ⁶⁰And he kneeled down and cried with a loud voice: Lord, let not this sin stand against them. And when he had said this, he fell asleep. And Saul was well pleased with his death.

VIII. ¹And at that time there was a great persecution against the church that was in Jerusalem; and they were all dispersed throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles. ²But devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him. ³But Saul attempted to destroy the church; entering every house, and dragging men and women, he delivered them up to prison.

⁴Then they that were dispersed went everywhere preaching the word. ⁵And Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached the Christ to them. ⁶And the multitudes with one mind gave heed to the things which were spoken by Philip, when they heard, and saw the signs which he did. ⁷For unclean spirits, crying with a loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them, and many paralytics and lame persons were cured. ⁸And there was great joy in that city.

⁹But there was a certain man, named Simon, who had, before this time, been practicing magic in the city, and astonishing the people of Samaria, saying that he was some great one; ¹⁰to whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying: This man is the great power of God. ¹¹And they gave heed to him because he had, for a long time, astonished them with his magic arts. ¹²But when they believed Philip, who preached the good news concerning the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were immersed, both men and women.

¹³And Simon himself also believed; and after he was immersed, he continued with Philip; and, seeing the mighty deeds and the signs which were done, he was astonished.

¹⁴Now when the apostles, who were in Jerusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent to them Peter and John; ¹⁵who, when they had gone down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Spirit. ¹⁶For he had not yet fallen on any of them; only they had been immersed into the name of the Lord Jesus. ¹⁷Then they laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

¹⁸And when Simon saw that the Holy Spirit was given through the laying on of the hands of the apostles, he offered them money, ¹⁹saying: Give me, also, this authority, that whoever I shall lay my hands on, may receive the Holy Spirit. ²⁰But Peter said to him: Your money perish with you, because you thought that the gift of God might be purchased with money. ²¹You have neither part nor share in this matter; for your heart is not right in the sight of God. ²²Repent, therefore, of this your wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the purpose of your heart may be forgiven you. ²³For I perceive that you are in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity. ²⁴But Simon answered and said: Pray you both to the Lord for me, that none of the things which you have spoken come upon me.

²⁵Then, when they had given their testimony, and preached the word of the Lord, they returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

²⁶And an angel of the Lord spoke to Philip, saying: Arise, and go toward the south, to the road that leads from Jerusalem to Gaza; this is desert. ²⁷And he arose and went. And behold, a man of Ethiopia, a eunuch of great authority under Candace, the queen of the Ethiopians, who had charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem to worship, ²⁸was returning, and, sitting in his chariot, read the prophet Isaiah.

²⁹And the Spirit said to Philip: Go forward and join yourself to this chariot. ³⁰And Philip ran forward, and heard him reading the prophet Isaiah; and he said: Do you understand what you are reading? ³¹He answered: How can I, unless some one instruct me? And he invited Philip to come up and sit with him. ³²The

passage of the scripture which he was reading, was this: As a sheep for the slaughter was he led; and as a lamb before his shearer is dumb, so opened he not his mouth ³³in his humiliation. The sentence against him was taken away; but who shall describe the men of his generation? For his life was taken from the earth. ³⁴And the eunuch answered Philip, and said: I pray you, of whom speaks the prophet this? Of himself, or of some other man? ³⁵And Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached to him Jesus.

³⁶ And as they went along the road, they came to some water; and the eunuch said: See, here is water; what hinders me from being immersed? ³⁸ And he commanded the chariot to stand still; and they both went down into the water, both Philip and the eunuch, and he immersed him. ³⁹ And when they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip; and the eunuch saw him no more, for he went on his way rejoicing. ⁴⁰ But Philip was found at Azotus, and, passing through, he preached the gospel in all the cities, till he came to Cæsarea

IX. ¹ And Saul, still breathing out threatening and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went to the chief priest, ² and asked of him letters to Damascus, for the synagogues, that, if he should find any who were of this persuasion, either men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem.

³ And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus; and suddenly there shone round about him a light from heaven. ⁴ And when he had fallen to the earth, he heard a voice saying to him: Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me? ⁵ He answered: Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said: I am Jesus, whom you persecute. ⁶ But rise, and go into the city, and it shall be told you what you must do. ⁷ The men who journeyed with him stood amazed; for they heard a voice, but saw no one. ⁸ And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no one; but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. ⁹ And he was three days without sight, and neither ate nor drank.

¹⁰ Now there was a certain disciple in Damascus, named Ananias; and the Lord said to him in a vision: Ananias. He answered: Behold me, Lord. ¹¹ And the Lord said to him: Arise, and go

into the street that is called Straight, and inquire at the house of Judas for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he is praying; ¹² and he has seen in a vision a man named Ananias, coming in and laying his hand on him, that he may receive his sight. ¹³ But Ananias answered: Lord, I have heard from many of this man, how much evil he has done to thy saints in Jerusalem; ¹⁴ and here he has authority from the chief priests to bind all that call upon thy name. ¹⁵ But the Lord said to him: Go; for he is a vessel chosen by me to bear my name before nations and kings, and the sons of Israel. ¹⁶ For I will show him what great things he must suffer for my name.

¹⁷ And Ananias went, and entered the house, and laying his hands on him, said: Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, who appeared to you on the road by which you came, has sent me, that you may receive your sight, and be filled with the Holy Spirit. ¹⁸ And immediately there fell from his eyes something like scales, and he instantly received his sight; and he arose, and was immersed. ¹⁹ And, having taken food, he was strengthened.

And he was with the disciples in Damascus for some days; ²⁰ and immediately he preached Jesus in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God. ²¹ And all that heard him were astonished, and said: Is not this he who destroyed in Jerusalem those that call on this name, and who has come hither for this purpose, that he might carry them bound to the chief priests? ²² But Saul increased the more in strength, and confuted the Jews that dwelt in Damascus, proving that this is the Christ. ²³ And, after many days had passed, the Jews determined to kill him. ²⁴ And their plot was made known to Saul; and they watched the gates day and night, that they might kill him. ²⁵ But the disciples took him by night, and let him down through the veil in a basket,

²⁶ And having come to Jerusalem, he attempted to associate with the disciples: and they were all afraid of him, for they did not believe that he was a disciple. ²⁷ But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and told them how he had seen the Lord on the road, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had boldly preached in Damascus in the name of Jesus. ²⁸ And he was with them in Jerusalem, coming in and going out; and,

speaking boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, ²⁹ he conversed and reasoned with the Hellenists; but they undertook to kill him. ³⁰ And when the brethren learned this, they brought him down to Cæsarea, and sent him out to Tarsus.

³¹ Then the churches throughout the whole of Judea and Galilee and Samaria had peace, and were edified; and, walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, they were multiplied.

³² And it came to pass that Peter, passing through all the places, came down also to the saints that dwelt in Lydda. ³³ And he found there a certain man named Æneas, who was a paralytic, and had kept his bed for eight years.

³⁴ And Peter said to him: Æneas, Jesus the Christ restores you to health; arise, and spread your bed for yourself. And he immediately arose; ³⁵ and all that dwelt in Lydda and Saron saw him; and they turned to the Lord.

³⁶ Now there was in Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which name, when translated, is Dorcas. She was full of good works and deeds of charity which she did. ³⁷ And it came to pass, in those days, that she was taken sick, and died. And when they had washed her, they laid her in an upper room. ³⁸ And as Lydda was near to Joppa, the disciples, having heard that Peter was there, sent two men to him, requesting him to make no delay in coming to them.

³⁹ Then Peter arose, and went with them; and when he had come, they brought him into the upper room; and all the widows stood by him weeping, and showing the coats and garments that Dorcas made while she was with them. ⁴⁰ But Peter put them all out, and kneeled down and prayed; and turning to the body, he said: Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes; and when she saw Peter, she sat up. ⁴¹ And he gave her his hand, and raised her up. And when he had called in the saints and the widows, he presented her alive. ⁴² And it was known throughout all Joppa, and many believed on the Lord. ⁴³ And it came to pass, that he remained many days in Joppa with one Simon, a tanner.

X. ¹ Now there was a certain man in Cæsarea, named Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band, ² a devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, who did many acts of charity to the people, and prayed to God always. ³ He distinctly saw, in a

vision, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying to him, Cornelius.

⁴ And having looked steadily on him, he was afraid, and said: What is it, Lord? He said to him: Your prayers and your charitable deeds have come up for a memorial before God. ⁵ And now send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, who is surnamed Peter; ⁶ he lodges with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea. ⁷ When the angel who spoke to him had departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier, one of those who waited on him, ⁸ and having made known all things to them, he sent them to Joppa.

⁹ And on the morrow, as they were going on their journey, and were drawing near to the city, Peter went up on the house-top to pray, about the sixth hour. ¹⁰ And he became very hungry, and desired to eat; but while they were making ready, he fell into a trance; ¹¹ and he saw heaven opened, and some vessel, like a great sheet, descending, bound by the four corners, and let down to the earth. ¹² In this were all kinds of four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts and creeping things and birds of the air. ¹³ And there came a voice to him: Rise, Peter, kill and eat. ¹⁴ But Peter said: By no means, Lord; for I have never eaten any thing common or unclean. ¹⁵ And the voice came to him again a second time: What God has cleansed, you must not call common. ¹⁶ This was done the third time; and the vessel was taken up again into heaven.

¹⁷ Now, while Peter was perplexed within himself about the meaning of the vision which he had seen, behold, the men who had been sent from Cornelius, having made inquiry for the house of Simon, stood before the gate. ¹⁸ And they called and asked whether Simon, who was surnamed Peter, lodged there. ¹⁹ While Peter was thinking of the vision, the Spirit said to him: Behold, three men ask for you: ²⁰ arise then, and go down, and go with them without hesitation, for I have sent them.

²¹ And Peter came down to the men, and said: Behold, I am he whom you seek; what is the cause of your coming? ²² They replied: Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that fears God, and of good report among the whole nation of the Jews, was instructed by a holy angel to call you to his house, and to hear words

from you.²³ Then he called them in, and lodged them.

On the morrow he arose, and went with them; and some of the brethren from Joppa accompanied him.²⁴ And on the next day, they entered Cæsarea. And Cornelius was expecting them, and had called together his relatives and near friends.²⁵ And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and did him homage.²⁶ But Peter raised him up, saying: Stand up; I also am a man.²⁷ And, conversing with him, he went in, and found many that had come together.

²⁸ And he said to them: You know that it is unlawful for a Jew to associate with one of another nation, or to go into his house. But God has showed me that I must not call any man common or unclean.²⁹ For this reason, when I was sent for, I came without making objection. I ask, therefore, for what purpose have you sent for me?³⁰ And Cornelius replied: Four days ago, I was fasting till this hour; and, at the ninth hour, I was praying in my house; and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,³¹ and said: Cornelius, your prayer is heard, and your deeds of charity are remembered before God.³² Send, therefore, to Joppa, and call for Simon, who is surnamed Peter: he lodges in the house of Simon a tanner, by the sea; who, when he comes, will speak to you.³³ Therefore, I immediately sent to you; and you have done well in coming. Now, therefore, we are all here present before God, to hear all things that are given in charge to you by God.

³⁴ And Peter opened his mouth, and said: In truth, I perceive that God is no respecter of persons;³⁵ but, in every nation, he that fears him and works righteousness is accepted by him.³⁶ The word which he sent to the sons of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ, (he is Lord of all,) ³⁷ that word, you know, which was published through the whole of Judea, beginning from Galilee, after the immersion that John preached;³⁸ how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit, and with power; who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed by the devil; for God was with him.³⁹ And we are witnesses of all that he did, both in the country of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew by hanging him on a tree.⁴⁰ Him God raised up the third day, and

caused him to appear,⁴¹ not to all the people, but to witnesses who were before appointed by God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him, after he rose from the dead.

⁴² And he commanded us to preach to the people, and to testify that this is he who has been appointed by God as the judge of the living and the dead.⁴³ To him all the prophets bear testimony, that whoever believes on him shall receive remission of sins through his name.

⁴⁴ While Peter was speaking these things, the Holy Spirit fell on all that heard the word.⁴⁵ And the believers that were of the circumcision, as many as had come with Peter, were astonished, because on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Spirit:⁴⁶ for they heard them speaking with tongues, and magnifying God. Then Peter answered:⁴⁷ Can any one forbid the water, that these should not be immersed, who have received the Holy Spirit as well as we?⁴⁸ And he commanded them to be immersed in the name of the Lord. Then they besought him to remain some days.

XI. ¹ And the apostles and brethren that were in Judea, heard that the Gentiles also had received the word of God.² And when Peter went up to Jerusalem, those who were of the circumcision contended with him,³ saying: You went in to uncircumcised men, and ate with them.

⁴ And Peter began, and laid the matter before them in order, saying: ⁵ I was in the city of Joppa, praying; and, while in a trance, I saw a vision, some vessel like a great sheet, descending, let down from heaven by the four corners; and it came even to me.⁶ When I had looked attentively into it, I observed and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts and creeping things and birds of the air.⁷ And I heard a voice saying to me, Rise, Peter, kill and eat.⁸ But I said, By no means, Lord; for nothing common or unclean has ever entered my mouth.⁹ But the voice answered me a second time from heaven, What God has cleansed, you must not call common.¹⁰ This was done the third time, and all was drawn up again into heaven.

¹¹ And behold, three men who had been sent to me from Cæsarea, immediately came to the house where I was.¹² And the Spirit commanded me to go with them without hesitation. And these six brethren accompanied me. And

we entered the man's house: ¹³ and he told us how he had seen an angel in his house, standing and saying to him, Send to Joppa and call for Simon, who is surnamed Peter; ¹⁴ he will tell you words by which you and all your house shall be saved.

¹⁵ And as I began to speak, the Holy Spirit fell on them, as on us at the beginning. ¹⁶ Then I remembered the word of the Lord, as he said, John immersed in water, but you shall be immersed in the Holy Spirit. ¹⁷ If, then, God gave them the like gift that he gave to us who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I, that I could withstand God? ¹⁸ And when they heard these things, they ceased to contend; and they glorified God, saying: Then, indeed, has God given to the Gentiles also repentance in order to life.

¹⁹ Now those who had been dispersed by the persecution that arose after the death of Stephen, traveled as far as Phenicia and Cyprus and Antioch, speaking the word to none but Jews. ²⁰ But some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who, when they had come to Antioch, spoke to the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus. ²¹ And the hand of the Lord was with them, and a great number believed, and turned to the Lord.

²² And the report concerning them came to the ears of the church that was in Jerusalem; and they sent out Barnabas to go as far as Antioch. ²³ When he had come, and had seen the grace of God, he rejoiced; and he exhorted them all to remain, with purpose of heart, faithful to the Lord. ²⁴ For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith. And a great multitude was added to the Lord.

²⁵ And Barnabas went to Tarsus, to seek for Saul; ²⁶ and when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. And it came to pass, that they met together in the church for a whole year, and taught a great multitude; and the disciples were called Christians first at Antioch.

²⁷ In those days prophets came from Jerusalem to Antioch. ²⁸ And one of them, named Agabus, rose and made known, by the Spirit, that a great famine was about to come on the whole habitable land; which took place in the days of Claudius. ²⁹ And every one of the disciples determined, as he had the means, to send relief to the brethren that dwelt in Judea;

³⁰ which also they did; and they sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

XII. ¹ At that time Herod the king undertook to afflict some of the church. ² And he slew with the sword James the brother of John.

³ And when he saw that it pleased the Jews, he apprehended Peter also. Those were the days of unleavened bread. ⁴ And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four tetrads of soldiers to guard him, intending to bring him out to the people after the passover. ⁵ Therefore, Peter was kept in prison; but fervent prayer to God was made for him by the church.

⁶ When Herod was about to bring him out, on that night, Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains; and the keepers before the doors were guarding the prison. ⁷ And behold, an angel of the Lord stood by him, and a light shone in the prison. And he gently struck Peter on the side, and awoke him, saying: Arise quickly; and his chains fell from his hands. ⁸ And the angel said to him: Gird yourself, and bind on your sandals; and he did so. And he said to him: Throw your mantle around you, and follow me. ⁹ And he went out, and followed him; and he knew not that what was done by the angel was real, but thought that he saw a vision.

¹⁰ And when they had passed through the first and the second guard, they came to the iron gate that leads to the city, which opened to them of its own accord. And they went out, and passed on through one street; and the angel immediately departed from him. ¹¹ And when Peter came to himself, he said: Now I know, in truth, that the Lord has sent his angel, and has delivered me from the hand of Herod, and from all that was expected by the Jewish people.

¹² And being aware of his condition, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, who is surnamed Mark, where many had met together, and were praying. ¹³ And when he knocked at the door of the entrance, a maid-servant, named Rhoda, came to listen. ¹⁴ And recognizing Peter's voice, she did not open the entrance for joy, but ran in and told that Peter was standing before the entrance. ¹⁵ And they said to her: You are mad. But she confidently affirmed that it was even so. Then said they: It is his angel. ¹⁶ But Peter continued to knock; and

when they had opened the door, they saw him, and were astonished.¹⁷ But, having made a sign to them with his hand, that they should keep silence, he made known to them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison, and he said: Tell this to James, and to the brethren. And he went out, and departed to another place.

¹⁸ And when it was day, there was no little confusion among the soldiers as to what had become of Peter.¹⁹ But Herod, when he had sought for him, and found him not, examined the keepers, and commanded them to be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarean, and there he remained.

²⁰ And he was intending to make war upon the Tyrians and Sidonians; but they came with one consent to him; and having made Blastus, who had charge of the king's bed-chamber, their friend, they asked for peace, because their country was supported by that of the king.²¹ And on an appointed day, Herod, having arrayed himself in royal apparel, and seated himself on his throne, delivered an oration to them.²² And the people shouted: It is the voice of God, and not of man.²³ And immediately an angel of the Lord smote him, because he did not give God the glory. And having been eaten by worms, he expired.

²⁴ But the word of the Lord increased and multiplied.²⁵ And Barnabas and Saul, after they had fulfilled their ministry, returned from Jerusalem, taking with them John, whose surname was Mark.

XIII. ¹Now there were certain prophets and teachers in the church that was at Antioch; Barnabas, and Simeon, who is called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, who was brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.² And while they were ministering to the Lord, and fasting, the Holy Spirit said: Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul, to the work to which I have called them.³ Then, after they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

⁴ Therefore, having been sent forth by the Holy Spirit, they went down to Seleucia, and thence sailed to Cyprus.⁵ And while they were in Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogue of the Jews; and they had John as their attendant.

⁶ And having gone through the island as far as Paphos, they found a certain magician, a

Jewish false prophet, whose name was Bar-jesus;⁷ and he was with the proconsul, Sergius Paulus, who was a man of intelligence. This man called for Barnabas and Saul, and expressed an earnest wish to hear the word of God.⁸ But the magician Elymas (for this is his name, when translated) withheld them, desiring to turn away the proconsul from the faith.⁹ Then Saul, who is also called Paul, filled with the Holy Spirit, and looking earnestly upon him,¹⁰ said: O full of all deceit and all wickedness, child of the devil, enemy of all righteousness, will you not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?¹¹ And now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon you, and you shall be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness, and he went about and sought some to lead him by the hand.¹² Then the proconsul, seeing what was done, believed, being amazed at the teaching of the Lord.

¹³ And Paul and his companions put to sea from Paphos, and went to Perga in Pamphylia. But John withdrew from them, and returned to Jerusalem.¹⁴ But having passed through from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia; and on the sabbath-day they went into the synagogue, and sat down.¹⁵ After the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent to them, saying: Brethren, if you have a word of exhortation for the people, speak.

¹⁶ Then Paul arose, and waving his hand, said: Men of Israel, and you who fear God, give audience.¹⁷ The God of this people chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they sojourned in the land of Egypt, and with an uplifted arm he brought them out from it.¹⁸ And for about forty years, he cherished them in the wilderness.¹⁹ And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Chanaan, he divided their land among them by lot.²⁰ And after that he gave them judges, for about four hundred and fifty years, till Samuel the prophet.

²¹ And afterward they asked for a king, and God gave them Saul the son of Kis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, for forty years.²² And when he had removed him, he raised up David to be their king; to whom he gave this testimony: I have found David the son of Jesse a man after my own heart, who will do all my will.²³ From the posterity of this man, God, according to his promise, raised up for Israel a Savior, Jesus;

²⁴John having first preached, before his coming, the immersion of repentance to all the people of Israel.

²⁵And as John was finishing his course, he said: Who do you suppose that I am? I am not he; but behold, there is coming after me one, the sandals of whose feet I am not worthy to loose.

²⁶Brethren, sons of the family of Abraham, and those among you who fear God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. ²⁷For those who dwell in Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they did not know him, nor the words of the prophets, which are read every sabbath-day, have fulfilled them in condemning him. ²⁸And though they found no cause of death, yet they demanded of Pilate that he should be slain. ²⁹And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a sepulcher. ³⁰But God raised him from the dead. ³¹And he was seen for many days by those who came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses to the people.

³²And we preach to you good news concerning the promise made to our fathers, ³³that God has fulfilled the same to us, their children, by raising up Jesus, as it is written in the second Psalm: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee. ³⁴But that he raised him from the dead, no more to return to corruption, he has spoken thus: I will give you the sure mercies of David. ³⁵For which reason he says also in another Psalm: Thou wilt not suffer thy Holy One to see corruption. ³⁶For David, after serving the purpose of God in his own generation, fell asleep, and was laid with his fathers, and saw corruption. ³⁷But he whom God raised up did not see corruption.

³⁸Be it known to you, therefore, brethren, that through this man is preached to you the remission of sins: ³⁹and by him, every one that believes is justified from all things, from which you could not be justified by the law of Moses. ⁴⁰Take heed, therefore, lest that which is spoken in the prophets come upon you: ⁴¹Behold, you despisers, and wonder, and perish. For I work a work in your days, a work which you will not believe, though one fully declare it to you.

⁴²And as they were departing from the synagogue, they were requested to speak these things to them on the next sabbath. ⁴³Now, after the

congregation was dismissed, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who spoke to them, and persuaded them to continue faithful to the grace of God. ⁴⁴And on the next sabbath-day, almost the whole city met together to hear the word of God.

⁴⁵But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and reviling. ⁴⁶But Paul and Barnabas, speaking boldly, said: It was necessary that the word of God should be spoken to you first: but since you reject it, and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, lo! we turn to the Gentiles. ⁴⁷For thus has the Lord given us commandment: I have placed thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be for salvation to the most distant part of the earth.

⁴⁸When the Gentiles heard this they rejoiced, and glorified the word of the Lord; and as many as were determined to obtain eternal life, believed. ⁴⁹And the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole of that region.

⁵⁰But the Jews incited the devout and influential women, and the first men of the city, and raised a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them from their borders. ⁵¹But they shook off the dust from their feet against them, and went to Iconium. ⁵²And the disciples were filled with joy and the Holy Spirit.

XIV. ¹And it came to pass in Iconium, that they went together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spoke that a great multitude of the Jews and Greeks believed. ²But the unbelieving Jews excited and embittered the minds of the Gentiles against the brethren. ³Therefore, they continued a long time, and spoke boldly in the Lord, who gave testimony to the word of his grace, by granting signs and wonders to be done by their hands.

⁴But the multitude of the city were divided; and some were with the Jews, and some with the apostles. ⁵But when there was a violent purpose on the part of the Gentiles and of the Jews, with their rulers, to outrage and to stone them, ⁶being aware of it, they fled to the cities of Lycaonia, Lystra, and Derbe, and to the region round about, ⁷and there they preached the gospel.

⁸And there was a certain man in Lystra, without strength in his feet, who sat, for he was

a cripple from his mother's womb, and had never walked.⁹ This man heard Paul speak, who, looking earnestly on him, and seeing that he had faith to be saved,¹⁰ said, with a loud voice: Stand erect upon your feet. And he leaped and walked.¹¹ When the multitude saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voice, and said, in the Lycaonian language: The Gods have come down to us in the likeness of men.¹² And they called Barnabas, Jupiter, and Paul, Mercury, for he was the chief speaker.

¹³ Then the priest of Jupiter, whose temple was before the city, having brought bulls and garlands to the entrance, intended to offer sacrifice, with the multitudes.¹⁴ But when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard of it, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the multitude, crying out,¹⁵ and saying: Men, why are you doing these things? We also are human beings, with passions like your own, and we preach the gospel to you, that you may turn from these vanities to the living God, who made the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and all things that are in them;¹⁶ who, in past generations, permitted all the nations to walk in their own ways;¹⁷ and yet he did not leave himself without testimony, doing good, and giving you rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling your hearts with food and gladness.¹⁸ And with these words they hardly restrained the multitudes from offering sacrifice to them.

¹⁹ Then came thither, from Antioch and Iconium, Jews, who persuaded the multitudes; and having stoned Paul, they dragged him out of the city, supposing that he was dead.²⁰ But while the disciples were standing around him, he arose, and went into the city.

And on the next day, he departed with Barnabas to Derbe;²¹ and when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had made many disciples, they returned to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antioch,²² strengthening the souls of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and saying, that through many afflictions we must enter the kingdom of God.²³ And when they had appointed elders for them in every church, with prayer and fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed.²⁴ And having passed through Pisidia, they came into Pamphylia;²⁵ and when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down to

Attalia:²⁶ thence they sailed to Antioch, from which place they had been commanded to the grace of God, for the work which they had accomplished.

²⁷ And having come and called together the church, they reported all that God had done with them, and that he had opened the door of faith to the Gentiles.²⁸ And they continued a long time with the disciples.

XV. ¹ And certain men came down from Judea, and taught the brethren, saying: Unless you be circumcised, according to the custom of Moses, you can not be saved.² Therefore, after Paul and Barnabas had no little dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain others from among them, should go up to Jerusalem, to the apostles and elders, about this question.³ Being, therefore, conducted on their journey by the church, they passed through Phenicia and Samaria, making known the conversion of the Gentiles; and they gave great joy to all the brethren.⁴ When they arrived at Jerusalem, they were received by the church, and the apostles and elders, and they declared all that God had done with them.⁵ But some of the sect of the Pharisees, who believed, arose, saying, that it was necessary to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

⁶ And the apostles and elders came together to deliberate about this matter.⁷ And after there had been much disputing, Peter arose, and said to them: Brethren, you know that, at the beginning, God made choice among us, that, by my mouth, the Gentiles should hear the word of the Gospel, and believe.⁸ And God, who knows the heart, became a witness for them, by giving them the Holy Spirit, as he gave it also to us;⁹ and he made no distinction between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.¹⁰ Now, therefore, why do you put God to the proof, by placing a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers, nor we ourselves, were able to bear?¹¹ But we believe that we shall be saved, even as they, through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ.

¹² Then all the multitude kept silence, and listened to Barnabas and Paul, while they made known what signs and wonders God had done by them among the Gentiles.

¹³ And after they were silent, James

answered and said: Brethren, hear me; ¹⁴Simeon has declared how God, at the first, did visit the Gentiles, in order to take out from among them a people for his name. ¹⁵And with this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, ¹⁶After this I will return, and build again the tabernacle of David which has fallen down; and I will build again its ruins, and I will set it up; ¹⁷that the rest of men may seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name has been called, says the Lord, who does all these things. ¹⁸Known to God from eternity are all his works. ¹⁹For these reasons, my judgment is, that we give no trouble to those who, from among the Gentiles, have turned to God; ²⁰but that we write to them to abstain from pollutions of idols, and from lewdness, and from what is strangled, and from blood. ²¹For, from ancient times, Moses has, in every city, those who preach him, being read in the synagogue every sabbath-day.

²²Then it pleased the apostles and the elders, with the whole church, to send to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas, chosen men from among themselves; Judas, who was surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren; ²³and they wrote by their hands as follows:

The apostles, and the elders, and the brethren, to the brethren of the Gentiles in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia, greeting: ²⁴Inasmuch as we have heard that certain persons went out from us and troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, That you must be circumcised, and keep the law, to whom we gave no commandment, ²⁵it has seemed good to us, having come together with one mind, to send chosen men to you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, ²⁶men who have endangered their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁷We have sent, therefore, Judas and Silas, who will tell you the same things in word. ²⁸For it has seemed good to the Holy Spirit, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things: ²⁹That you abstain from things sacrificed to idols, and from blood, and from what is strangled, and from lewdness; from which if you keep yourselves carefully, you will do well. Farewell.

³⁰So when these men were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and having assembled the multitude, they delivered this letter. ³¹When they had read it, they rejoiced for the consolation

which it gave. ³²And Judas and Silas, who were also prophets, exhorted the brethren with many words, and strengthened them. ³³And after spending some time, they were dismissed in peace from the brethren, to those who had sent them. ³⁴But it pleased Silas to remain there. ³⁵Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching, with many others, the word of the Lord.

³⁶And, after some days, Paul said to Barnabas, let us return, and visit our brethren in every city in which we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do. ³⁷And Barnabas determined to take with him John, whose surname was Mark. ³⁸But Paul did not think it proper to take with them him who had departed from them from Pamphylia, and did not go with them to the work. ³⁹There was, therefore, a sharp contention, so that they separated from each other: and Barnabas took Mark, and sailed to Cyprus. ⁴⁰But Paul chose Silas, and departed, having been commanded to the grace of God by the brethren. ⁴¹And he passed through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches.

XVI. ¹And he came to Derbe and Lystra; and behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a Jewess, who was a believer; but his father was a Greek. ²A good report was given of him by the brethren in Lystra and Iconium. ³This man Paul wished to go with him: and he took him and circumcised him, on account of the Jews that were in those places: for they all knew that his father was a Greek. ⁴And as they went through the cities, they delivered to them the decrees that had been resolved on by the apostles and elders at Jerusalem, that they might keep them. ⁵Therefore, the churches were established in the faith, and they increased in number daily.

⁶When they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, being forbidden by the Holy Spirit to preach the word in Asia, ⁷and had come to Mysia, they attempted to go into Bithynia; and the Spirit did not permit them. ⁸But having passed by Mysia, they came down to Troas. ⁹And, during the night, a vision appeared to Paul. A certain man of Macedonia stood and besought him, saying: Come over to Macedonia and help us. ¹⁰After he had seen the vision, we immediately endeavored to go into Macedonia, concluding that the Lord had called

us to preach the gospel to them.

¹¹Therefore, setting sail from Troas, we came by a straight course to Samothracia, and, on the following day, to Neapolis, ¹²and thence to Philippi, which is the first city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony. We remained in that city some days: ¹³and on the sabbath-day we went out of the city to the side of a river, where, as usual, was the house of prayer; and we sat down and spoke to the women who had come together. ¹⁴And a certain woman, named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, who worshiped God, heard; whose heart the Lord opened to attend to the things that were spoken by Paul. ¹⁵And when she and her household had been immersed, she besought us, saying: If you judge me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and make it your home. And she constrained us.

¹⁶And it came to pass, that as we were going to the house of prayer, there met us a certain maid-servant that had a spirit of Python, who brought much gain to her masters, by giving responses. ¹⁷She followed Paul and us, and cried out, saying: These men are the servants of the most High God, who show us the way of salvation. ¹⁸And this she continued to do for many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit: I command you, in the name of Jesus Christ, to come out of her. And it came out that very hour.

¹⁹And when her masters saw that the hope of their gain was gone, they seized Paul and Silas, and dragged them into the market to the rulers. ²⁰And having brought them to the magistrates, they said: These men, who are Jews, do greatly trouble our city; ²¹and they teach customs which it is not lawful for us, who are Romans, to receive or to observe. ²²And the multitude rose up together against them; and the magistrates stripped off their clothes, and gave command to beat them with rods. ²³And when they had laid many stripes on them, they threw them into prison, and charged the jailer to keep them securely. ²⁴And having received such a charge, he put them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

²⁵And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sung a hymn to God; and the prisoners were listening to them. ²⁶And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the

prison were shaken; and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bonds were loosed. ²⁷And the jailer, being aroused from sleep, and seeing the doors of the prison open, drew his sword, and was about to kill himself, supposing that the prisoners had fled. ²⁸But Paul called out with a loud voice, saying: Do yourself no harm, for we are all here.

²⁹Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and trembling, he fell down before Paul and Silas; ³⁰and, having brought them out, he said: Sirs, what must I do to be saved? ³¹They replied: Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you and your house shall be saved. ³²And they spoke the word of the Lord to him, and to all that were in his house. ³³And he took them at that hour of the night, and washed the blood from their stripes; and he was immersed, himself and all his, immediately. ³⁴And he brought them into his house, and set food before them, and rejoiced, believing in God, with all his house.

³⁵But when it was day, the magistrates sent the lictors, saying: Release those men. ³⁶And the jailer told these words to Paul: The magistrates have sent to release you. Now, therefore, come out, and go in peace. ³⁷But Paul said to them: Having publicly scourged us uncondemned, us who are Romans, they threw us into prison: and do they now put us out secretly? No, verily: but let them come and lead us out. ³⁸And the lictors told these words to the magistrates: and they were alarmed when they heard that they were Romans; ³⁹and they came, and entreated them, and led them out, and requested them to depart from the city. ⁴⁰And having come out of the prison, they went into the house of Lydia; and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

XVII. ¹And when they had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where there was a synagogue of the Jews. ²And Paul, according to his custom, went in to them, and, for three sabbath-days, he reasoned with them from the Scriptures, ³explaining and affirming that it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead; and that this Jesus whom I preach to you is the Christ. ⁴And some of them believed, and associated themselves with Paul and Silas; of the devout Greeks, a great multitude, and of the chief women, not a few.

⁵ But the unbelieving Jews, taking with them some evil men, who were loungers about the markets, and collecting a mob, set the city in an uproar; and having assaulted the house of Jason, they sought to bring them out to the people. ⁶ But not finding them, they dragged Jason and certain brethren before the rulers of the city, crying out: These men, who have thrown the world into confusion, have come hither also; ⁷ whom Jason has received into his house: and they all act in opposition to the decrees of Cæsar, saying, That there is another king, Jesus. ⁸ And the multitude, and the rulers of the city, were troubled when they heard these things. ⁹ And they took security of Jason, and of the others, and let them go.

¹⁰ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night to Berea; and when they had come, they went into the synagogue of the Jews. ¹¹ These were of a better disposition than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word with all readiness of mind, examining the Scriptures daily, whether these things were so. ¹² Therefore, many of them believed; both of influential women, who were Greeks, and of men, not a few. ¹³ But when the Jews of Thessalonica learned that the word of God was preached by Paul in Berea also, they came thither, and excited the multitude. ¹⁴ Then the brethren immediately sent Paul away, to go as if to the sea; but Silas and Timothy remained there. ¹⁵ And those who conducted Paul brought him to Athens: and having received a commandment for Silas and Timothy, that they should come to him as soon as possible, they departed.

¹⁶ Now while Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred within him, when he saw the city full of idols. ¹⁷ Accordingly, he reasoned in the synagogue with the Jews and devout persons, and in the market daily, with those who chanced to meet him. ¹⁸ And some of the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers disputed with him; and some said: What can this babbler possibly wish to say? Others said: He seems to be a proclaimer of strange demons: for he preached to them Jesus and the Resurrection. ¹⁹ And they took him, and brought him to Mars hill, saying: Are we able to understand what this new teaching is, which is announced by you? ²⁰ For you bring some strange things to our ears: we wish to

understand then what these things mean. ²¹ For all the Athenians and resident strangers have leisure for nothing else than to tell or to hear some new thing.

²² Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars hill, and said: Men of Athens, I perceive that in all respects your reverence for demons excels that of other men. ²³ For as I was passing through, and looking attentively at the objects of your worship, I discovered also an altar with this inscription: TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore you ignorantly worship, him I make known to you. ²⁴ God, who made the world, and all things that are in it, being Lord of heaven and earth, dwells not in temples made with hands; ²⁵ nor is he ministered to by the hands of men, as if he needed any thing: for he himself gives to all life, and breath, and all things: ²⁶ and he has made from one blood every nation of men, that they might dwell on all the face of the earth, having marked out their appointed times, and the bounds of their dwelling: ²⁷ that they might seek for God, if perhaps they would feel after him, and find him, although, indeed, he is not far from every one of us. ²⁸ For in him we live, and move, and have our being: as also some of your own poets have said: For we his offspring are.

²⁹ Therefore, being the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhood is like gold, or silver, or stone, sculptured by art and the device of man. ³⁰ Yet the times of this ignorance God overlooked; but now, he commands all men everywhere to repent: ³¹ because he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world, in righteousness, by the man whom he has chosen, giving to all assurance of this, by having raised him from the dead.

³² And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked; others said: We will hear you again concerning this matter. ³³ And so Paul departed from among them. ³⁴ But certain men associated with him, and believed; among whom was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

XVIII. ¹ After these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth; ² and finding a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, who had lately come from Italy, with Priscilla his wife, because Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome, he went to them; ³ and because he

was of the same trade, he made his home with them, and worked: for by trade they were tent-makers. ⁴But on every sabbath, he reasoned in the synagogue, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks. ⁵And when Silas and Timothy came from Macedonia, Paul was roused in spirit, and earnestly testified to the Jews, that the Christ was Jesus.

⁶But when they set themselves in opposition, and reviled, he shook his clothing, and said to them: Your blood be upon your own head; I am clean. Henceforth I will go to the Gentiles. ⁷And he departed thence, and went into the house of a certain man named Justus, who worshiped God, and whose house joined the synagogue. ⁸But Crispus, the ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord, with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing, believed, and were immersed. ⁹And the Lord spoke to Paul by a vision in the night: Fear not; but speak, and be not silent; ¹⁰for I am with you, and no one shall make an assault upon you, to injure you; for I have many people in this city. ¹¹And he remained there a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them.

¹²But while Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, the Jews, with one mind, suddenly came upon Paul, and brought him to the judgment-seat, ¹³saying: This man persuades men to worship God contrary to the law. ¹⁴But when Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said to the Jews: If it were a matter of injustice, or of wicked mischief, O Jews, I would, with reason, bear with you: ¹⁵but if it is a question about a word, and names, and your law, see to it yourselves: for I will not be a judge of these tilings. ¹⁶And he drove them from the judgment-seat. ¹⁷And all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment-seat. And Gallio cared for none of these things.

¹⁸And Paul, having remained many days longer, took leave of the brethren, and sailed to Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila, having shorn his head in Cenchrea; for he had a vow. ¹⁹And he came to Ephesus, and left them there; but he himself went into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews. ²⁰And though they besought him to remain with them a longer time, he did not consent, ²¹but took leave of them, saying: I must, by all means, keep this

coming feast in Jerusalem: but I will return to you, if God be willing. And he sailed from Ephesus, ²²and having landed at Cæsarea, and gone up and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch. ²³And having spent some time there, he departed, and went through the region of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

²⁴And a certain Jew, named Apollos, an Alexandrian by birth, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus. ²⁵He was instructed in the way of the Lord; and, being fervent in spirit, he spoke and taught accurately the things of the Lord, knowing only the immersion of John. ²⁶And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue. But when Aquila and Priscilla heard him, they took him, and taught him the way of God more accurately. ²⁷And when he wished to pass into Achaia, the brethren, exhorting him, wrote to the disciples to receive him. And when he had come, he gave much help to the believers, through the grace conferred on him. ²⁸For, with great strength, he utterly confounded the Jews publicly, showing, by the Scriptures, that the Christ was Jesus.

XIX. ¹And it came to pass, while Apollos was at Corinth, that Paul, after passing through the upper districts, came to Ephesus, and finding certain disciples, ²said to them: Have you received the Holy Spirit since you believed? They said to him: *We have not only not received it*, but we have not even heard whether the Holy Spirit is given. ³And he said to them: Into what, then, were you immersed? They replied: Into John's immersion. ⁴And Paul said: John immersed with the immersion of repentance, saying to the people, that they must believe on him who should come after him, that is, on the Christ, Jesus. ⁵And when they heard this, they were immersed into the name of the Lord Jesus. ⁶And when Paul laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spoke with tongues, and prophesied. ⁷And all the men were about twelve.

⁸And he entered the synagogue, and spoke boldly, reasoning, and persuading them for three months, with respect to the things of the kingdom of God. ⁹But as some were hardened, and did not believe, and spoke evil of that way before the multitude, he withdrew from them, and separated the disciples, and discoursed daily in the

school of one Tyrannus.¹⁰ This continued for two years; so that all that dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord, both Jews and Greeks.¹¹ Mighty deeds, also, that were unusual, did God perform by the hands of Paul;¹² so that handkerchiefs or aprons were carried from his body to the sick, and diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits came out of them.

¹³ And some of the roving Jews, who were exorcists, undertook to pronounce the name of the Lord Jesus over those who had evil spirits, saying: I adjure you by the Jesus whom Paul preaches.¹⁴ And there were seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, who did this.¹⁵ But the evil spirit answered and said: Jesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know; but who are you?¹⁶ And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leaped on them, and overpowered them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled from that house, naked and wounded.¹⁷ And this became known to all the Greeks and Jews that dwelt in Ephesus; and fear fell upon them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.¹⁸ And many of those who believed came and confessed, and made known their practices.¹⁹ And many of those who practiced magic, brought together their books, and burned them, in the presence of all. And they computed their value, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.²⁰ So mightily did the word of the Lord grow and prevail.

²¹ When these things had been accomplished, Paul purposed in spirit to go to Jerusalem, after he should pass through Macedonia and Achaia, saying: After I have been there, I must see Rome also.²² So, having sent into Macedonia two of those who ministered to him, Timothy and Erastus, he remained for a time in Asia.

²³ And at that time there was no little excitement about that way.²⁴ For a certain man, named Demetrius, a silversmith, by making silver shrines for Diana, furnished no little trade to the artists.²⁵ These he called together, with the workmen employed about such things, and said: Men, you know that our wealth arises from this trade:²⁶ and you see and hear, that not only at Ephesus, but throughout almost the whole of Asia, this Paul, by his persuasions, has drawn away a great multitude, saying, that they which are made with hands are not gods.²⁷ Now there is danger, not only that this our calling will come into disgrace, but that the temple of the

great goddess Diana will be despised, and that the majesty of her whom all Asia and the world worships, will be destroyed.

²⁸ When they heard this, they were full of anger, and cried out, saying: Great is Diana of the Ephesians!²⁹ And the whole city was filled with confusion. And they seized Gains and Aristarchus, who were Macedonians, Paul's fellow-travelers, and, with one consent, rushed into the theater.³⁰ And when Paul wished to go in among the people, the disciples did not permit him.³¹ Some of the Asiarchs also, who were friendly to him, sent to him, and besought him not to trust himself into the theater.³² Some, therefore, were crying one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the greater part knew not for what they had come together.³³ And some of the multitude put Alexander forward, the Jews urging him on. And Alexander waved his hand, and wished to make a defense to the people.³⁴ But perceiving that he was a Jew, they all cried out, with one voice, for about two hours: Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

³⁵ But the town-clerk quieted the multitude, and said: Men of Ephesus, what man is there who does not know that the city of the Ephesians is a worshiper of the great Diana, and of the image that fell down from Jupiter?³⁶ As these things, then, can not be contradicted, you ought to be quiet, and do nothing rashly.³⁷ For you have brought these men here, who are neither robbers of temples, nor revilers of your goddess.³⁸ Therefore, if Demetrius, and the artists who are with him, have a charge against any one, the courts are in session, and the proconsuls are there; let them accuse each other.³⁹ But if you have any inquiries to make about other matters, it shall be determined in a lawful assembly.⁴⁰ For we are in danger of being called to answer for this day's tumult, since there is no cause by which we shall be able to account for this concourse.⁴¹ And when he had said these things, he dismissed the assembly.

XX. ¹ After the tumult had ceased, Paul called the disciples to him, and bade them farewell, and departed, in order to go into Macedonia.² And when he had gone through those regions, and had exhorted them with many words, he came into Greece.³ And having remained there three months, he determined to

return through Macedonia, because a plot had been laid for him by the Jews, as he was about to sail to Syria.⁴ And Sopater of Berea, and Aristarchus and Secundus of Thessalonica, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy and Tychicus and Trophimus, who were Asiatics, accompanied him to Asia.⁵ These went before, and waited for us at Troas.⁶ But we sailed from Philippi, after the days of unleavened bread, and came to them at Troas in five days, where we remained seven days.

⁷ And on the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul discoursed to them, intending to depart on the morrow; and he continued his speech till midnight.⁸ And there were many lamps in the upper room, in which they had met together.⁹ And a certain young man, named Eutychus, was sitting in the window, overpowered with deep sleep: and, as Paul was discoursing a long time, being oppressed with sleep, he fell from the third story, and was taken up dead.¹⁰ But Paul went down, and fell upon him, and embracing him, said: Be not troubled, for his life is in him.¹¹ And he went up again, and broke bread, and ate; and having conversed a long time, till daylight, he thus departed.¹² And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

¹³ And we went on before to the ship, and put to sea for Assos, intending to take Paul on board at that place; for he had so directed, intending to go himself on foot.¹⁴ And when he met us at Assos, we took him on board, and came to Mitylene;¹⁵ and sailing from that place, we came, on the following day, opposite to Chios; and, on the next day, we arrived at Samos: and after stopping at Trogyllium, we came, on the next day, to Miletus.¹⁶ For Paul had determined to sail past Ephesus, that he might not spend time in Asia; for he hastened, that, if it were possible for him, he might be in Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost.

¹⁷ From Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church.¹⁸ And when they had come to him, he said to them: You know, from the first day on which I came into Asia, how I have been with you during the whole time,¹⁹ serving the Lord with all lowliness of mind, and with tears, and with trials, which came upon me through the plots of the Jews;²⁰ and that I have kept back nothing that was

profitable, but have preached to you, and taught you both publicly, and from house to house,²¹ bearing full testimony both to Jews and to Greeks, of the repentance that leads to God, and of the faith that leads to our Lord Jesus Christ.

²² And now, behold, I am going, bound in spirit, to Jerusalem, not knowing what shall befall me there,²³ except that in every city the Holy Spirit testifies to me, saying, That bonds and afflictions await me.²⁴ But I esteem this a matter of no importance, nor do I hold my life dear to myself, so that I may finish my course with joy, and the ministry that I have received from the Lord Jesus, to bear full testimony to the gospel of the grace of God.²⁵ And now, behold, I know that you all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, will see my face no more.²⁶ For this reason I solemnly affirm to you this day, that I am clean from the blood of all men.²⁷ For I have not shunned to declare to you the whole counsel of God.

²⁸ Therefore, take heed to yourselves, and to all the flock over which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, that you be shepherds to the church of God, which he has purchased with his own blood.²⁹ For I know this, that, after my departure, rapacious wolves will enter in among you, who will not spare the flock;³⁰ and men will arise from among yourselves, speaking perverse things, that they may draw off disciples after them.³¹ Therefore watch, remembering that for three years, by day and by night, I ceased not to warn every one of you with tears.³² And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace; to Him who is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all the sanctified.³³ I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel.³⁴ You yourselves know that these hands have ministered to my necessities, and to those who were with me.³⁵ In all things I have taught you by example, that by thus laboring, you ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus; for he himself said, It is more blessed to give, than to receive.

³⁶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down and prayed with them all.³⁷ And they all wept much, and fell on Paul's neck, and kissed him,³⁸ grieving most of all for the word he had spoken, that they would see his face no more. And they conducted him to the ship.

XXI. ¹And it came to pass that, after we had separated from them, we put to sea, and came by a straight course to Cos, and on the following day, to Rhodes, and thence to Patara. ²And finding a ship that was going to Phenicia, we embarked, and put to sea. ³And we came in view of Cyprus; and, leaving it to the left, we sailed to Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to put off her lading. ⁴And we remained there seven days, after finding the disciples. These urged Paul, by the Spirit, not to go up to Jerusalem. ⁵And when these days were completed, we went forth, and continued our journey, they all, with their wives and children, conducting us out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed. ⁶And when we had bid each other farewell, we embarked, and they returned home.

⁷ And completing the voyage from Tyre, we arrived at Ptolemais: and having saluted the brethren, we remained with them one day. ⁸On the following day we departed, and came to Cæsarea, and went into the house of Philip the evangelist, who was one of the seven; and we remained with him. ⁹This man had four virgin daughters, who had the gift of prophesy.

¹⁰ And as we remained there many days, there came down, from Judea, a certain prophet, named Agabus; ¹¹ and he came to us, and taking Paul's girdle, he bound his own hands and feet, and said: Thus says the Holy Spirit; the Jews that are in Jerusalem will so bind the man to whom this girdle belongs; and they will deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles. ¹² And when we heard these things, we, and those of that place also, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem. ¹³ But Paul answered: What do you effect by weeping, and breaking my heart? For I am ready, not only to be bound, but also to suffer death in Jerusalem, for the name of the Lord Jesus. ¹⁴ And as he would not be persuaded, we kept silence, and said: The will of the Lord be done.

¹⁵ And after these days we prepared for our journey, and went up to Jerusalem. ¹⁶ There went with us also some of the disciples from Cæsarea, who took with them, Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

¹⁷ And when we came to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly. ¹⁸ And, on the fol-

lowing day, Paul went in with us to James, and all the elders were present. ¹⁹ And when he had saluted them, he related, in every particular, the things which God had done among the Gentiles by his ministry.

²⁰ And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said to him: You see, brother, how many myriads of the Jews there are that believe, and they are all zealous for the law. ²¹ And they have heard it reported of you, that you teach all the Jews that are among the Gentiles to apostatize from Moses; commanding them not to circumcise their children, nor to walk according to the customs. ²² What, then, is to be done? A multitude must certainly come together; for they will hear that you have come. ²³ Do, therefore, this which we advise you. We have four men who have a vow on them. ²⁴ Take them, and join with them in their vow of abstinence, and pay their expenses, in order that they may shave their heads; and all will know that the things which they have heard reported of you are nothing; but that you yourself also walk orderly, and keep the law. ²⁵ But with respect to the Gentiles that believe, we have written; having decided that they should observe no such thing; but that they keep themselves from things sacrificed to idols, and from blood, and from what is strangled, and from lewdness.

²⁶ Then Paul took the men, and, on the following day, joining in their vow of abstinence, he entered the temple, and gave notice when the days of abstinence would be completed, at which time an offering should be made for each of them.

²⁷ And when the seven days were about to be completed, the Jews from Asia, seeing him in the temple, threw all the multitude into confusion, and laid their hands on him, ²⁸ crying out: Men of Israel, help! this is the man who teaches all men every where against this people, and the law, and this place: and besides, he has even brought Greeks into the temple, and defiled this holy place. ²⁹ For, before this time, they had seen Trophimus, the Ephesian, with him in the city, whom they supposed Paul had brought into the temple. ³⁰ And the whole city was moved; and the people ran together, and, seizing Paul, they dragged him out of the temple, and the gates were immediately closed.

³¹ And while they were seeking to kill him,

report was brought to the officer of the band, that the whole of Jerusalem was in an uproar. ³² And he immediately took soldiers and centurions, and ran down to them. When they saw the officer and the soldiers, they ceased beating Paul. ³³ Then the officer came near and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what he had done. ³⁴ And some in the multitude cried out one thing, and some another. But not being able to obtain any certain knowledge on account of the tumult, he commanded him to be led into the fortress. ³⁵ And when he was on the steps, it happened that he was carried by the soldiers, on account of the violence of the multitude. ³⁶ For the greater part of the people followed, crying out: Away with him!

³⁷ But as Paul was about to be led into the fortress, he said to the officer: May I speak to you? He replied: Do you understand Greek?

³⁸ Are you not that Egyptian, who, before these days, made an insurrection, and led out into the wilderness four thousand men of the Assassins?

³⁹ But Paul replied: I am a Jew of Tarsus of Cilicia, a citizen of no unknown city; and I beseech you, permit me to speak to the people. ⁴⁰ And when he had given him permission, Paul, standing upon the steps, waved his hand to the people. And when there was great silence, he addressed them in the Hebrew language, saying:

XXII. ¹Brethren and fathers, hear my defense, which I now make before you. ²When they heard that he spoke to them in the Hebrew language, they kept the greater silence. And he said: ³I am a Jew, born in Tarsus of Cilicia, yet educated in this city, at the feet of Gamaliel, and instructed according to the strict discipline of the law of our fathers, being zealous for God, as you all are this day. ⁴And I persecuted this way to the death, binding and delivering into prison both men and women, ⁵as the chief priest and the whole body of elders will testify for me. From them I also received letters to the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring those, also, who were there, bound to Jerusalem, that they might be punished.

⁶But it came to pass, that, as I was on my journey, and was drawing near to Damascus, about midday, there suddenly shone from heaven a great light round about me; ⁷ and I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me,

Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me? ⁸And I answered, Who art thou Lord? And he said to me, I am Jesus the Nazarene, whom you persecute. ⁹They who were with me saw the light, and were afraid, but did not understand the voice of him who spoke to me. ¹⁰And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said to me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there you shall be told of all things that are appointed for you to do.

¹¹ And as I could not see for the glory of that light, I was led by the hand by those who were with me, and went into Damascus. ¹² And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, who had a good report from all the Jews that dwelt there, ¹³came to me, and standing by me, said, Brother Saul, receive your sight. And the same hour I looked upon him. ¹⁴ And he said, The God of our fathers has chosen you, that you should know his will, and see the Just One, and hear the voice of his mouth; ¹⁵for you shall be his witness to all men of what you have seen and heard. ¹⁶ And now, why do you delay? Arise, and be immersed, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

¹⁷ And it came to pass, after I had returned to Jerusalem, and while I was praying in the temple, that I was in a trance, ¹⁸and saw him saying to me, Make haste, and depart quickly from Jerusalem, for they will not receive your testimony concerning me. ¹⁹ And I said, Lord, they themselves know that I threw into prison, and scourged, in every synagogue, those who believed on thee; ²⁰and that when the blood of Stephen, thy witness, was shed, I also stood by and approved, and kept the clothing of those who slew him. ²¹ And he said to me, Depart, for I will send you far off to the Gentiles.

²² And they heard him to this word, and lifted up their voice, saying: Away with such a man from the earth! for it is not fit that he should live. ²³ And as they were crying out, and tossing off their clothes, and throwing dust into the air, ²⁴the officer commanded him to be led into the fortress, and gave orders that he should be examined by scourging, that he might know for what cause they so cried out against him. ²⁵ But Paul said to the centurion who stood by, as he caused him to be bent forward to the straps: Is it lawful for you to scourge a man who is a Roman, and uncondemned? ²⁶ And when

the centurion heard that, he went out and told it to the officer, saying: What are you about to do? for this man is a Roman. ²⁷ And the officer came and said to him: Tell me, are you a Roman? He answered: Yes. ²⁸ And the officer answered: With a great sum did I purchase this citizenship. And Paul replied: But I was born a citizen. ²⁹ Then, those who were about to examine him, immediately departed from him. And the officer was afraid, when he learned that he was a Roman, and because he had bound him.

³⁰ And, on the next day, wishing to know certainly why he was accused by the Jews, he loosed him, and commanded the chief priests and all the Sanhedrim to meet together. And he brought Paul down, and placed him before them.

XXIII. ¹ And Paul, looking earnestly upon the Sanhedrim, said: Brethren, I have lived in all good conscience toward God to this day. ² And the chief priest, Ananias, commanded those who stood by to smite him on the mouth. ³ Then Paul said to him: God will smite you, you whitened wall! for do you sit to judge me according to the law, and yet violate the law by commanding me to be smitten? ⁴ And those who stood by said: Do you revile God's chief priest? ⁵ And Paul replied: I did not know, brethren, that he was the chief priest: for it is written, You shall not speak evil of the ruler of your people.

⁶ But when Paul perceived that one part belonged to the Sadducees, and the other to the Pharisees, he cried out, in the Sanhedrim: Brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee; for the hope of the resurrection of the dead am I judged. ⁷ And when he had said this, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees, and the multitude was divided. ⁸ For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection; neither angel nor spirit: but the Pharisees acknowledge both. And there arose a great clamor. And the scribes, on the part of the Pharisees, arose and contended, saying: ⁹ We find no evil in this man; but if a spirit or an angel has spoken to him, let us not fight against God. ¹⁰ And when there arose a great dissension, the officer, fearing that Paul would be torn to pieces by them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the fortress.

¹¹ And on the following night, the Lord stood by him, and said: Take courage; for as you have testified of me in Jerusalem, so must you testify also in Rome.

¹² And when it was day, the Jews combined together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul. ¹³ And there were more than forty who formed this conspiracy. ¹⁴ And they went to the chief priests and elders, and said: We have surely bound ourselves under a curse, that we will taste nothing till we have killed Paul. ¹⁵ Now, therefore, do you, together with the Sanhedrim, give notice to the officer, that he bring him down to you to-morrow, as if you intended to inquire more accurately into the matters concerning him: and before he comes near, we are ready to kill him.

¹⁶ But the son of Paul's sister heard of the plot, and he went and entered the fortress, and told Paul. ¹⁷ And Paul called one of the centurions to him, and said: Conduct this young man to the officer, for he has something to tell him. ¹⁸ So he took him, and led him to the officer, and said: The prisoner Paul called me to him, and requested me to conduct this young man to you; for he has something to tell you. ¹⁹ And the officer took him by the hand, and went aside with him privately, and inquired: What is it that you have to tell me? ²⁰ He answered: The Jews have agreed to request you to bring Paul down into the Sanhedrim to-morrow, as if they intended to inquire something more accurately concerning him. ²¹ Do not, however, be persuaded by them; for more than forty men of them are lying in wait for him; and they have bound themselves under a curse, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him. And now they are ready, waiting for a promise from you. ²² Then the officer sent the young man away, with this charge: Tell no one that you have made these things known to me.

²³ And he called to him two centurions, and said: Make ready two hundred soldiers, and seventy horsemen, and two hundred spearmen, that they may depart to Caesarea at the third hour of the night. ²⁴ And provide beasts on which they may set Paul, and take him in safety to Felix the governor. ²⁵ And he wrote a letter in this form: ²⁶ Claudius Lysias to the most excellent governor, Felix, greeting: ²⁷ This man was

taken by the Jews, and was about to be killed by them. Then I went with soldiers, and rescued him, having learned that he was a Roman.²⁸ But wishing to know the cause for which they accused him, I brought him down into their Sanhedrim.²⁹ And I found that he was accused about questions of their law, but had nothing worthy of death or of bonds charged against him.³⁰ And as I was informed that a plot was about to be laid against the man by the Jews, I immediately sent him to you, and commanded his accusers to say in your presence what they had against him. Farewell.

³¹ Then the soldiers took Paul, as they were commanded, and brought him by night to Antipatris.³² And, on the morrow, they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the fortress.³³ When they came to Cæsarea, and delivered the letter to the governor, they presented Paul also before him.³⁴ And when he had read the letter, he inquired to what province he belonged. And learning that he was from Cilicia, he said: I will hear you when your accusers also have come. And he ordered him to be kept under guard in Herod's palace.

XXIV. ¹ And after five days, Ananias the chief priest came down with the elders and a certain orator, Tertullus; and they informed the governor against Paul.² And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying:³ Since through you we enjoy great quietness, and since whatever has been undertaken for this nation has been conducted to a successful issue by your foresight at all times and in all places, we accept it, most excellent Felix, with all thankfulness.⁴ But that I may not detain you longer, I beseech you to hear us, in your clemency, a few words.⁵ For we have found this man a pest and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, a ring-leader of the sect of the Nazarenes.⁶ He also attempted to profane the temple; and we took him, and wished to judge him according to our law.⁷ But Lysias the officer came, and, with much violence, took him out of our hands,⁸ and commanded his accusers to come before you. From him you may be able yourself, by examination, to gain a knowledge of all these tilings of which we accuse him.

⁹ And the Jews united in accusing him, saying that these things were so.

¹⁰ Then Paul, after the governor had nodded to him to speak, answered: Knowing that you have been for many years a judge of this nation, I do the more cheerfully offer a defense for myself:¹¹ for you can understand that there are not more than twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem to worship.¹² And they found me neither disputing with any one in the temple, nor exciting the multitude in the synagogue, or in the city:¹³ nor are they able to prove the things of which they now accuse me.¹⁴ But this I confess to you, that after the way which they call sect, so do I worship the God of my fathers; believing all things that are written in the law and in the prophets;¹⁵ having hope in God, which they themselves also admit, that I there will be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and of the unjust.¹⁶ And I do exercise myself in this, always to have a conscience void of offense toward God and man.

¹⁷ But, after many years, I came to bring charitable gifts to my nation, and offerings.¹⁸ While engaged in these things, certain Jews from Asia found me fulfilling my vow of abstinence in the temple, not with a multitude, nor with tumult.¹⁹ These ought to be here before you, and bring their charge, if they have any, against me.²⁰ Or let these persons here say, what offensive conduct they found in me when I stood before the Sanhedrim,²¹ except in this one expression, which I uttered while standing among them: With respect to the resurrection I of the dead, I am judged by you this day.

²² But Felix, having a more accurate knowledge of this way, put them off, and said: When Lysias the officer comes down, I will inquire fully into your matters.²³ And he commanded the centurion to keep him under guard, and to relax the rigor of his confinement, and to forbid no one of his friends to minister or to come to him.

²⁴ And, after some days, Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was a Jewess; and he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.²⁵ And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and the judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered: For the present withdraw; when I have a convenient season, I will call for you.²⁶ He hoped, at the same time, that money would have been given him by Paul, to release him. For this reason, he sent for him very frequently, and conversed with him.

²⁷ But, after two years, Felix received Porcius Festus as his successor; and Felix, wishing to confer a favor on the Jews, left Paul bound.

XXV. ¹When Festus, having entered upon his government, after three days went up from Cæsarea to Jerusalem. ²And the chief priest and first men of the Jews informed him against Paul, ³and, asking a favor against him, besought him that he would send and have him brought to Jerusalem, laying a plot to kill him on the road. ⁴Then Festus answered, that Paul was under guard in Cæsarea, and that he himself would soon depart thither. ⁵Therefore, said he, let those among you who are men of influence, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there is any wickedness in him.

⁶ And he remained among them not more than eight or ten days, and then went down to Cæsarea. And, on the next day, he sat upon the judgment-seat, and commanded Paul to be brought. ⁷ And when he had come, the Jews who had come down from Jerusalem stood around, and brought many and heavy accusations against Paul, which they were not able to prove, ⁸he answering for himself: Neither against the law of the Jews, nor against the temple, nor against Cæsar, have I committed any offense. ⁹But Festus, willing to confer a favor on the Jews, answered Paul, and said: Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged before me concerning these things? ¹⁰ And Paul answered: I am standing at the judgment-seat of Cæsar, where I ought to be judged. To the Jews I have done no wrong, as you very well know. ¹¹ If, however, I be an offender, and have done any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die. But if the things of which these men accuse me are nothing, no one can deliver me to them. I appeal to Cæsar. ¹² Then Festus, after conferring with the council, answered: To Cæsar have you appealed? To Cæsar you shall go.

¹³ And after some days, King Agrippa and Bernice came down to Cæsarea, to salute Festus. ¹⁴ And as they remained there many days, Festus made known to the king the facts concerning Paul, saying: There is a certain man, who was left in bonds by Felix, ¹⁵concerning whom, when I was in Jerusalem, the chief priests and elders of the Jews informed me, asking for judgment against him. ¹⁶I replied to them, that it is not the custom of the Romans to deliver any man up to

death, before the accused has had his accusers face to face, and has had an opportunity to answer concerning the charge that is against him. ¹⁷ Therefore, when they had come hither with me, I made no delay; but, on the next day, sat on the judgment-seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth. ¹⁸ And when his accusers stood up, they brought no such charge against him as I expected; ¹⁹but they had certain questions against him, about their own religion, and about a certain Jesus that had died, who, Paul affirmed, was alive. ²⁰ But, being in doubt about the question concerning this man, I asked him if he would go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged with respect to these matters. ²¹ But when Paul made his appeal, that he should be kept for the judgment of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I could send him to Cæsar.

²² And Agrippa said to Festus: I could wish to have heard the man myself. He replied: Tomorrow you shall hear him.

²³ Therefore, on the morrow, when Agrippa and Bernice came with great pomp, and entered the place of audience, with the officers and principal men of the city, Paul, at the command of Festus, was brought forth. ²⁴ And Festus said: King Agrippa, and all men here present, you see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews, both in Jerusalem and in this place, have entreated me, crying out, that he ought to live no longer. ²⁵ But finding that he had done nothing worthy of death, and as he himself has appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him. ²⁶ Concerning him I have nothing certain to write to my Lord. For this reason, I have brought him before you all, and especially before you, King Agrippa, that, after the examination has been held, I may have something to write. ²⁷ For it seems to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not to make known the charges that are against him.

XXVI. ¹Then Agrippa said to Paul: You are permitted to speak for yourself. Then Paul stretched forth his hand, and answered for himself.

²I think myself happy, King Agrippa, because I shall this day make my defense before you, concerning all things of which I am accused by the Jews; ³especially, since you are acquainted with all the customs and questions that are

among the Jews. For this reason, I beseech you to hear me patiently.

⁴My course of life from my youth, which, from the beginning, was among my own nation in Jerusalem, know all the Jews; ⁵who, knowing me from the first, could testify, if they would, that, according to the strictest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee. ⁶And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made by God to our fathers; ⁷to which promise our twelve tribes, zealously serving night and day, hope to come: on account of which hope, King Agrippa, I am accused by the Jews. ⁸What? Is it thought a thing incredible among you, that God raises the dead?

⁹I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things against the name of Jesus the Nazarene. ¹⁰And this I did in Jerusalem; and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests: and when they were put to death, I gave my vote against them. ¹¹And I punished them often in every synagogue, and compelled them to speak impiously; and, being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even to foreign cities.

¹²While I was engaged in these things, and was going to Damascus with authority and commission from the chief priests, ¹³at midday, while I was on the road, I saw, O King, a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and those who journeyed with me. ¹⁴And when we had all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking to me, and saying, in the Hebrew language, Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me? It is hard for you to kick against the goads. ¹⁵And I said, Who art thou, Lord? He replied, I am Jesus, whom you persecute. ¹⁶But arise, and stand upon your feet; for I have appeared to you for this purpose, to make you a minister and a witness of the things which you have seen, and of those in which I will appear to you, ¹⁷delivering you from the people, and from the Gentiles, to whom now I send you, ¹⁸in order to open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the authority of Satan to God, that they may receive remission of sins, and an inheritance among the sanctified, by faith in me.

¹⁹Wherefore, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the heavenly vision; ²⁰but announced first to those in Damascus and

Jerusalem, and throughout all the region of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works worthy of repentance. ²¹For these reasons the Jews seized me in the temple, and endeavored to kill me. ²²Having, therefore, obtained help from God, I have stood till this day, testifying both to small and to great, saying nothing else than the things which the prophets and Moses did say should come to pass: ²³that Christ should suffer, and that he first, by his resurrection from the dead, should show light to the people, and to the Gentiles.

²⁴And as he spoke these things in his defense, Festus said, with a loud voice; Paul, you are mad; much learning drives you to madness.

²⁵But he replied: I am not mad, most excellent Festus, but speak forth the words of truth and soberness. ²⁶For the king has knowledge of these things, before whom, also, I speak with boldness; for I am persuaded that none of these things have escaped his notice; for this was not done in a corner. ²⁷King Agrippa, do you believe the prophets? I know that you believe. ²⁸Then Agrippa said to Paul: You almost persuade me to be a Christian. ²⁹And Paul replied: I could pray to God, that not only you, but also all that hear me to-day, were both almost and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

³⁰And the king arose, and the governor, and Bernice, and those who sat with them. ³¹And when they had withdrawn, they conversed with one another, saying: This man does nothing worthy of death or of bonds. ³²And Agrippa said to Festus: This man could have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed to Cæsar

XXVII. ¹And as it was determined that we should sail to Italy, they delivered Paul and some other prisoners to a centurion of the Augustan band, named Julius. ²And going on board a ship of Adramyttium, we put to sea, intending to sail by the coast of Asia, Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us. ³On the next day, we touched at Sidon; and Julius treated Paul with kindness, and permitted him to go to his friends, and receive their attentions. ⁴And thence we put to sea, and sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the winds were adverse. ⁵And when we had sailed across the sea opposite Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, a city of Lycia.

⁶ And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria, sailing to Italy; and he put us on board. ⁷ For many days we sailed slowly; and having with difficulty come off Cnidus, the wind not permitting us to go further, we sailed under the lee of Crete, off Salmone: ⁸ and coasting along it with difficulty, we came to a place called Fair Havens, near which is the city of Lasea.

⁹ But, after much time had been spent, and sailing was now dangerous, for the fast was already past, Paul admonished them, ¹⁰ saying: Men, I perceive that this voyage will be with damage and much loss, not only to the cargo and the ship, but also to our lives. ¹¹ But the centurion had more confidence in the pilot, and in the owner of the ship, than in the things which were spoken by Paul. ¹² And as the harbor was not commodious to winter in, the majority advised that they should put to sea from that place also, if, by any means, they might reach Phoenix, and winter there, which is a harbor of Crete, lying toward the south-west and north-west.

¹³ And when the south wind blew gently, supposing that they had gained their object, they launched the ship, and ran along close to the shore of Crete. ¹⁴ But in a little time a tempestuous wind, called Euroclydon, blew against it. ¹⁵ And the ship being caught and unable to bear up against the wind, we committed it to the gale, and were driven along. ¹⁶ And running under the lee of a certain island called Clauda, we with difficulty secured the boat. ¹⁷ When they had taken it up, they used helps, undergirding the ship. And fearing lest they should fall into the quicksand, they lowered the mast, and thus were driven along. ¹⁸ And as we were greatly tossed by the tempest, on the next day they threw overboard the cargo; ¹⁹ and on the third day, with our own hands, we threw out the tackling of the ship. ²⁰ And as neither sun nor stars appeared for many days, and no small tempest lay upon us, all hope of our being saved was at length taken away.

²¹ But, after long abstinence from food, Paul stood up in the midst of them, and said: men, you ought to have been persuaded by me, and not to have put to sea from Crete; and you would have avoided this damage and loss. ²² And now, I exhort you to be of good cheer; for there shall be no loss of life among you, but only of

the ship. ²³ For there stood by me this night an angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve, ²⁴ and said, Fear not, Paul; you must stand in the presence of Cæsar; and behold, God has given you all that are sailing with you. ²⁵ For this reason, men, be cheerful; for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told to me. ²⁶ But we must be thrown upon a certain island.

²⁷ But when the fourteenth night had come, and we were drifting up and down in the Adriatic Sea, about midnight the sailors supposed that they were drawing near some land. ²⁸ And they sounded, and found twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, and sounded again, they found fifteen fathoms. ²⁹ And fearing that we would fall upon rocks, they threw out four anchors from the stern, and wished for day.

³⁰ And as the sailors were attempting to flee from the ship, and were letting down the boat into the sea, under the pretext that they were about to let down anchors from the prow, ³¹ Paul said to the centurion and the soldiers: Unless these remain in the ship, you can not be saved. ³² Then the soldiers cut away the ropes of the boat, and let it fall off.

³³ And while the day was coming on, Paul exhorted them all to take food, saying: This is the fourteenth day that you have been in suspense, and continued without food, having taken nothing. ³⁴ Wherefore, I exhort you to take food; for this will promote your safety. For not a hair shall fall from the head of any of you. ³⁵ And when he had said this, he took bread, and gave thanks to God before them all, and broke, and began to eat. ³⁶ And all became cheerful, and also partook of food. ³⁷ And all of us that were in the ship were two hundred and seventy-six souls. ³⁸ When they were satisfied with food, they lightened the ship by throwing the provisions into the sea.

³⁹ And when it was day, they did not recognize the land; but they perceived an inlet, that had an accessible shore, into which they desired, if they could, to thrust the ship. ⁴⁰ And, after cutting away the anchors, they committed the ship to the sea, at the same time loosing the lashings of the rudders: and they set up the front sail to the wind, and kept the ship firmly toward the shore. ⁴¹ And falling into a place where two currents met, they ran the ship aground, and the prow stuck fast, and remained immovable; but

the stern was broken by the violence of the waves.⁴² The soldiers' counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest some of them should swim out and escape.⁴³ But the centurion, wishing to save Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded those who were able to swim, to throw themselves into the sea first, and get to land;⁴⁴ and then the rest, some on planks, and others on what could be taken from the ship. And thus it came to pass, that all got safe to land.

XXVIII. ¹ And when they had saved themselves, they then learned that the island was called Melita.² And the barbarians showed us no ordinary kindness; for they kindled a fire, and received us all, because of the rain which was falling, and because of the cold.

³ And when Paul had brought together a heap of brushwood, and laid it on the fire, a viper came out, by reason of the heat, and fastened itself on his hand.⁴ And when the barbarians saw the reptile hanging from his hand, they said to one another: This man is certainly a murderer, whom, although he has saved himself from the sea, justice does not permit to live.⁵ Then he shook the reptile from him into the fire, and suffered no harm.⁶ But they were expecting that he would become inflamed and swollen, or would suddenly fall down dead; yet, after expecting it for a long time, and seeing no harm befall him, they changed their mind, and said he was a god.

⁷ Among the estates about that place were those of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius, who took us to his house, and, for three days, entertained us kindly.⁸ And it happened that the father of Publius was lying sick with fever and dysentery. And Paul went in to him, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and restored him to health.⁹ Therefore, after this had been done, the rest also in the island who had diseases, came and were cured.¹⁰ And they also honored us with many honors; and, when we put to sea, they supplied us with such things as we needed.

¹¹ After three months we put to sea in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the island, whose sign was the Dioscuri.¹² And we landed at Syracuse, and remained there three days:¹³ from which place, by coasting about, we came to Rhegium; and one day afterward, the south

wind arose; and we came, on the next day, to Puteoli,¹⁴ where we found brethren, and were persuaded to remain with them seven days. And thus we went toward Home.¹⁵ And from this place, the brethren, having heard of us, came out as far as Appii Forum and the Three Taverns, to meet us. When Paul saw the brethren, he thanked God, and took courage.

¹⁶ When we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard; but Paul was permitted to dwell by himself, with a soldier that guarded him.

¹⁷ And it came to pass, after three days, that he called together the chief men of the Jews; and when they had come, he said to them: Brethren, though I have done nothing against the people, or the customs of our fathers, yet I was delivered as a prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans.¹⁸ They, after examination, would have released me, for they found no cause of death in me.¹⁹ But because the Jews spoke against it, I was compelled to appeal to Cæsar: not that I have any accusation to bring against my own nation.²⁰ For this reason, I called for you, that I might see you and speak to you; for on account of the hope of Israel, I am bound with this chain.

²¹ And they said to him: We have neither received letters from Judea concerning you, nor has any one of the brethren come, and reported or spoken any evil of you.²² But we think it right to hear from you what you think: for, as it respects this sect, we know that it is everywhere spoken against.

²³ And when they had appointed him a day, many came to him at his lodging; to whom, from morning till evening, he earnestly testified, and set forth the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both from the law of Moses, and from the prophets.²⁴ And some believed the things that were spoken, and some believed not.²⁵ And not agreeing among themselves, they departed, after Paul had spoken one word: Well did the Holy Spirit speak to our fathers by Isaiah the prophet,²⁶ saying: Go to this people and say, You shall surely hear, but you will not understand; and you shall surely see, but you will not perceive.²⁷ For the heart of this people has become fat, and with their ears they hear heavily, and their eyes they have closed, lest they should see with their eyes, and hear

with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should turn, and I should restore them to health. ²⁸Therefore, be it known to you, that the salvation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they will hear. ²⁹And when he had said these things, the Jews departed, and had great disputation

among themselves. ³⁰And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own rented house, and received all that came to him, ³¹preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching the things concerning the Lord Jesus Christ, with all boldness and without hinderance.

Paul to the Romans.

PART I.—*Introduction.*

I. ¹Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, a called ²which he formerly promised through his prophets in the holy scriptures, ³concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was born of the posterity of David according to the flesh, ⁴but declared to be the Son of God with power, according to his holy spiritual nature, by his resurrection from the dead, ⁵through whom we have received grace and apostleship, in order to the obedience of faith among all nations, for the honor of his name, ⁶among whom are you also the called of Jesus Christ, ⁷to all that are in Rome, beloved of God, called saints: Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

⁸First, I thank my God, through Jesus Christ, on account of you all, because your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world. ⁹For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that, without ceasing, I make mention of you, ¹⁰always in my prayers making request, that, if possible, I may at length have a prosperous journey, by the will of God to come to you. ¹¹For I greatly desire to see you, that I may impart to you some spiritual gift, in order that you may be established; ¹²that is, that I may both give and receive comfort, while I am among you, through our common faith.

¹³But, brethren, I do not wish you to be ignorant that I often purposed to come to you, though I have been hindered to the present time, that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles. ¹⁴I am a debtor both to the Greeks and to the barbarians; both to the wise and to the unwise. ¹⁵So that, as far as I am able, I am ready to preach the gospel to you also, who are in Rome.

PART II.—*The Thesis.*

¹⁶For I am not ashamed of the Gospel: for it is the power of God in order to salvation, to every one that believes, to the Jew first, and also

to the Greek. ¹⁷For in it the righteousness of God by faith is revealed, in order to faith: as it is written, He that is justified by faith, shall live.

THE ARGUMENT.

SECTION FIRST.—*Of Justification.*

¹⁸For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who, by unrighteousness, restrain the truth. ¹⁹Because that which may be known of God, is manifest among them; for God has made it manifest to them, ²⁰(for, since the creation of the world, his attributes, which are invisible, are clearly seen, being perceived through the things that are made, both his eternal power and divinity,) that they may be without excuse; ²¹because, when they knew God, they did not glorify him as God, nor were they thankful; but they became perverse in their reasonings, and their wicked heart was darkened; ²²professing to be wise, they became foolish, ²³and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible God for an image like corruptible man, and birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.

²⁴For which reason God delivered them up, in the desires of their hearts, to uncleanness, that they might dishonor their bodies among themselves; ²⁵who exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen. ²⁶For this reason, God delivered them over to vile passions: for their females exchanged their natural use for that which is against nature: ²⁷and in like manner also the males, leaving the natural use of the females, burned in their lusts one toward another, males with males practicing infamous lewdness, and receiving in themselves the due reward of their error.

²⁸And as they refused to acknowledge God, God delivered them up to an undiscerning mind, to do detestable things; ²⁹as they were filled with all unrighteousness, lewdness, wickedness, covetousness, malice; full of envy,

murder, contention, deceit, malignity; ³⁰whisperers, evil-speakers, haters of God, insolent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents; ³¹without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful; ³²who, acknowledging the judgment of God, that those who practice such things are worthy of death, not only do them, but approve those who practice them.

III. ¹For which reason, you are without excuse, O man, whoever you are, that judge; for in that in which you judge another, you condemn yourself; for you who judge, practice the same things. ²But we know that the judgment of God against those who practice such things, is according to truth. ³But do you, O man, who judge those that practice such things, and yet do the same, conclude that you will escape the judgment of God? ⁴Or, do you despise the riches of his goodness, and his forbearance, and his long suffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leads you to repentence?

⁵But, according to your hard and impenitent heart, you treasure up to yourself wrath for a day of wrath, and of the revelation of the righteous judgment of God, ⁶who will render to every man according to his works; ⁷to those who, by patient continuance in good works, seek for glory and honor and incorruptibility, eternal life: ⁸but to those who are contentious, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, anger and wrath, ⁹affliction and distress, upon every soul of man that practices what is evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Greek: ¹⁰but glory and honor and peace to every one that practices what is good, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek: ¹¹for there is no respect of persons with God.

¹²For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law; and as many as have sinned under law, shall be judged by law, ¹³in the day when God shall judge the secret works of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel. ¹⁴For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. ¹⁵For when the Gentiles, who have not a law, do, by nature, the things of the law, these who have not a law, are a law to themselves, ¹⁶who show that the work which the law requires, is written in their hearts, their con-

science bearing testimony, and their reasonings with each other accusing, or making excuse.

¹⁷But if you are named Jew, and rest in the law, and make your boast in God. ¹⁸and know his will, and approve what is excellent, being instructed by the law: ¹⁹if you are also confident that you yourself are a guide for the blind, a light to those who are in darkness, ²⁰an instructor of the simple, a teacher of the unlearned, because you have the form of true knowledge in the law; ²¹you, then, who teach another, do you not teach yourself? You who preach that a man should not steal, do you steal? ²²You who say that a man should not commit adultery, do you commit adultery? You who detest idols, do you rob temples? ²³You who make your boast in the law, do you, by transgressing the law, dishonor God? ²⁴For the name of God is reviled among the Gentiles, on account of you, as it is written.

²⁵Now, circumcision is indeed profitable, if you keep the law: but, if you transgress the law, your circumcision becomes uncircumcision. ²⁶If, then, he who is uncircumcised keeps the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? ²⁷And shall not he whose want of circumcision is owing to his birth, if he keeps the law, condemn you, who, by the literal circumcision, transgress the law? ²⁸For he is not a Jew who is one outwardly, nor is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh: ²⁹but he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

III. ¹What advantage then has the Jew, or what profit has circumcision? ²Much in every respect; but chiefly that the oracles of God were intrusted to them. ³What, indeed, if some have been unfaithful? Will their unfaithfulness overthrow the faithfulness of God? ⁴It can not be. But let God be true, though every man be a liar, as it is written: That thou mightest be justified in thy words, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

⁵But if our unrighteousness causes the righteousness of God to be better known, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous, who inflicts punishment? I speak as a man. ⁶It can not be: for if so, how shall God judge the world?

⁷Yet, if the truth of God has, through my lie,

been greatly advanced to his glory, why am I still judged as a sinner?

⁸Then, why not say, (as we are slanderously reported as saying, and, as some affirm, that we do say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? Of such persons the condemnation is just.

⁹What then? Do we, Jews, excel? Not at all: for we have already convicted all, both Jews and Greeks, of being under sin,¹⁰ as it is written: There is none righteous, no, not one;¹¹ there is none that understands; there is none that seeks after God;¹² they have all turned out of the way; they have alike become unprofitable; there is none that does good, not even one;¹³ their throat is an open sepulcher; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips;¹⁴ their mouth is full of cursing and bitterness;¹⁵ their feet are swift to shed blood;¹⁶ destruction and misery are in their ways;¹⁷ and the way of peace they have not known;¹⁸ there is no fear of God before their eyes.

¹⁹Now we know that what the law says, it speaks to those who are under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world become guilty before God.²⁰ Wherefore, by works of law, no flesh shall be justified in his sight; for by law is the knowledge of sin.

²¹But now, the righteousness of God without law is revealed, being attested by the law and the prophets;²² I repeat it, the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ, which is for all, and on all that believe; for there is no difference;²³ for all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God,²⁴ yet may be justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus;²⁵ whom God has set forth as a propitiatory sacrifice, through faith in his blood, in order to manifest his righteousness, in passing by the sins that were formerly committed through the forbearance of God;²⁶ in order to manifest his righteousness at the present time, that he might be just, while he justifies him who believes in Jesus.

²⁷Where, then, is boasting? It is excluded. By what law? Of works? No; but by the law of faith.²⁸ For we conclude that a man is justified by faith, without deeds of law.²⁹ Is he the God of the Jews only? Is he not also the God of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:³⁰ since there is one God, who will justify the circumcision by

faith, and the uncircumcision through the faith.³¹ Do we, then, make law void through the faith? It can not be. On the other hand, we establish law.

IV. ¹What, then, shall we say that Abraham our father has found, as it respects the flesh? ²For if Abraham was justified by works, he has cause for boasting, but not before God.³ For what says the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness.⁴ Now to him that works, the reward is not counted as a favor, but as a debt:⁵ but to him that works not, but believes on him that justifies the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

⁶Even as David also speaks of the blessedness of the man to whom God counts righteousness without works, saying:⁷ Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.⁸ Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not charge sin.

⁹Comes this blessedness then on those who are circumcised only, or on those who are uncircumcised also? For we say that faith was counted to Abraham for righteousness.

¹⁰Under what circumstances, then, was it counted? After he was circumcised? Or, while he was uncircumcised? Not after he was circumcised, but while he was uncircumcised.¹¹ And he received the sign of circumcision, as a seal of the righteousness of the faith that he had while he was uncircumcised, in order that he might be the father of all that believe, even in a state of uncircumcision, so that righteousness might be counted to them also;¹² and the father of circumcision to those who are not only circumcised, but who, also, walk in the steps of that faith which our father Abraham had while he was yet uncircumcised.

¹³For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, nor to his posterity, through law, but through the righteousness of faith.¹⁴ For if they that are of the law be heirs, the faith is made powerless, and the promise is unmeaning;¹⁵ for the law inflicts punishment; for where no law is, there is no transgression.¹⁶ Therefore, the inheritance is by faith, that it may be according to grace, in order that the promise may be sure to all his posterity, not to those only who are of the law, but to those, also, who are of the faith of Abraham,

who is the father of us all,¹⁷(as it is written: I have made you a father of many nations,) in the sight of him in whom he believed, even God, who makes the dead alive, and calls those things which are not, as though they were.

¹⁸He, against hope, confidently believed that he would become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken: So shall your posterity be.¹⁹ And not being weak in faith, he considered not his own body, which was already dead, (for he was about a hundred years old,) nor the deadness of Sarah's womb;²⁰ and he doubted not, through unbelief, with respect to the promise of God, but was strong in faith, giving glory to God,²¹and being fully persuaded that what he had promised he was able also to perform.²²For this reason, it was counted to him for righteousness.

²³But that it was counted to him, was not written for his sake alone,²⁴but for our sakes also, to whom it shall be counted, if we believe on him that raised Jesus our Lord from the dead,²⁵who was delivered up for our offenses, and raised again for our justification.

V. ¹Therefore, being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,²through whom we have had access, by faith, into this grace in which we stand; and we rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

³And not only so, but we rejoice in afflictions also; because we know that affliction produces patience,⁴and patience, an approved character, and an approved character, hope;⁵ and this hope disappoints us not; because the love of God is poured abundantly into our hearts through the Holy Spirit that is given to us.⁶For when we were yet without strength, at the appointed time, Christ died for the ungodly.⁷For hardly, indeed, will one die for a just man; yet, perhaps, for the good man some one would even dare to die.⁸But God makes known his love to us in this, that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us:⁹much more, then, since we are now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from the wrath through him.¹⁰For if, while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, having been reconciled, shall we be saved by his life.

¹¹And not only so, but we rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we

have now received the reconciliation.

¹²For this reason, as by one man sin entered into the world, and by his sin, death; and so death passed through to all men, because all have sinned:¹³for till the law, sin was in the world; but sin is not charged where there is no law.

¹⁴Yet death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that did not sin in the likeness of Adam's transgression, who is the type of him that was to come.¹⁵But the favor bestowed is not, in all respects, like the offense: for if, by the offense of one, the many have died, much more have the grace of God and the gift which is by the grace of the one man Jesus Christ, been made abundant for the many.¹⁶And the gift is not like the sentence that came through one who sinned: for the sentence to condemnation was because of one offense; but the favor bestowed in order to justification, is because of many offenses.¹⁷For if, by one man's offense, death has reigned through that one, much more shall those who receive the abundance of the grace, and of the gift of righteousness, reign in life through the one, who is Jesus Christ.

¹⁸Therefore, as, by one offense, sentence came on all men to condemnation, so, also, by one act of righteousness, the gift has come on all men to justification of life.¹⁹For as by the disobedience of the one man the many have been made sinners, so, also, by the obedience of the one, the many shall be made righteous.

²⁰But, besides the first offense, law was introduced, in order that offenses might abound: but where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:²¹that as sin has reigned, ending in death, so might grace reign by justification, ending in life eternal, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

SECTION SECOND. *Of Sanctification, Redemption, and Glorification.*

VI. ¹What, then, shall we say? Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound?

²It can not be. How shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer in it?³Know you not that as many of us as were immersed into Christ Jesus, were immersed into his death?⁴Therefore, we are buried with him, by immersion, into death, that as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, so also we should walk in a new life.⁵For if we have become united to him

by the likeness of his death, we shall certainly be united to him by the likeness of his resurrection; ⁶knowing this, that our former man has been crucified with him, in order that the sinful body may be deprived of its power, so that we should no longer serve sin: ⁷for he that is dead is freed from sin.

⁸Now if we have died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him; ⁹because we know that Christ, having been raised from the dead, dies no more; death has dominion over him no longer; ¹⁰for, as it regards his dying, he, once for all, died to sin; but as it regards his living, he lives to God. ¹¹So also do you count yourselves as dead indeed to sin, but as living to God, in Christ Jesus our Lord.

¹²Therefore, let not sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey it; ¹³and present not your members to sin, as instruments of unrighteousness: but present yourselves to God, as alive from the dead; and your members to God, as instruments of righteousness. ¹⁴For sin shall not have dominion over you; for you are not under law, but under grace.

¹⁵What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under law, but under grace? It can not be. ¹⁶Know you not, that to whom you present yourselves as servants to obey, his servants you are whom you obey, whether of sin that leads to death, or of obedience that leads to righteousness? ¹⁷But thanks be to God, that though you were the servants of sin, yet you have obeyed from the heart the form of teaching, in which you have been instructed; ¹⁸and being made free from sin, you have become the servants of righteousness. ¹⁹I speak of what is common among men, oil account of the weakness of your flesh: for as you have presented your members as servants to uncleanness, and to lawlessness, in order to lawlessness, so now present your members as servants to righteousness, in order to holiness. ²⁰For when you were the servants of sin, you were free with respect to righteousness. ²¹What fruit, therefore, had you at that time, in those things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death. ²²But now, since you have been made free from sin, and have become servants to God, you have your fruit to holiness, and the end, eternal life. ²³For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

VII. ¹Know you not, brethren, for I speak to you that are acquainted with law, that the law has dominion over a man as long as he lives? ²For the woman that has a husband, is bound by the law to her husband as long as he lives: but if her husband die, she is loosed from the law of her husband. ³So then, if, while her husband lives, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress. But if her husband die, she is free from the law; so that she is not an adulteress, though she be married to another man.

⁴So then, my brethren, you, also, have died to the law, by the body of the Christ, in order that you may be married to another, to him who was raised from the dead that we should bring forth fruit to God. ⁵For when we were in the flesh, the sinful passions which were excited by the law, were active in our members, so as to bring forth fruit to death: ⁶but now we are made free from the law, being dead to that by which we were bound, so that we may serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

⁷What, then, shall we say? Is the law sin? It can not be. Indeed, I had not known sin, except through law. For I had not known evil desire, unless the law had said: You shall not have any evil desire. ⁸But sin, taking occasion through the commandment, rendered active within me every evil desire. For without the law, sin was dead. ⁹Indeed, I was alive without the law, once; but when the commandment came, sin became alive, and I died: ¹⁰and the commandment, which was given for life, I found to be for death. ¹¹For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. ¹²Therefore, the law is holy, and the commandment, holy and just and good.

¹³Has, then, that which is good become death to me? It can not be. But sin, that it, might appear sin, was causing death to me through that which is good, in order that sin, through the commandment, might become exceedingly sinful. ¹⁴For we know that the law is spiritual; but I am carnal, sold into bondage to sin. ¹⁵For what I do, I know not: for that which I wish to do, this I do not; but that which I hate, this I do. ¹⁶If, then, I do that which I wish not to do, I give assent to the law, that it is good. ¹⁷Now, then, it is no longer I that do it, but sin

that dwells in me.¹⁸ For I know that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwells no good; for to will is present with me; but to perform that which is good, I find not.¹⁹ For the good that I wish to do, I do not; but the evil that I wish not to do, this I do.²⁰ Now, if I do that which I wish not to do, it is no longer I that do it, but sin that dwells in me.

²¹I find, then, this law: That, when I wish to do good, evil is present with me.²² For, in the inward man, I delight in the law of God:²³ but I perceive another law in my members, at war with the law of my mind, and making me a captive to the law of sin, which is in my members.

²⁴Wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body that subjects me to death?²⁵ I thank God that I shall be delivered through Jesus Christ our Lord. Therefore, I myself, with the mind, serve the law of God, but with the flesh, the law of sin.

VIII. ¹There is now, therefore, no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus.² For the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus has freed me from the law of sin, and of death.³ For what the law could not do, because it was weak through the flesh, God has done, who, sending his own son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for a sin-offering, condemned sin in the flesh,⁴ that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

⁵For those who are according to the flesh, mind the things of the flesh; but those who are according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.⁶ For the mind of the flesh is death; but the mind of the Spirit is life and peace.⁷ Because the mind of the flesh is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can it be.⁸ Those, then, who are in the flesh, can not please God.

⁹But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. Now, if any one has not the Spirit of Christ, he is not his.¹⁰ But if Christ is in you, the body is dead, on account of sin, but the Spirit is life, on account of righteousness.¹¹ And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, he that raised the Christ from the dead will give life to your mortal bodies, because of his Spirit that dwells in you.

¹²Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh;¹³ for if you live according to the flesh, you shall die: but if, through the Spirit, you put to death the deeds of the body, you shall live.¹⁴ For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.¹⁵ For you have not again received the spirit of bondage, that you may fear; but you have received the spirit of adoption, by which we cry, Abba, Father.¹⁶ The Spirit itself testifies with our spirit, that we are the children of God;¹⁷ and, if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified together.

¹⁸For I consider the sufferings of the present time not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed for us.¹⁹ For the earnest expectation of the creature waits for the revelation of the sons of God.²⁰ For the creature was subject to frailty, (not by its own will, but for his sake who subjected it,)²¹ in hope, that even the creature itself shall be made free from the bondage of corruption, and introduced into the glorious liberty of the children of God.²² For we know that every creature groans, and is in pain together, till now:²³ and not only they, but ourselves also, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body.²⁴ For we are saved by this hope; but hope that is seen is not hope; for, what any one sees, why does he also hope for it?²⁵ But if we hope for that which we see not we wait for it with patience.

²⁶In like manner, also, the Spirit helps our infirmities; for we know not what we should pray for as we ought, but the Spirit itself intercedes for us, with groanings unutterable.²⁷ And he that searches the hearts knows what is the mind of the Spirit, that he intercedes for the saints according to the will of God.

²⁸And we know that all things work together for good, to those who love God, to those who are called according to his purpose.²⁹ For those whom he foreknew, he predestinated to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren:³⁰ and those whom he predestinated he also called, and those whom he called he also justified, and those whom he justified he also glorified.

³¹What, then, shall we say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us? ³²He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how will he not with him also freely give us all things? ³³Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifies. ³⁴Who is he that condemns? It is Christ that died: rather, indeed, that has risen, who is at the right hand of God, who also intercedes for us. ³⁵Who shall separate us from the love of the Christ? Shall affliction, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or danger, or the sword? ³⁶As it is written: For thy sake, we are killed all the day long; we are counted as sheep for the slaughter. ³⁷Yet, in all these things, we are more than conquerors, through him that loved us. ³⁸For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, ³⁹nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, will be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

SECTION THIRD. *God's dealings with Israel as a People.*

IX. ¹I speak the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience bearing me testimony in the Holy Spirit, ²That I have great sorrow and unceasing grief in my heart; ³for I could wish myself to be accursed from Christ, for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh; ⁴who are Israelites, to whom belong the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service, and the promises; ⁵to whom belong the fathers, and of whom is the Christ, as it respects the flesh, who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen.

⁶It is not possible that the word of God has failed; for they are not all Israel who are of Israel. ⁷Nor, because they are the posterity of Abraham, are they all children: but in Isaac shall your posterity be called. ⁸That is, the children of the flesh are not the children of God; but the children of the promise are counted for the posterity. ⁹For the word of the promise is this: At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son. ¹⁰Not only so, but when Rebecca had conceived by one, even our father Isaac, ¹¹(the children, indeed, having not yet been born, and having done neither good nor evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of

works, but of him that calls,) ¹²it was said to her: The elder shall serve the younger; ¹³as it is written: Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

¹⁴What, then, shall we say? Is there unrighteousness with God? It can not be. ¹⁵For he says to Moses: I will show mercy to whom I will show mercy; and I will show compassion to whom I will show compassion. ¹⁶Therefore, it is not of him that wills, nor of him that runs, but of God that shows mercy. ¹⁷For the scripture says to Pharaoh: For this very purpose have I raised you up, that I may show in you my power, and that my name may be published in all the earth. ¹⁸Therefore, he has mercy on whom he wills to have mercy: and whom he wills to harden, he hardens.

¹⁹You will then say to me, Why does he yet find fault? For who has resisted his will? ²⁰No, but rather, O man, who are you that dispute with God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed, it, Why have you made me thus?

²¹Has not the potter power over the clay, to make from the same mass one vessel for honor, and another for dishonor? ²²What, then, if God, intending to show his wrath, and to make his power known, yet, in much long-suffering bore with the vessels of wrath fitted for destruction: ²³and, that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy which he before prepared for glory, showed mercy to us, ²⁴whom he has called, not only from among the Jews, but also from the Gentiles? ²⁵As he says also in Hosea: I will call that my people which is not my people, and her beloved, who was not beloved.

²⁶And it shall come to pass, that, in the place where it was said to them: You are not my people, there shall they be called the sons of the living God. ²⁷But Isaiah cries concerning Israel: Though the number of the sons of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved: ²⁸for his word he fulfills, and he decrees in righteousness; for his word that is decreed, will the Lord execute upon the land. ²⁹And as Isaiah said before: Unless the Lord of hosts had left us a posterity, we should have been like Sodom, and been made like Gomorrah.

³⁰What, then, shall we say? That the Gentiles, who did not seek after justification, have obtained justification, even the justification which is by faith: ³¹but Israel, who sought after a law of justification, has not attained to a law of justification.

³² And why? Because they sought it not by faith, but as if by works of law: for they stumbled against that stone of stumbling, ³³as it is written: Behold, I lay in Zion a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offense: and whoever believes on him, shall not be ashamed.

X. ¹Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they may be saved. ²For I testify for them, that they have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge. ³For being ignorant of God's righteousness, and seeking to establish their own plan of justification, they have not submitted to the righteousness of God. ⁴For Christ is the end of the law for justification, to every one that believes.

⁵ For Moses describes the justification which is by the law: That the man who does these things shall live by them. ⁶But the justification by faith speaks thus: Say not in your heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? that is, to bring Christ down; ⁷or, Who shall descend into the abyss? that is, to bring Christ again from the dead. ⁸But what says it? The word is near you, in your mouth and in your heart; that is, the word of faith which we preach; ⁹that if you will confess with your mouth, that Jesus is Lord, and will believe in your heart that God has raised him from the dead, you shall be saved. ¹⁰For with the heart we believe, in order to justification; and with the mouth we make confession, it order to salvation. ¹¹For the scripture says: He that believes on him shall not be ashamed. ¹²For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek; for the same Lord of all is rich to all that call on him: ¹³For every one that calls on the name of the Lord shall be saved.

¹⁴ How, then, shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? And how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? And how shall they hear without a preacher? ¹⁵And how shall they preach, unless they be sent? As it is written: How beautiful are the feet of those who preach the gospel of peace, who bring joyous news of good things! ¹⁶But they have not all obeyed the gospel; for Isaiah says: Lord, who has believed our report? ¹⁷So, then, faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. ¹⁸But I say: Have they not heard? Yes, verily; their voice has gone forth into all the earth: and their words to the ends of the world. ¹⁹But I say: Did not Israel know? First, Moses

says: I will excite you to jealousy by that which is no nation; and by a foolish nation I will provoke you to wrath. ²⁰But Isaiah is very bold, and says: I was found by them that sought me not: I was made manifest to them that asked not after me. ²¹But with respect to Israel, he says: All day long have I stretched out my hands to a disobedient and contradicting people.

XI. ¹I say, then, Has God rejected his people? It can not be. For I am an Israelite, of the posterity of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. ²God has not rejected his people whom he foreknew. Know you not what the scripture says, in regard to Elijah? how he intercedes with God against Israel, saying: ³Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thy altars, and I am left alone, and they seek: my life. ⁴But what says the answer of God to him? I have reserved for myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to Baal. ⁵Thus, then, at the present time also, there is a remnant according to the election of grace. ⁶And if the election is by grace, it is no longer by works; otherwise grace is no longer grace.

⁷ What then? Israel has not obtained that which he seeks; but the chosen have obtained it, and the rest have been hardened to this day, ⁸as it is written: God has given them a spirit of stupor, eyes with which they can not see, and ears with which they can not hear. ⁹ And David says: Let their table become a trap, and a net, and a snare, and a recompense to them; ¹⁰let their eyes be darkened, so that they may not see, and let them bow down their back always.

¹¹ I say, then, Have they stumbled, in order that they may fall? It can not be. But rather, through their fall, salvation has come to the Gentiles, to excite them to jealousy. ¹²Now, if their fall be the riches of the world, and their loss be the riches of the Gentiles, how much more shall their full acceptance *be the riches of the world?* ¹³For I speak to you, Gentiles; inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I do honor to my ministry, ¹⁴if, by any means, I may excite to jealousy those who are my flesh, and save some of them. ¹⁵ For, if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the reception of them be, but life from the dead?

¹⁶ Now, if the first fruit is holy, the mass is holy also: and if the root is holy, the branches are holy also. ¹⁷ And if some of the branches were

broken off, and you, being a wild olive, have been grafted in among them, and partake with them of the root and fatness of the olive,¹⁸ boast not against the branches; but if you boast, boast not that you bear the root, but that the root bears you.¹⁹ You will say then: The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.²⁰ Well; on account of unbelief they were broken off; but you stand by faith. Be not high-minded, but fear.²¹ For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed, lest he spare not you.

²² Behold, then, the goodness and severity of God: toward them that fell; severity; but toward you, goodness, if you continue in his goodness; otherwise, you also shall be cut off.²³ And they, also, if they continue not in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again.²⁴ For if you were cut out from an olive-tree that is wild by nature, and were grafted, against nature, into a good olive, how much more shall these, which are the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive?

²⁵ For I do not wish you, brethren, to be ignorant of this mystery—lest you be wise in your own conceit—that blindness has happened to Israel in part, till the full number of the Gentiles shall have come in.²⁶ And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written: There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and he shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.²⁷ And this is my covenant with them, when I shall take away their sins.²⁸ As it respects the gospel, they are enemies of God for your sakes; but as it respects their election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes:²⁹ for God's gifts and calling are irrevocable.³⁰ For as you formerly did not believe God, but now have obtained mercy through their unbelief;³¹ so, also, these have not now believed, that through the mercy shown to you, they also may obtain mercy.³² For God has delivered them all over to unbelief, that he may have mercy on them all.

³³ O the depth of the riches, both of the wisdom and of the knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!³⁴ For who has known the mind of the Lord? Or, who has been his counsellor?³⁵ Or, who has first given to him, and received from him a recompense?³⁶ For from him, and by him, and for him, are all things. To him be glory through the ages! Amen.

PART III.—*Hortatory and Practical.*

XII. ¹I beseech you, therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service.² And be not conformed to this age, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may learn what the will of God is—the good, and the acceptable, and the perfect.

³ For I say, through the grace given to me, to every one that is among you, that he must not think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but that he be disposed to think modestly, as God has distributed to each a measure of faith.⁴ For as we have many members in one body, and all the members have not the same office,⁵ so we, the many, are one body in Christ, and members one of another.⁶ Since, then, we have gifts which differ according to the grace that is given to us, whether we have the gift of prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of our faith;⁷ or, if we have a ministry, let us be active in our ministry; if any one teaches, let him attend to his teaching;⁸ or, if any exhorts, let him attend to exhortation; if any one gives, let him do it with sincerity; he that rules, with diligence: he that shows mercy, with cheerfulness.

⁹ Let love be without hypocrisy. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good;¹⁰ in love to the brotherhood, be kindly affectionate one to another; in showing honor, be examples one to another;¹¹ in what requires diligence, be not slothful; in spirit, be fervent; in service, be devoted to the Lord;¹² in hope, be joyful; in affliction, be patient; in prayer, be persevering;¹³ administer to the necessities of the saints; be careful to entertain strangers;¹⁴ bless them that persecute you; bless, and curse not;¹⁵ rejoice with them that rejoice, and weep with them that weep;¹⁶ cultivate the same disposition, one toward another: mind not high things, but conform yourselves to things that are lowly.

Be not wise in your own conceits;¹⁷ repay to no one evil for evil; practice that which is honorable in the sight of all men.¹⁸ If possible, as far as may be in your power, be at peace with all men.

¹⁹ Beloved, avenge not yourselves, but give place to the wrath of God; for it is written: Vengeance is mine, I will repay, says the Lord. ²⁰ If, therefore, your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him drink; for by doing this, you will heap coals of fire on his head. ²¹ Be not overcome by evil; but overcome evil with good.

XIII. ¹ Let every soul be subject to the higher authorities. For there is no authority but from God: the authorities that are, have been appointed by God. ² Therefore, he that resists the authority, resists the appointment of God; and those who resist shall receive to themselves condemnation. ³ For rulers are not a terror to works that are good, but to those which are evil. Will you, then, not be afraid of the authority? Do that which is good, and you shall receive praise from the same. ⁴ For he is the minister of God to you for that which is good. But if you do what is evil, be afraid; for he bears not the sword in vain. For he is the minister of God to inflict punishment on him that does evil.

⁵ Wherefore, it is necessary to be subject, not only because of punishment, but also for conscience sake. ⁶ On this very account, too, pay tribute also: for they are the public servants of God, attending continually to this very thing. ⁷ Render, therefore, to all their dues; tribute, to whom tribute is due; custom, to whom custom; fear, to whom fear; honor, to whom honor is due.

⁸ Owe no one any thing, except to love one another; for he that loves another, has fulfilled the law. ⁹ For these commandments: You shall not commit adultery, you shall not kill, you shall not steal, you shall not indulge evil desire; and if there is any other commandment, all are summed up in this saying, namely: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. ¹⁰ Love works no evil to our neighbor; therefore, love is the fulfilling of the law.

¹¹ And do this, because you know the time, that the hour has already come when we should awake out of sleep; for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed: ¹² the night is far advanced, the day draws near. Let us, therefore, put off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light. ¹³ Let us walk in a becoming manner, as in the day; not in riotings and in drunkenness, not in lewdness and in wantonness, not in contention and in envy: ¹⁴ but put

on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for the desires of the flesh.

XIV. ¹ Him that is weak in the faith, receive kindly, but not to judge his reasonings. ² One believes that he may eat all things; another, who is weak, eats herbs. ³ Let not him that eats, despise him that eats not; and let not him that eats not, judge him that eats: for God has received him. ⁴ Who are you that judge another man's servant? To his own master he stands or falls; indeed, he shall stand, for God is able to make him stand.

⁵ One man thinks that one day is better than another; another thinks that every day is alike. Let each be fully assured in his own mind. ⁶ He that regards the day, to the Lord he regards it; and he that does not regard the day, to the Lord he does not regard it. He that eats, eats to the Lord; for he gives God thanks: and he that eats not, to the Lord he eats not, and gives God thanks. ⁷ For no one lives to himself, and no one dies to himself. ⁸ For if we live, we live to the Lord; or if we die, we die to the Lord. Whether, therefore, we live or die, we are the Lord s. ⁹ For this very purpose, Christ both died and rose, and lived again, that he might have dominion over the dead and the living.

¹⁰ But why do you judge your brother? Or why do you despise your brother? For we all shall stand before the judgment-seat of the Christ.

¹¹ For it is written: As I live, says the Lord, to me every knee shall bow, and every tongue shall confess to God. ¹² Therefore, every one of us shall give an account of himself to God.

¹³ Let us, therefore, no longer judge one another: but rather decide to put no stumbling-block or snare in your brother's way. ¹⁴ I know and am persuaded in the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself; but if any one thinks that any thing is unclean, to him it is unclean.

¹⁵ But if your brother is grieved on account of your food, you no longer walk according to love. Do not, with your food, destroy him, for whom Christ died. ¹⁶ Therefore, let not that which is your good be evil spoken of. ¹⁷ For the kingdom of God is not food and drink, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit.

¹⁸ For he who serves the Christ in these things is acceptable to God, and approved by men. ¹⁹ Therefore, let us seek those things which belong to peace, and those which tend to

mutual edification. ²⁰Destroy not the work of God on account of food. All meats, indeed, are clean; but meat is an evil to that man who, by eating, causes another to stumble. ²¹It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor to do any thing by which your brother stumbles, or is ensnared, or is made weak. ²²Have you faith? Have it to yourself before God. Blessed is he who condemns not himself in that which he approves. ²³But he that doubts is condemned, if he eat, because he eats not with faith. Every thing that is not of faith, is sin.

XV. ¹But we that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of those who are not strong, and not to please ourselves. ²Let each one of us please his neighbor in that which is good for his edification. ³For the Christ did not please himself; but as it is written: The reproaches of them that reproached thee, fell on me. ⁴For the things which were formerly written, were written for our instruction, that we, through the patience and the comfort which the scriptures give, might have hope. ⁵Now, may the God of patience and comfort make you of the same mind one toward another, according to Christ Jesus; ⁶that with one mind and with one voice you may glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁷Wherefore, receive one another with kindness, as the Christ has received you, to the glory of God.

⁸Now, I say, that Jesus Christ, as a minister, was of the circumcision for the sake of the truth of God, in order to confirm the promises made to the fathers, ⁹and that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy, as it is written: For this cause I will give praise to thee among the Gentiles, and to thy name will I sing. ¹⁰And again he says: Rejoice, you Gentiles, with his people. ¹¹And again: Praise the Lord, all you Gentiles, and applaud him all you peoples. ¹²And again, Isaiah says: There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to rule the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust. ¹³Now may the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that you may abound in the hope, by the power of the Holy Spirit.

PART IV.—Conclusion.

¹⁴And I myself am persuaded concerning you, my brethren, that you yourselves are full of

all goodness, having been filled with all knowledge, able also to instruct one another. ¹⁵Yet I have written to you more boldly in part, my brethren, as if I would put you in remembrance, on account of the grace which is given to me by God, ¹⁶that I may be the public servant of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, officiating as a priest with respect to the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles may be acceptable, having been sanctified by the Holy Spirit. ¹⁷I have, therefore, cause to glory in Christ Jesus in things that pertain to God.

¹⁸For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ has not accomplished through me, by word and deed, in order to make the Gentiles obedient, ¹⁹by the power of signs and wonders by the power of the Holy Spirit. So that from Jerusalem, and round about as far as Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of the Christ; ²⁰so earnestly desirous have I been to preach the gospel, not where Christ had been named, lest I should build on another man's foundation; ²¹but, as it is written: They to whom he was not preached, shall see; and they who have not heard, shall understand.

²²For which reason, also, I have been often hindered from coming to you. ²³But now, having no longer a place in these regions, and having had for many years a strong desire to come to you, ²⁴when I make my journey into Spain, I hope, in passing through, to see you, and to be conducted by you on my journey thither, after I am first partly satisfied with your company. ²⁵But now I am going to Jerusalem, to minister to the saints. ²⁶For Macedonia and Achaia have been pleased to make a contribution for the poor saints who are in Jerusalem: ²⁷they have been pleased to do so, and they are their debtors. For if the Gentiles have become partakers of their spiritual things, they ought to minister to them in things pertaining to the flesh. ²⁸When, therefore, I shall have performed this, and have delivered to them this fruit, I will go by you into Spain. ²⁹And I know that in coming to you, I shall come in the fullness of the blessing of Christ.

³⁰Now I beseech you, brethren, by our Lord Jesus Christ, and by the love of the Spirit, that you strive together with me, in your prayers to God for me, ³¹that I may be delivered from the unbelievers in Judea, and that

this service of mine, which is for Jerusalem, may be acceptable to the saints; ³²that I may come to you with joy, by the will of God, and may be refreshed among you. ³³The God of peace be with you all. Amen.

XVI. ¹I commend to you Phœbe our sister, who is a deaconess of the church that is in Cenchrea, ²that you receive her in the Lord in a manner worthy of saints, and that you aid her in whatever matter she may have need of you; for she has aided many, and myself also.

³Salute Priscilla and Aquila, my fellow-laborers in Christ Jesus; ⁴who, for my life, laid down their own necks; to whom not only do I give thanks, but all the churches of the Gentiles: ⁵and salute the church that is in their house. Salute Epenetus my beloved, who is the first fruits of Asia to Christ. ⁶Salute Mary, who bestowed much labor on us. ⁷Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellow-prisoners, who are noted among the apostles, who, also, were in Christ before me.

⁸Salute Amplias, my beloved in the Lord. ⁹Salute Urbanus, our fellow-workman in Christ, and Stachys my beloved. ¹⁰Salute Appelles, approved in Christ. Salute those who are of the household of Aristobulus. ¹¹Salute Herodion, my kinsman. Salute those of the household of Narcissus, who are in the Lord. ¹²Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labored in the Lord. Salute Persis the beloved, who labored much in the Lord. ¹³Salute Rufus, the chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

¹⁴Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hernias, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren with them.

¹⁵Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints that are with

them. ¹⁶Salute one another with a holy kiss. The churches of the Christ salute you.

¹⁷Now I beseech you, brethren, to mark those who make divisions and cause offenses in opposition to the teaching which you have learned, and avoid them. ¹⁸For such serve not our Lord Christ, but their own appetites; and, by good words and fair speeches, they deceive the hearts of the simple. ¹⁹For your obedience has gone abroad to all men: I rejoice, therefore, on your account. But I desire you to be wise in respect to that which is good, and guileless in respect to that which is evil. ²⁰The God of peace will soon bruise Satan under your feet.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

²¹Timothy, my fellow-workman, and Lucius and Jason and Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you.

²²I, Tertius, who wrote this letter, salute you in the Lord.

²³Gaius, my host, and the host of the whole church, salutes you. Erastus the treasurer of the city, and Quartus, my brother, salute you. ²⁴The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

²⁵Now to him who is able to strengthen you according to my gospel, even the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery which was concealed during the times of the ages, ²⁶but is now made manifest, and through the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the eternal God, made known among all nations for the obedience of faith, ²⁷to the only wise God, through Jesus Christ, be glory throughout the ages. Amen.

Paul to the Corinthians.

First Letter.

I. ¹Paul, a called apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Sosthenes my brother, ²to the church of God which is in Corinth, to the sanctified in Christ Jesus, called saints, with all that in every place call on the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours: ³grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

⁴I thank my God always on your account, for the grace of God which is given to you in Christ Jesus; ⁵that you are enriched by him in every thing, in all speech, and in all knowledge, ⁶even as the testimony concerning the Christ was confirmed among you, ⁷so that you are deficient in no gift, while waiting for the revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁸He also will establish you even to the end, and make you blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁹God is faithful, by whom you have been called into the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

¹⁰Now, I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you all speak the same thing, and that there be no schisms among you, but that you be perfectly united in the same mind, and in the same judgment. ¹¹For it has been made known to me concerning you, my brethren, by the family of Cloe, that there are contentions among you. ¹²I mean this: that each one of you says, I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.

¹³Is the Christ divided? Was Paul crucified for you? or were you immersed into the name of Paul? ¹⁴I thank God that I immersed none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; ¹⁵that no one may say that I immersed into my own name. ¹⁶I did, indeed, immerse the household of Stephanus; besides, I know not whether I immersed any other. ¹⁷For Christ sent me not to immerse, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of speech, lest the cross of the Christ should be deprived of its power. ¹⁸For the preaching of the cross is to those who perish, foolishness; but to us who are saved, it is the power of God. ¹⁹For it

is written: I will destroy the wisdom of the wise; and I will set aside the understanding of the prudent. ²⁰Where is the wise man? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? ²¹For, since in the wisdom of God, the world, by its wisdom, knew not God, it has pleased God, through the foolishness of what is preached, to save those who believe. ²²For the Jews ask for a sign, and the Greeks seek for wisdom; ²³but we preach Christ crucified; to the Jews, indeed, a stumbling-block, and to the Greeks, foolishness: ²⁴but to those who are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God. ²⁵For the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men.

²⁶For you see your calling, brethren, that not many wise men according to the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble call you; ²⁷but God has chosen the foolish things of the world, that he may bring to shame the wise; and the weak things of the world has God chosen, that he may put to shame the strong; ²⁸and the ignoble things of the world, and the things that are despised, has God chosen, and the things that are not, that he might bring to nought things that are; ²⁹that no flesh should glory in his presence. ³⁰But of him are you in Christ Jesus, who has become to us, from God, wisdom and righteousness and sanctification and redemption; ³¹that, as it is written: He that glories, let him glory in the Lord.

II. ¹And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellence of speech or of wisdom, declaring to you the testimony of God. ²For I determined not to know any thing among you but Jesus Christ, and him crucified. ³And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling: ⁴and my speech and my preaching were not in persuasive words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power, ⁵that your faith might not be in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

⁶ Yet we speak wisdom among the perfect; but not the wisdom of this age, nor of the rulers of this age, who are brought to nought: ⁷ but we speak God's wisdom in a mystery, even that which had been hidden, which God predestined before the ages, for our glory, ⁸ which none of the rulers of this age knew; for, had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of Glory. ⁹ But, as it is written: Eye has not seen, and ear has not heard, and into the heart of man have not entered the things which God has prepared for them that love him. ¹⁰ But God has revealed them to us through his Spirit; for the Spirit searches all things, even the deep things of God. ¹¹ For what man knows the things of man, but the spirit of man which is in him? Even so, the things of God no one knows, but the Spirit of God.

¹² And we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is from God, that we may know the things that are freely given to us by God: ¹³ which things also we speak, not in words taught by man's wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit, comparing spiritual things with spiritual things. ¹⁴ But an animal man receives not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him, and he can not know them, because they are spiritually discerned. ¹⁵ But the spiritual man discerns all things; yet he himself is discerned by no one. ¹⁶ For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

III. ¹ And I, brethren, was not able to speak to you, as to spiritual men, but as to those who are carnal, as to babes in Christ. ² I fed you with milk, not with meat; for you were not then able to bear it; indeed, not even now are you able; ³ for you are yet carnal. For, since envy and strife and divisions are among you, are you not carnal, and do you not walk as men? ⁴ For when one says, I am of Paul, and another, I of Apollos, are you not carnal?

⁵ Who, then, is Paul? and who is Apollos? Ministers by whom you have believed, even as the Lord gave to each one. ⁶ I planted, Apollos watered: but God made to grow. ⁷ So, neither he that plants nor he that waters is any thing: but God that makes to grow. ⁸ But he that plants and he that waters are one; and each one shall receive his own reward, according to his own labor. ⁹ For we are fellow-laborers for God: you are God's field, you are God's building.

¹⁰ According to the grace of God that is given to me, as a wise master-builder, I have laid the foundation, and another builds on this. But let every one take heed how he builds on this.

¹¹ For other foundation can no man lay than that which is laid, which, is Jesus Christ. ¹² If any man builds on this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble, ¹³ each man's work shall be made manifest; for the day shall make it manifest, for it is revealed with fire: and the fire shall try each man's work, what sort it is. ¹⁴ If any man's work abide, which he builds on this, he shall receive a reward; ¹⁵ if any man's work be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved, yet so, as through fire.

¹⁶ Know you not that you are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?

¹⁷ If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which temple you are. ¹⁸ Let no one deceive himself: if any one among you is considered as wise in this age, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. ¹⁹ For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God; for it is written: He takes the wise in their own craftiness. ²⁰ And again: The Lord knows the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

²¹ Therefore, let no one glory in men; for all things are yours, ²² whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours: ²³ and you are Christ's: and Christ is God s.

IV. ¹ Let each one so think of us as ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. ² Now it is required in stewards, that each one be found faithful. ³ But with me, it matters very little, that I should be judged by you, or by the judgment of men: indeed, I do not judge myself. ⁴ For, though I am conscious of no wrong, yet by this I am not justified: but he that judges me is the Lord. ⁵ So, then, judge nothing before the time, till the Lord comes, who will bring to light the secret works of darkness, and will also make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall each have his praise from God.

⁶ And these things, brethren, I have, in figure, applied to myself and Apollos, for your sakes, that you may learn in us not to think more of teachers than what has been written; and that no one of you be vain of one to the injury of

another. ⁷For who gave you distinction, as a teacher? And what have you as a teacher, that you did not receive? And if you received it, why do you boast, as if you had not received it?

⁸You, Corinthians, are already full; you are already rich; you have reigned as kings independently of us. And that you did indeed reign, that we also might reign with you! ⁹For I think that God has appointed us the apostles, to the lowest place, as under sentence of death; for we have become a spectacle to the world, both to angels and to men. ¹⁰We are fools for Christ's sake, but you are wise in Christ; we are weak, but you are strong; you are honored, but we are despised. ¹¹Even to this present hour we both hunger and thirst, and are poorly clothed, and are maltreated, and wander about without a home, ¹²and labor, working with our own hands. When reviled, we bless; when persecuted, we endure; ¹³when defamed, we entreat; we have become like the outcasts of the world, the offscouring of all things to this day.

¹⁴I do not write these things that I may make you ashamed; but as my beloved children I admonish you. ¹⁵For though you have ten thousand tutors in Christ, yet you have not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel. ¹⁶I exhort you, therefore, be imitators of me.

¹⁷For this reason have I sent to you Timothy, who is my son, beloved and faithful in the Lord, that he may remind you of my ways that are in Christ, as I teach everywhere, in every church. ¹⁸Now, some have become arrogant, as if I were not coming to you; ¹⁹but I will come to you quickly, if the Lord will; and I will know, not the speech of those who have become arrogant, but the power. ²⁰For the kingdom of God is not in speech, but in power. ²¹What do you wish? Shall I come to you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of gentleness?

V. ¹It is generally reported that there is lewdness among you; and such lewdness as is not even mentioned among the Gentiles—that a certain one has his father's wife. ²And you are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that has done this deed might be taken from among you. ³For I, indeed, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have already, as if I were present, judged him that has so done this thing; ⁴in the name of our Lord

Jesus Christ, when you and my spirit have come together, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁵that we deliver such a one over to Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

⁶Your boasting is not good; know you not that a little leaven leavens the whole mass? ⁷Purge out the old leaven, that you may be a new mass, as you are without leaven; for Christ, our passover, has been sacrificed for us. ⁸Therefore, let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of purity and truth.

⁹I have written to you in the letter not to associate with lewd persons; ¹⁰yet without the least allusion to the lewd, or the covetous, or the extortioners, or the idolaters of this world; for then you must go out of the world; ¹¹but now I write to you, not to associate with any one professing to be a brother, if he is lewd or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner: with such a one not even to eat. ¹²For what right have I to judge those who are without? Do you not judge those who are within? ¹³But God will judge those who are without. So then judge, and put away that wicked man from among you.

VI. ¹Does any one of you that has a matter of dispute with another, presume to be judged before the unrighteous, and not before the saints? ²Know you not that the saints shall judge the world? And if the world is to be judged by you, are you unworthy to decide concerning the smallest matters? ³Know you not that we shall judge angels? Much more then, things pertaining to this life. ⁴If, then, you have controversies pertaining to things of this life, set them to judge who are the least esteemed in the church.

⁵I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not among you a wise man, not even one, who shall be able to arbitrate between his brethren? ⁶But brother goes to law with brother, and this before the unbelievers? ⁷Now, certainly, you are altogether in fault, that you have law-suits with one another. Why do you not rather suffer injustice? Why do you not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded? ⁸But you act unjustly, and you defraud, and that, too, your brethren. ⁹Know you not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived; neither

lewd persons, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor catamites, nor sodomites,¹⁰ nor thieves, nor frauders, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. ¹¹ And such were some of you: but you are washed, but you are sanctified, but you are justified, in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

¹² All meats are lawful for me: but all are not profitable. All are lawful for me; but I will not be brought under subjection by any.¹³ Meats for the stomach, and the stomach for meats; but God will destroy both it and them. But the body is not for lewdness, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body:¹⁴ and God has raised, up the Lord, and will also raise us up by his power. ¹⁵ Know you not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I, then, take the members of the Christ, and make them the members of a harlot? It must not be.

¹⁶ Know you not that he that is joined to a harlot, is one body? For the two, says the scripture, shall be one flesh. ¹⁷ But he that is joined to the Lord, is one spirit. ¹⁸ Shun lewdness. Every sin that a man commits, is without the body; but he that is guilty of lewdness sins against his own body. ¹⁹ Know you not that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit, which you have from God, and that you are not your own? ²⁰ For you have been bought with a price: therefore, glorify God in your body.

VII. ¹Now concerning the things of which you wrote to me, it is good for a man not to touch a woman. ² But, to avoid lewd practices, let every man have his own wife, and every woman her own husband. ³ Let the husband render to the wife that which is due, and likewise, also, the wife to the husband. ⁴ The wife has not power over her own body, but the husband; likewise, also, the husband has not power over his own body, but the wife. ⁵ Debar not one another, unless by agreement for a time, that you may have leisure for prayer; and come together again, lest Satan tempt you through your incontinence. ⁶ But this I say by permission, not by commandment: ⁷ for I could wish that all men were even as I am myself. But each one has his own gift from God, one in this way, another in that.

⁸ But I say to the unmarried and to the widows: It would be good for them, if they remain

as I myself.⁹ But if they can not be continent, let them marry; for it is better to marry than to burn. ¹⁰ But to the married I give commandment, not I, but the Lord: Let not the wife leave her husband: ¹¹ but if she leave him, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and, let not the husband put away his wife.

¹² But to the rest, I, and not the Lord, say: If any brother has a wife that believes not, and she is well pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. ¹³ And if any woman has a husband that believes not, and he is well pleased to dwell with her, let her not put him away. ¹⁴ For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband; for if not, then are your children unclean; but now they are holy. ¹⁵ But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart; the brother or sister is not bound in such cases. But God has called us to live in peace. ¹⁶ For how do you know, O wife, but that you may save your husband? Or how do you know, husband, but that you may save your wife?¹⁷ But as God has assigned a place to every one, as the Lord has called every one, so let him continue to live: and so do I command in all the churches.

¹⁸ Has any one been called that had been circumcised? Let him not seek to remove the mark of circumcision. Has any one been called that had not been circumcised? Let him not be circumcised, ¹⁹ Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing; but the keeping of the commandments of God is our aim. ²⁰ Let every one remain in that condition in which he was, when called. ²¹ Were you a servant when you were called? Care not for it. But if you can become free, rather enjoy your freedom. ²² For he that is in the Lord, having been called when a servant, is the Lord's freedman. Likewise, also, the freeman who has been called, is Christ's servant. ²³ You have been bought with a price; become not the servants of men. ²⁴ Brethren, let every one, in whatever condition he is called, abide in this with God.

²⁵ But with respect to virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgment as one that is enabled, by the mercy of the Lord, to be faithful. ²⁶ I think, then, that this is good for the present affliction—that it is good for a man to be as he is. ²⁷ Are you bound to a wife?

Seek not a separation. Are you loosed from a wife? Seek not a wife.²⁸ But if you should marry, you would not sin. And if a virgin should marry, she would not sin. But such will have affliction in the flesh. But I spare you.

²⁹ Now, this I say, brethren, the time is fraught with trials. It remains that those who have wives be as though they had them not;³⁰ and those who weep, as though they wept not; and those who rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and those who buy, as though they possessed not:³¹ and those who use this world, as not abusing it; for the outward show of this world passes away.³² But I would have you to be without anxiety. The unmarried man is concerned about the things of the Lord, how he may please the Lord:³³ but he that is married, is concerned about the things of the world, how he may please his wife.³⁴ There is a difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman is concerned about the things of the Lord, that she may be holy in body and in spirit; but she that is married, is concerned about the things of the world, how she may please her husband.³⁵ I speak this for your own profit; not that I would entangle you, but that you may decorously and devotedly wait upon the Lord, without distraction.

³⁶ But if any man thinks he would treat his virgin daughter amiss, should she pass the bloom of life, and it is necessary that it should be so, let him do as he pleases, he does not sin; let them (*the suitor and the daughter*) marry.³⁷ But he that stands firm in his purpose, having no necessity to give his daughter in marriage, but has liberty with respect to his own will, and has thus decided in his own heart, that he will keep his daughter a virgin, does well.³⁸ So then, even he that gives her in marriage, does well; but he that gives her not in marriage, does better.

³⁹ The wife is bound as long as her husband lives; but if her husband die, she is free to be married to whom she will, only in the Lord.⁴⁰ But she is happier, in my judgment, if she remains as she is; and I think that I have, also, the Spirit of God.

VIII. ¹Now, with respect to meats offered to idols, we know, (for we all have knowledge: knowledge puffs up with pride, but love edifies.² If any one thinks that he knows any thing, he knows nothing yet, as he

ought to know it:³ but if any one loves God, he is taught by him).⁴ With respect, then, to the eating of meats offered to idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no other God but one.⁵ For though there are those which are called gods, whether in heaven or on earth, (as there are many gods, and many lords,) yet to us there is one God, the Father, from whom are all things, and we for him; and one Lord, Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.⁷ But all have not this knowledge; for some, under the persuasion that an idol is a reality, even yet eat meat, as if it were offered to an idol, and their conscience being weak, is defiled.

⁸ But meat commends us not to God; for, neither if we eat are we better, nor, if we eat not, are we worse.⁹ But take heed, lest, by any means, this right of yours become a stumbling-block to those who are weak.¹⁰ For, if any one see you, who have knowledge, reclining at table in an idol's temple, will not the conscience of him who is weak be emboldened, so that he will eat meats offered to idols?¹¹ and will not the weak brother, for whom Christ died, perish through your knowledge?¹² But if you sin in this way against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, you sin against Christ.¹³ For which reason, if meat cause my brother to fall, I will never eat meat, lest I cause my brother to fall.

IX. ¹Am I not free? Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? Are you not my work in the Lord?² If I am not an apostle to others, yet certainly I am to you; for the seal of my apostleship are you in the Lord.³ My answer to those who examine me is this: ⁴Have we not the right to eat and drink?⁵ Have we not the right to lead about a sister wife, as the other apostles, and the brothers of the Lord, and Cephas?⁶ Or, have I only, and Barnabas, no right to leave off working?

⁷ What man ever serves as a soldier, at his own expense? Who plants a vineyard, and eats not of its fruit? Or who tends a flock, and eats not of the milk of the flock?⁸ Do I speak these things as a man? Or does not the law, also, say the same?⁹ For it is written in the law of Moses: You shall not muzzle the ox that treads out the grain? Has God a care for oxen?¹⁰ or does he say it wholly for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, it was written: that he that plows should plow in hope, and that he that thrashes should thrash in

hope of partaking.¹¹ If we have sown, for your benefit, things that are spiritual, is it a great thing that we reap your carnal things?¹² If others partake of this right over you, should not we rather? But we have not used this right: but we endure all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of the Christ.

¹³ Do you not know that those who are engaged about sacred rites have their living from the temple? and that those who attend upon the altar are partakers with the altar?¹⁴ So, also, the Lord has ordained that those who preach the gospel should live by the gospel.

¹⁵ But I have availed myself of none of these things; nor do I write these things that it should be so done to me. For it would be better for me to die, than that any one should make my boasting vain.¹⁶ For though I preach the gospel, I have no cause for boasting; for a necessity is laid upon me; yes, alas for me, if I preach not the gospel.¹⁷ For if I do this willingly, I have a reward; but if unwillingly, an apostolic stewardship has been intrusted to me.¹⁸ What, then, is my reward? That, while I preach, I may make the gospel of Christ to be without charge, in order that I may not abuse my authority in the gospel.

¹⁹ For, though I am free from all men, yet have I made myself a servant to all, that I may gain the more.²⁰ And to the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews: to those who are under law, as under law, (not being myself under law,) that I might gain those who are under law;²¹ to those who are without law, as without law, (not being myself without law to God, but under law to Christ,) that I might gain those who are without law:²² to the weak I became like one who was weak, that I might gain the weak: I have become all things to all men, that I may, by all means, save some.²³ And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I may share its benefits with you.

²⁴ Know you not that all the runners in the race-course run the race, but that one receives the prize? So run, that you may obtain the prize.

²⁵ Every combatant in the public games is temperate in all things: they, indeed, that they may obtain a corruptible, but we, that we may obtain an incorruptible crown.²⁶ I, therefore, so run, not as with uncertainty; I so aim my blows, not as one that beats the air;²⁷ but I put my body

under severe discipline, and bring it into subjection, lest, after I have preached to others, I myself should be rejected.

X. ¹Now, brethren, I do not wish you to be ignorant, that all our fathers were under the cloud, and that all passed through the sea,² and were all immersed into Moses, in the cloud and in the sea;³ and did all eat the same spiritual food,⁴ and did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was the Christ.⁵ But with the most of them God was not well pleased, for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

⁶ Now these things took place as examples for us, that we should not desire evil things, as they, also, desired.⁷ Neither be you idolaters, as some of them were, as it is written: Tho people sat down to eat and to drink, and rose up to engage in idolatrous sport.⁸ Nor let us be guilty of lewdness, as some of them were guilty, and fell, in one day, twenty-three thousand.⁹ Nor let us tempt the Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed by serpents.¹⁰ Nor do you murmur, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed by the destroyer.¹¹ Now all these things happened to them as examples, and they are written for the instruction of us, upon whom the ends of the ages have come.¹² Wherefore, let him that thinks he stands, take heed lest he fall.

¹³ No trial has come upon you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tried more than you are able to bear; but he will, with the trial, make a way to escape, so that you be able to bear up under it.

¹⁴ Wherefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry.¹⁵ I speak as to wise men; judge you what I say.¹⁶ The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the participation of the blood of the Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the participation of the body of the Christ?¹⁷ Because the loaf is one, we, the many, are one body, for we are all partakers of the one loaf.¹⁸ Look at Israel according to the flesh: are not those who eat the sacrifices partakers with the altar?¹⁹ What, then, do I say? That an idol is any thing? or, that what is sacrificed to an idol is any thing?²⁰ But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons, and not to God. I do not wish you to be partakers with demons.²¹ You can not drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup

of demons: you can not be partakers of the table of the Lord, and of the table of demons. ²²Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than he?

²³All meats are lawful *for me*; but all are not profitable; all are lawful, but all do not edify. ²⁴Let no one seek his own, but each the welfare of the other. ²⁵Any thing that is sold in the market, eat, asking no questions on account of conscience: ²⁶for the earth and its fullness are the Lord's.

²⁷If any one of the unbelievers invites you to a *feast*, and you are disposed to go, eat any thing that is set before you, asking no questions for conscience sake. ²⁸But if any one say to you: This is sacrificed to idols; eat not, for the sake of him that pointed it out, and for conscience sake: ²⁹conscience, I say, not your own, but that of the other. Why, then, is my liberty judged by the conscience of another? ³⁰If I partake with thanksgiving, why am I evil spoken of on account of that for which I give thanks? ³¹Whether, therefore, you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God. ³²Give no occasion for stumbling, either to the Jews, or to the Greeks, or to the church of God; ³³even as I please all men in all things, not seeking my own good, but that of the many, in order that they may be saved.

XI. ¹Be imitators of me, as I am of Christ. ²Now, I praise you, brethren, because you remember me in all things, and keep the traditions as I delivered them to you. ³But I wish you to know, that the head of every man is the Christ, and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God. ⁴Every man that prays or prophesies, having his head covered, dishonors his head. ⁵But every woman that prays or prophesies with her head uncovered, dishonors her head: for it is one and the same as if she was shaved. ⁶For if a woman has no vail on, let her also be shaved. But if it is a shame to a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her have a vail.

⁷For a man ought not to vail his head, because he is the image and glory of God; but the woman is the glory of the man. ⁸For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man: ⁹for the man was not created for the woman, but the woman for the man. ¹⁰For this reason ought the woman to have a token of subjection on her head, on account of the angels.

¹¹But neither is the woman without the man, nor the: man without the woman, in the Lord.

¹²For as the woman is of the man, so also is the man by the woman; but all things are of God.

¹³Judge in yourselves, whether it is becoming that a woman pray to God unveiled. ¹⁴Does not nature itself teach you, that, if a man has long hair, it is a dishonor to him? ¹⁵But if a woman has long hair, it is a glory to her; for her hair is given to her for a vail. ¹⁶But if any one seems to be contentious, we have no such custom, nor have the churches of God.

¹⁷But I praise you not in this, which I now mention, that you come together, not for the better, but for the worse. ¹⁸For, in the first place, when you come together in the church, I hear that there are schisms among you, and I partly believe it: ¹⁹for there must be sects among you, that the approved may be made known among you.

²⁰When, therefore, you come together in one place, it is not to eat the Lord's supper; ²¹for each one, in eating, takes before another, his own supper; and one is hungry, and another is drunken. ²²What, have you not houses in which to eat and drink? or do you despise the church of God, and put those to shame who have nothing to eat? What shall I say to you? Shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

²³For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: That the Lord Jesus, on the night in which he was delivered up, took bread; ²⁴and when he had given thanks, he broke it, and said: Take, eat; this is my body, which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of me. ²⁵In like manner also, the cup, after he had supped, saying: This cup is the new covenant in my blood: do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of me. ²⁶For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come.

²⁷Wherefore he that eats this bread, or drinks this cup of the Lord, in an improper manner, shall be guilty of the body and the blood of the Lord. ²⁸But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of this bread, and drink of this cup: ²⁹for he that eats and drinks in an improper manner, eats and drinks condemnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. ³⁰For this reason, many among you are weak and sick, and many sleep. ³¹For if we would

judge ourselves, we should not be judged; ³²but being judged, we are chastened by the Lord, that we may not be condemned with the world. ³³Wherefore, my brethren, when you come together to eat, wait for one another: ³⁴and if any one is hungry, let him eat at home, that you come not together for condemnation. But other things I will set in order when I come.

XII. ¹But concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I do not wish you to be ignorant. ²You know that you were Gentiles, carried away to those dumb idols, as you might be led. ³For this reason, I make known to you, that no one, speaking by the Spirit of God, calls Jesus accursed: and no one can say that Jesus is Lord, but by the Holy Spirit.

⁴Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit; ⁵and there are diversities of ministries, but the same Lord; ⁶and there are diversities of operations, but the same God, who makes them all effectual in all. ⁷But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to each one, for the good of all. ⁸For to one is given, by the Spirit, the word of wisdom; to another, the word of knowledge, by the same Spirit; ⁹to another, faith, by the same Spirit; to another, gifts of healing, by the same Spirit; ¹⁰to another, the working of mighty deeds; to another, prophecy; to another, the discerning of spirits; to another, different kinds of tongues; to another, the interpretation of tongues. ¹¹But all these, the one and the same Spirit makes effectual, distributing to each, respectively, as he wills.

¹²For as the body is one, and has many members, and all the members of the body, being many, are one body, so also is the Christ. ¹³For by one Spirit we all were immersed into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether bond or free; and we all have been made to drink of one Spirit.

¹⁴For the body is not one member, but many. ¹⁵If the foot shall say: Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it, for this reason, no part of the body? ¹⁶And if the ear shall say: Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it, for this reason, no part of the body? ¹⁷If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? ¹⁸But now God has placed the members, each of them, in the body, as it has pleased him. ¹⁹And if they were all one member,

where were the body? ²⁰But now there are many members, but one body. ²¹The eye can not say to the hand: I have no need of you; or again, the head to the feet: I have no need of you.

²²But much more are those members of the body necessary, which seem to be more feeble. ²³And those members of the body, which, we think, are less honorable, around these we place the more abundant honor; and our uncomely members have the more abundant comeliness: ²⁴for our comely members have no need. But God has so arranged the body, giving more abundant honor to that part which is deficient, ²⁵that there may be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same anxious care, one for another; ²⁶and if one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or if one member is honored, all the members rejoice with it. ²⁷Now, you are the body of Christ, and, as individuals, you are members.

²⁸And God has placed some in the church, first, apostles; secondly, prophets; thirdly, teachers; then mighty deeds; then gifts of healing; helps, governments, kinds of tongues. ²⁹Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Are all workers of mighty deeds? ³⁰Have all the gifts of healing? Do all speak with tongues? Do all interpret? ³¹But seek earnestly the best gifts; and yet I show you a more excellent way.

XIII. ¹Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I have become as sounding brass, or a clanging cymbal. ²And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not love, I am nothing. ³And though I give all my goods to feed the poor, and though I deliver up my body to be burned, and have not love, I am profited nothing.

⁴Love suffers long, and is kind; love envies not; love boasts not; is not vain, ⁵does nothing unbecoming, seeks not her own, is not easily provoked, thinks no evil, ⁶rejoices not in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; ⁷bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

⁸Love never fails; but whether there be gifts of prophecy, they shall have an end; or tongues, they shall cease; or knowledge, it shall have an end. ⁹For we know in part, and we prophesy in part; ¹⁰but when that which is perfect has come,

then that which is in part shall have an end.
¹¹When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I had the mind of a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things.
¹²Now we see through a mirror, obscurely; but then, face to face; now I know in part, but then shall I know, even as I am known.

¹³And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.

XIV. ¹Cultivate love, and earnestly desire spiritual gifts, but rather that you may prophesy. ²For he that speaks in an unknown tongue, speaks not to men, but to God; for no one understands him: but yet in spirit he speaks mysteries. ³But he that prophesies speaks to men so as to build them up, to exhort and comfort them. ⁴He that speaks in an unknown tongue, edifies himself; but he that prophesies, edifies the church. ⁵I am willing, indeed, that you should all speak in tongues, but rather that you should prophesy; for greater is he that prophesies than he that speaks in tongues, unless he interprets, in order that the church may receive instruction.

⁶Now, brethren, if I come to you speaking in tongues, in what will I profit you, unless I speak to you by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecy, or by teaching? ⁷And even lifeless instruments, which produce sound, whether pipe or harp, unless they give a distinction in the notes, how shall that which is piped or harped be known? ⁸For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who will prepare himself for battle? ⁹So, also, unless you, with the tongue, utter words that are intelligible, how shall that which is spoken be known? for you will speak into the air. ¹⁰There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without meaning. ¹¹If, then, I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be to him that speaks a barbarian; and he that speaks will be a barbarian to me.

¹²So, also, do you, since you greatly desire spiritual gifts, seek to excel to the building up of the church. ¹³For which reason, let him that speaks in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret. ¹⁴For if I pray in an unknown tongue, the spirit which I have prays, but my understanding is unfruitful. ¹⁵What, then, is it? I will pray with the spirit which is given to me, and I will pray with my understanding also. I will sing with the spirit that is given to me, and I will sing

with my understanding also. ¹⁶Otherwise, if you bless with the spirit that is given to you, how will he that occupies the place of the unlearned man say Amen, when you give thanks, since he understands not what you say? ¹⁷For you give thanks well, but the other is not edified. ¹⁸I thank God that I speak in tongues more than you all. ¹⁹Yet in the church I would rather speak five words with my understanding, that I may instruct others, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

²⁰Brethren, be not children in understanding: yet, in malice, be childlike; but, in understanding, be full-grown men. ²¹In the law it is written: Through men of other tongues and other lips will I speak to this people; and not even thus will they hear me, says the Lord. ²²Therefore, tongues are for a sign, not to those who believe, but to those who believe not: but prophecy is not for those who believe not, but for those who believe.

²³If, then, the whole church come together into the same place, and all speak in tongues, and there come in unlearned men, or unbelievers, will they not say that you are mad? ²⁴But if all prophesy, and there comes in an unbeliever, or an unlearned man, he is convinced by all, he is examined by all, ²⁵and the secrets of his heart are made manifest; and so, falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is really among you.

²⁶What, then, is it, brethren? When you come together, each one of you has a psalm, has something to teach, has an unknown tongue, has a revelation, has an interpretation. Let all things be done for edification. ²⁷If any speak in an unknown tongue, let two, or, at most, three, speak at each meeting, and in succession: and let one interpret. ²⁸But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church: but let him speak to himself, and to God. ²⁹Let two or three prophets speak, and let the others judge: ³⁰and if any thing be revealed to one who is sitting by, let the first be silent. ³¹For you can all prophesy, one by one, that all may learn, and all may be encouraged; ³²and the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets; ³³for God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all the assemblies of the saints.

³⁴Let your women keep silence in the assemblies; for they are not permitted to speak; but

they must be in subjection, as also says the law. ³⁵But if they wish to learn any thing, let them ask their own husbands at home; for it is a shame for women to speak in an assembly. ³⁶Has the word of God come forth from you? or did it come to you only?

³⁷If any one has the reputation of being a prophet, or spiritual man, let him acknowledge that the things which I write to you are the commandments of the Lord. ³⁸But if any one be ignorant, let him be ignorant. ³⁹Wherefore, brethren, earnestly desire to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues. ⁴⁰Let all things be done with propriety, and in good order.

XV. ¹But I make known to you, brethren, the gospel that I preached to you, which also you received, in which also you stand, ²by which also you are saved, if you hold fast the word which I preached to you, unless you believed in vain.

³For I delivered to you among the first things, that which I also received: That Christ died for our sins, according to the scriptures; ⁴and that he was buried; and that he rose again the third day, according to the scriptures; ⁵and that he was seen by Cephas, then by the twelve; ⁶after that, he was seen by more than five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain till this day; but some have fallen asleep. ⁷After that, he was seen by James, then by all the apostles. ⁸Last of all, he was seen by me also, as one untimely born. ⁹For I am the least of the apostles, and I am not worthy to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. ¹⁰But, by the grace of God, I am what I am; and his grace, which was bestowed on me, has not been bestowed in vain: but I have labored more abundantly than they all; not I, however, but the grace of God which was with me. ¹¹Whether, therefore, I or they, so we preached, and so you believed.

¹²But if Christ is preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that a resurrection of the dead is impossible? ¹³But if a resurrection of the dead is impossible, Christ has not been raised. ¹⁴And if Christ has not been raised, then vain is our preaching, and vain also your faith. ¹⁵We are, indeed, also found false witnesses of God; for we have testified against God, that he raised the Christ, whom he did not raise, if, indeed, the dead are not raised. ¹⁶For if the dead are not raised, Christ has not been

raised; ¹⁷and if Christ has not been raised, your faith is vain; you are yet in your sins. ¹⁸Then, also, those who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished. ¹⁹If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men the most miserable.

²⁰But now, Christ has risen from the dead, the first-fruits of those who slept. ²¹For, since through man came death, through man comes also the resurrection of the dead. ²²For, as in Adam all die, so, also, in Christ shall all be made alive: ²³but each in his own order; Christ the first-fruit, afterward, those who are Christ's at his coming. ²⁴Then comes the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down every principality and authority and power: ²⁵for he must reign till he has put all enemies under his feet. ²⁶The last enemy, Death, shall be destroyed. ²⁷For he has put all things under his feet. But when the scripture says, that all things are put under him, it is evident that he is excepted, who did put all things under him. ²⁸And when all things shall have been put under him, then, also, shall the Son himself be subjected to him that did put all things under him, that God may be the all in all.

²⁹For else, what shall those do, who are immersed for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? Why, then, are they immersed for the dead?

³⁰And why are we in danger every hour? ³¹I protest, by the joy which I have over you in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily. ³²If, to speak as a man, I have fought with wild beasts at Ephesus, what advantage is it to me, if the dead rise not? Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die. ³³Be not deceived: Evil communications corrupt good manners. ³⁴Awake, as you should, to soberness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God. I speak this to your shame.

³⁵But some one will say: How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

³⁶Thoughtless man! That which you sow is not made alive, unless it die; ³⁷and as to that which you sow, you sow not the body that shall be produced, but the naked grain, it may be of wheat, or of some other grain: ³⁸but God gives it a body, as it pleases him; and to every seed, its proper body. ³⁹All flesh is not the same flesh; but there is one flesh of men, another of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. ⁴⁰There are also bodies celestial, and bodies terrestrial:

but the glory of the celestial is one, and that of the terrestrial is another.⁴¹ There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for star differs from star in glory.

⁴² So, also, is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption: ⁴³ it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power: ⁴⁴ it is sown an animal body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is an animal body, and there is a spiritual body. ⁴⁵ So, also, it is written: The first man Adam became a living soul, the last Adam a life-giving spirit. ⁴⁶ But that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is animal; and afterward that which is spiritual. ⁴⁷ The first man is of the earth, earthly; the second man, the Lord from heaven. ⁴⁸ As the earthly man was, such also are the earthly; and as the heavenly man is, such also shall the heavenly be. ⁴⁹ And as we have borne the image of the earthly, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. ⁵⁰ But this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood can not inherit the kingdom of God, nor does corruption inherit incorruption.

⁵¹ Behold, I declare to you a mystery. We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed ⁵² in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet: For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. ⁵³ For this corruptible body must put on incorruptibility; and this mortal body must put on immortality. ⁵⁴ And when this corruptible body shall have put on incorruptibility, and this mortal body shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the word that is written: Death is swallowed up in victory. ⁵⁵ O Death, where is thy sting? O Hades, where is thy victory? ⁵⁶ The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. ⁵⁷ But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁵⁸ Therefore, my beloved brethren, be firm, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord; for you know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.

XVI. ¹ As it respects the collection which is for the saints, as I have given orders to the churches of Galatia, so also do you. ² On the first day of the week, let each of you lay by him, and treasure up as he has pros-

pered, that there may be no collections when I come. ³ And when I come, whatever persons you approve, I will send with letters to carry your favor to Jerusalem. ⁴ And if it be proper that I also should go, they shall go with me.

⁵ Now I will come to you, when I have passed through Macedonia, for I intend to go through Macedonia; ⁶ and perhaps I may abide with you, or even spend the winter, that you may conduct me on my way to whatever place I may go. ⁷ For I do not wish to see you now in passing; for I hope to spend some time with you, if the Lord permit. ⁸ But I will continue in Ephesus till Pentecost: ⁹ for a great and effective door is opened to me, and there are many adversaries.

¹⁰ If Timothy come, see that he be with you without fear: for he works the work of the Lord, as I also do. ¹¹ Therefore, let no one despise him; but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come to me: for I look for him with the brethren.

¹² As it respects Apollos my brother, I urged him much to go to you with the brethren, yet he was not at all inclined to go now; but he will go when he has a suitable time.

¹³ Be watchful, stand fast in the faith, be men, be resolute. ¹⁴ Let every thing be done by you in love.

¹⁵ I beseech you, brethren, (you know the house of Stephanas, that they are the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have devoted themselves to the ministry of the saints,) ¹⁶ that you submit yourselves to such, and to every one that works and labors with us.

¹⁷ I rejoice at the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus; for they have supplied what was wanting on your part: ¹⁸ for they have refreshed my spirit, and yours. There fore, acknowledge such.

¹⁹ The churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla, with the church that is in their house, send you many salutations in the Lord. ²⁰ All the brethren salute you. Salute one another with a holy kiss.

²¹ The salutation of me, Paul, with my own hand. ²² If any one loves not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be accursed. The Lord comes.

²³ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. ²⁴ My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

Paul to the Corinthians.

Second Letter.

I. ¹Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timothy my brother, to the church of God which is in Corinth, with all the saints that are in all Achaia: ²grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

³Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort, ⁴who con soles us in all our afflictions, so that we are able to comfort those who are in any affliction, with the comfort with which we ourselves are comforted by God. ⁵For as the sufferings for the Christ abound in us, so also through Christ abounds our consolation. ⁶And if we are afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which salvation is effected by your patient endurance of the same sufferings that we also suffer; (and our hope in you is steadfast;) or if we are consoled, it is for your comfort and salvation; ⁷because we know, that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so also you shall be partakers of the comfort.

⁸For we do not wish you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning our affliction which came upon us in Asia, that we were exceedingly oppressed, beyond our strength, so that we despaired even of life. ⁹But we have in ourselves the sentence of death, that we may not trust in ourselves, but in God, who raises the dead; ¹⁰who delivered us from so great a death, and does still deliver us: in whom we have confidence, that he will continue to deliver us, ¹¹if you also unite in prayer for our aid, that the favor bestowed on us, through the intercession of many persons, may cause thanks to be given by many for us.

¹²For the ground of our rejoicing is this: the testimony of our conscience that we have lived in the world more—abundantly, indeed, for you—in sincerity and godly purity, not in carnal wisdom, but in the grace of God. ¹³For we write to you nothing else than what you recognize, or even acknowledge; and which I hope you will acknowledge to the end; ¹⁴as some of

you also acknowledge us, that we are the cause of your rejoicing, even as you, also, are of ours, in the day of the Lord Jesus.

¹⁵And in this confidence I intended to go to you before, that you might have a second benefit; ¹⁶and by you, to pass through into Macedonia, and to come again to you from Macedonia, and be conducted by you into Judea. ¹⁷In forming this purpose, did I, therefore, behave with levity? or do I purpose what I purpose, according to the flesh, that there may be with me, yes yes, and no, no?

¹⁸But God is true; for our preaching to you was not yes and no: ¹⁹for the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, by me and Sylvanus and Timothy, was not yes and no, but in him was yes. ²⁰For whatever promises of God there are, are in him yes, and in him amen, to the glory of God by us. ²¹For he who establishes us with you in Christ, and has anointed us, is God, ²²who has also set his seal upon us, and given us the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

²³But I call on God as a witness against my soul, that wishing to spare you, I did not go to Corinth; ²⁴not that we are lords over your faith, but fellow-workers for your joy: for by faith you stand.

II. ¹But I determined this in myself, that with sorrow I would not again come to you: ²for if I cause you to grieve, who is he that makes me glad, but he that is made sorry by me? ³And I wrote to you this very thing, that, on coming to you, I might not have sorrow from those from whom I ought to receive joy; because I have confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all. ⁴For out of much affliction and distress of heart, I wrote to you with many tears: not that you might be grieved, but that you might know the love which I have more abundantly for you.

⁵But if any one has caused grief, he has grieved, not me only, but, in some measure—not to speak harshly—all of

you. ⁶Sufficient for such a one is the punishment, which was inflicted by the greater number: ⁷so that, on the other hand, you should rather forgive and comfort him, lest such a one should be swallowed up in too much sorrow. ⁸Wherefore, I exhort you to give him an assurance of your love. ⁹For I wrote to you for this purpose also, that I might have a sure proof from you, whether you are obedient in all things. ¹⁰Whom you forgive any thing, I forgive it also: for what I have forgiven, if I have forgiven any thing, I have forgiven for your sake, in the person of Christ, ¹¹lest an advantage should be taken of us by Satan; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

¹²And when I came to Troas to preach the gospel of the Christ, and a door was opened to me in the Lord, ¹³I had no rest in my spirit, because I did not find Titus my brother; but I took leave of them, and went into Macedonia.

¹⁴Now, thanks be to God, who always causes us to triumph in the Christ, and sheds in every place, by us, the fragrance of the knowledge of himself. ¹⁵For, through God, we are a sweet odor of Christ, among the saved, and among the lost: ¹⁶to the one, we are the odor of death ending in death; to the other, the odor of life ending in life: and who is sufficient for these things? ¹⁷For we do not, as the many, adulterate the word of God; but, as from sincerity, but, as from God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

III. ¹Do we begin again to commend our-selves? or do we need, as some do, letters of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? ²You are our letter, written in our hearts, known and read by all men; ³you are well known to be a letter of Christ, written by us as his ministers, not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.

⁴Now, confidence such as this we have, through the Christ, toward God; ⁵not that we are able, of ourselves, to devise anything, as from ourselves; but our ability is from God, ⁶who has made us able ministers of the new covenant, not of letter, but of spirit: for the letter kills, but the spirit makes alive. ⁷For if the ministering of death, *by means of a covenant* that was written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the sons of Israel could not look steadily at the face

of Moses, on account of the glory of his face, which glory was to come to an end: ⁸how shall not the ministering of the spirit be more glorious? ⁹For if the ministering of condemnation be glory, much more does the ministering of righteousness surpass in glory. ¹⁰For that which was made glorious had no glory in this respect, because of the glory that surpasses. ¹¹For if that which was to come to an end was glorious, much more that which is to remain is glorious.

¹²Since then we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech, ¹³and do not as Moses did, who put a vail over his face, so that the sons of Israel could not steadily look to the end of that which was to come to an end. ¹⁴But their minds were blinded: for till this day, in the reading of the old covenant, the same vail remains not taken away, which vail is removed in Christ. ¹⁵But to this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart: ¹⁶but whenever their heart shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away. ¹⁷Now the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. ¹⁸And we all, with unvailed face, reflecting the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Lord the Spirit.

IV. ¹Wherefore, having this ministry, inasmuch as we have received mercy, we faint not; ²but we have renounced the secret works of shame, not walking in craftiness, nor adulterating the word of God; but, by the manifestation of the truth, commanding ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

³But if our gospel is vailed, it is vailed among the lost, ⁴whose unbelieving minds the god of this age has darkened, so that the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should not shine to them. ⁵For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, and ourselves your servants, for Jesus sake. ⁶Because God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, has shined in our hearts, to give the light of the glorious knowledge of God in the person of Jesus Christ.

⁷But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the exceeding greatness of the power may be God's and not our own. ⁸We are pressed on all sides, yet not restrained; perplexed, but not in despair; ⁹persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; ¹⁰always bearing about in our body the violent death of the Lord

Jesus, that the life also of Jesus may be made manifest in our body.¹¹ For we who live are continually delivered up to death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus may be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

¹² So, then, death is active in us, but life in you. ¹³ But, having the same spirit of faith, according to that which is written, I believed, and for this reason I have spoken; we also believe, and for this reason we speak,¹⁴ knowing that he who raised up the Lord Jesus will raise us up also by Jesus, and present us together with you. ¹⁵ For all these afflictions are for your sakes, that the favor which abounds *to me*, may, through the thanksgiving of the many, abound richly to the glory of God.

¹⁶ For this reason we faint not: but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. ¹⁷ For our present light affliction works out for us an eternal fullness of glory, excelling all excellence,¹⁸ while we look not at the things that are seen, but at the things that are not seen: for the things seen are temporal; but the things not seen are eternal.

V. ¹For we know that if our earthly house, which is but a tent, should be destroyed, we have a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. ² For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house that is from heaven,³ since, having been clothed, we shall not be found naked. ⁴ For we who are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened, not because we wish to be unclothed, but clothed upon, that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life.

⁵ Now, he that has formed us for this very thing is God, who also has given us the earnest of the Spirit. ⁶ Therefore, we are always confident, especially since we know that, while living in the body, we are absent from the Lord: ⁷ for we walk by faith, not by sight: ⁸ we are confident, indeed, and would be pleased rather to depart from the body, and to dwell with the Lord. ⁹ For this reason we also endeavor, whether we remain in the body or depart from it, to be acceptable to him. ¹⁰ For we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, that each may receive his reward for the things done in his body, according to what he has done, whether good or evil.

¹¹ Knowing, then, the fearful judgment of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made

manifest to God. I hope, indeed, that we are also made manifest in your consciences.¹² We do not again commend ourselves to you, but give you an occasion to boast of us, that you may be able to answer those who glory in appearance, and not in heart.¹³ For if we be beside ourselves, it is for God; or, if we be of sound mind, it is for you.¹⁴ For the love of Christ constrains us, because we have this judgment—that if one died for all, then have all died:¹⁵ and he died for all, that those who live should no more live for themselves, but for him who died for them, and rose again.

¹⁶ So, then, we henceforth know no man according to the flesh; if, indeed, we have known Christ according to the flesh, yet now we no longer thus know him.¹⁷ So, then, if any man is in Christ, he is a new creature; the old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.¹⁸ And all these things are from God, who has reconciled us to himself through Jesus Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation;¹⁹ that is, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world to himself, not charging their offenses to them, and he has committed to us the word of reconciliation.

²⁰ Therefore, we act as ambassadors for Christ, as though God entreated through us; we beseech in Christ's stead, be reconciled to God:²¹ for he has made him, who knew no sin, a sin-offering for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in him.

VI. ¹As co-workers with him, we beseech you, that you receive not the grace of God in vain: ²(for he says: I have heard thee in an acceptable time, and in the day of salvation I have helped thee. Behold, now is the acceptable time; behold, now is the day of salvation:) ³ for we put no stumbling-block in any man's way, in order that this ministry may not be blamed;⁴ but in all things we commend ourselves as the ministers of God, in much suffering, in afflictions, in distresses, in straits,⁵ in stripes, in prisons,, in commotions, in labors, in watchings, in fastings; ⁶ by purity, by knowledge, by long forbearance, by kindness, by the Holy Spirit, by love unfeigned,⁷ by the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armor of righteousness on the right hand and on the left,⁸ by honor and dishonor, by evil report, and good report; as impostors, yet truthful;⁹ as unknown, yet

well-known; as dying, and behold, we live; as chastened, and yet not put to death; ¹⁰as sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, yet possessing all things.

¹¹Corinthians, our mouth is opened to you, our heart is enlarged: ¹²you are not straitened in us, but you are straitened in your own affections. ¹³That you may repay me in like manner, (I speak as to children,) be you also enlarged.

¹⁴Be not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? What communion has light with darkness? ¹⁵What agreement has Christ with Belial? What connection has a believer with an unbeliever? ¹⁶What has a temple of God in common with one of idols? For you are the temple of the living God, as God has said: I will dwell in them, and walk among them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. ¹⁷For this reason, come out from among them, and separate yourselves, says the Lord, and touch not an unclean person, and I will receive you; ¹⁸and I will be to you a father, and you shall be to me sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty.

VII. ¹Therefore, having these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from every pollution of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. ²Regard us cordially; we have wronged no one, we have corrupted no one, we have made gain by no one. ³I do not say this to condemn you; for I have said before, that you are in our hearts, so that we could die with you, and live with you. ⁴Great is my plainness of speech to you, great is my boasting of you; I am filled with comfort, I am exceedingly joyful in all our affliction.

⁵For when we came into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest; but we were oppressed on every side: without were battles, within were fears. ⁶But God, who comforts those who are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus; ⁷and not only by his coming, but also by the consolation with which he was comforted in you when he told us of your strong affection, your grief, your zeal for me; so that I rejoiced the more. ⁸For although I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do not regret it, though I did regret it. For I see that the same letter gave you sorrow, though but for a short time. ⁹Now I rejoice not

that you were made sorry, but that you sorrowed in order to repentance. For you sorrowed in a way acceptable to God, that you might in nothing receive injury from us. ¹⁰For godly sorrow works repentance not to be regretted, which leads to salvation: but the sorrow of the world works death. ¹¹For behold this very thing, that you sorrowed in a godly manner; what earnestness it produced in you; what defense of yourselves; what indignation; what fear; what strong affection; what zeal; what assertion of right. In all respects you have shown yourselves to be blameless in this matter. ¹²Therefore, though I wrote to you, it was not on account of him who did the wrong, nor on account of him who received the wrong; but that our diligent care for you, in the sight of God, might be made manifest to you.

¹³For this reason, we have been comforted by means of your comfort: and we rejoiced exceedingly more indeed, on account of the joy of Titus, for his spirit was refreshed by you all. ¹⁴For if I boasted of you to him, in any respect, I am not made ashamed; but as I have spoken all things to you in truth, so also has our boasting to Titus been found to be truth: ¹⁵and his affection for you is the more abundant, as he remembers the obedience of you all, how you received him with fear and trembling. ¹⁶I rejoice that I have confidence in you in all things.

VIII. ¹We make known to you, brethren, God's gracious gift, which has been given in the churches of Macedonia; ²that under an afflicting trial, their overflowing joy, and their deep poverty, abounded to the riches of their liberality; ³for I testify that according to their power, and beyond their power, they gave voluntarily, ⁴beseeching us, with much entreaty, that they might give, and take part in the ministering to the saints; ⁵and they did this, not only as we had hoped, but they gave themselves first to the Lord, and then to us, through the will of God; ⁶so that we exhorted Titus, that, as he had previously begun, so he would bring to an end this gift among you also.

⁷Now as you excel in every thing, in faith, and in speech, and in knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love for us, see that you excel in this gift also. ⁸I do not speak this as a commandment, but on account of the zeal of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love. ⁹For you

know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet, for your sakes, he became poor, that you, through his poverty, might become rich. ¹⁰ And I give my judgment in this matter; for this is profitable for you, who began not only to do, but to show a willing mind, a year ago. ¹¹ Now, therefore, perfect also the doing of this; that as there was a readiness of mind to be willing, so also there may be an accomplishment of *the doing*, out of that which you have. ¹² For if there is a readiness of mind, one is accepted according to what he has, not according to what he has not. ¹³ For I do not intend that there shall be relief to others, and affliction to you; but that, according to equality, your abundance, at the present time, may supply their wants; ¹⁴ and that, *at a future time*, their abundance may supply your wants; that there may be equality, ¹⁵ as it is written: He that gathered much had nothing over; and he that gathered little did not lack.

¹⁶ But thanks be to God, who put the same earnest care for you in the heart of Titus: ¹⁷ for he accepted my exhortation, and, being more earnest, he went to you of his own accord. ¹⁸ And we have sent with him the brother whose praise in the gospel is in all the churches; ¹⁹ and who, moreover, was chosen by the churches as our fellow-traveler with this gift, which is to be distributed by us to the glory of the Lord himself, and as a declaration of your readiness of mind; ²⁰ being careful for this—that no one shall blame us in this abundance, which is ministered by us; ²¹ for we provide what is honorable, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men. ²² And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have often proved to be diligent in many things, but now much more diligent on account of the strong confidence which he has in you. ²³ If it is necessary to speak of Titus, he is my partner and fellow-worker for you; if our brethren are spoken of, they are the apostles of the churches, the glory of Christ. ²⁴ Therefore, give to them, in the presence of the churches, a proof of your love, and of our boasting of you.

IX. ¹For of the relief which is for the saints, it is needless for me to write to you. ² For I know your readiness of mind, on account of which I boasted of you to the Macedonians, that Achaia was ready a year ago: and

your zeal has incited very many. ³ But I have sent the brethren, that our boasting of you in this respect may not be in vain; that you may be ready, as I said: ⁴lest, possibly, should the Macedonians come with me, and find you unprepared, we (not to say you) might be made ashamed by this same confident boasting. ⁵ Therefore, I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren to go before to you, and make ready beforehand your bounty, which has been so much talked of before, that this might be ready as a bounty, and not as a gift extorted from you.

⁶ But remember this, that he who sows sparingly, shall also reap sparingly; and he who sows bountifully, shall also reap bountifully. ⁷ Let each one give, as he purposed in his heart; not with grief, nor from necessity: for God loves a cheerful giver. ⁸ And God is able to confer every gift upon you abundantly, that you, always having all sufficiency in every thing, may have enough for every good work; ⁹ as it is written: He has scattered abroad; he has given to the poor; his righteousness remains forever. ¹⁰ Now, he that furnishes seed to the sower will both furnish bread for food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness; ¹¹ that you may be enriched in every thing, for all liberality which produces through us thanksgiving to God; ¹² because the administration of this service not only supplies the wants of the saints, but also abounds in many thanksgivings to God; ¹³ (since through the proof which this service gives, they glorify God for your acknowledged subjection to the gospel of Christ, and for the liberality of your contribution for them, and for all;) ¹⁴ and in their prayer for you, since they have strong affection for you on account of the eminent grace of God that is in you. ¹⁵ Thanks be to God for his unspeakable gift.

X. ¹Now I, the same Paul, who, when absent, am bold toward you, entreat you, by the mildness and gentleness of Christ; ² I, indeed, beseech you, that I may not, when present, be bold with that confidence with which I think I shall be bold against some, who think of us as if we walked according to the flesh. ³ For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh, ⁴ (for the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty, through God, for the overthrowing of strongholds,) ⁵ overthrowing reasonings and every high thing that exalts itself

against the knowledge of God, and leading captive every thought to the obedience of the Christ, ⁶and being ready to take vengeance on all disobedience, when your obedience shall have been fully established.

⁷Do you look on things according to the outward appearance? If any one trusts in himself, that he is Christ s, let him again reason thus of himself: that as he is Christ s, so also are we. ⁸For though I should boast even, somewhat more abundantly of our authority, which the Lord has given us for edification, and not for your destruction, I would not be ashamed: ⁹that I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters. ¹⁰For his letters, says one, are weighty and powerful, but his bodily presence is weak, and his style of speech contemptible. ¹¹Let such a one conclude thus—that such as we are in word, by letters, while absent, such also will we be in deed, when present.

¹²For we do not presume to rank or compare ourselves with some of those who commend themselves: but they, measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves with themselves, have no understanding.

¹³But we will not boast ourselves with respect to regions not measured to us; but according to the measure of the line which God, who measures, has appointed for us to reach even to you. ¹⁴For we do not stretch ourselves too far, as if we did not come to you: for even as far as to you, have we already come in the gospel of the Christ, ¹⁵not boasting ourselves in the labors of others in regions not measured off to us, but having hope that, when your faith is increased, we shall be magnified among you abundantly, according to our line, ¹⁶so as to preach the gospel in regions beyond you, and not to boast in regions made ready under another man's line. ¹⁷But let him that boasts, boast in the Lord: ¹⁸for he that commends himself is not approved; but he whom the Lord commends.

XI. ¹I wish you could bear with me a little in my folly; but yet bear with me: ²for I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy: for I have betrothed you to one husband, that I may present you a chaste virgin to Christ. ³But I fear lest, as the serpent deceived Eve by his cunning, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity which pertains to Christ. ⁴For if he that comes should preach another Jesus, whom

we did not preach, or, if you receive another Spirit, which you did not receive, or another gospel, which you have not accepted, you would well bear with him.

⁵I count myself indeed to be in no respect inferior to the very greatest of the apostles. ⁶But if I am unpolished in my style of speech, yet I am not so in knowledge. But we have been fully manifested among you in all things. ⁷Have I committed a sin, in making myself lowly, that you might be exalted, because I preached the gospel to you without cost? ⁸I robbed other churches, taking wages to do you service: and when I was present with you, and wanted, I was not a burden to any one; ⁹for the brethren who came from Macedonia supplied my wants; and in every thing I have kept myself from being burdensome to you, and will continue to keep myself. ¹⁰As the truth of Christ is in me, this boasting shall not be silenced, in my case, in the regions of Achaia. ¹¹Why? Because I do not love you? God knows. ¹²But what I am doing I will also continue to do, that I may cut off occasion from those who desire an occasion, that in what they boast, they may be found even as we.

¹³For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ; ¹⁴and no wonder, for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. ¹⁵Therefore, it is no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves so as to be like the ministers of righteousness; of such, the end shall be according to their works.

¹⁶I say again, let no one think that I am without understanding; but if so, even as one without understanding bear with me, that I also may boast a little. ¹⁷What I say, I say not according to the Lord, but as in folly, in this same confidence of boasting. ¹⁸Since many boast according to the flesh, I also will boast. ¹⁹For it is a pleasure to you to bear with men of no understanding, since you yourselves are wise. ²⁰For you bear it, if one enslave you, if one devour you, if one take from you, if one exalt himself, if one smite you on the face,

²¹I speak of *their reproaches*, as if we were weak. In whatever matter any one is bold, (I speak foolishly,) I also am bold. ²²Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they of the posterity of Abraham? So am I. ²³Are they ministers of Christ? (I say it

foolishly,) I am above them. In labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths often. ²⁴From the Jews, five times I received forty stripes, save one; ²⁵three times I was beaten with rods; once I was stoned; three times I have been shipwrecked; a night and a day I spent in the deep. ²⁶In journeying so often, in perils from rivers, in perils from robbers, in perils from my own race, in perils from the Gentiles, in perils in the city, in perils in the desert, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; ²⁷in weariness and in toil, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness: ²⁸besides those things which come upon me from other sources, I have a daily concourse of troubles—my anxiety for all the churches.

²⁹Who is weak, and I am not weak? Who is led into sin, and I am not incensed? ³⁰If I must boast, I will boast in my infirmities. ³¹The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who is blessed for ever, knows that I do not lie. ³²In Damascus, the governor under Aretas the king, guarded the city of the Damascenes, desiring to apprehend me: ³³and through a window I was let down in a basket through the wall, and escaped his hands.

XII. ¹To boast is not suitable for me; I will come to visions and revelations from the Lord. ²I knew a man in Christ fourteen years ago; that such a one (whether in the body, I know not, or out of the body, I know not: God knows;) was caught away to the third heaven. ³I also know that such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I know not: God knows,) ⁴was caught away to Paradise, and heard words not to be spoken, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

⁵Of such a one I will boast; but of myself I will not boast, unless in my infirmities. ⁶For though I should choose to boast, I would not be void of understanding: for I will speak the truth. But I forbear, lest any one should think of me more than what he sees me to be, or what he hears of me.

⁷And, lest I should be too much exalted by the excellence of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, a messenger of Satan to buffet me, that I might not be too much exalted. ⁸With regard to this, I three times entreated the Lord that it might leave me; ⁹and

he said to me: My grace is sufficient for you; for my power is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly, therefore, will I boast in my infirmities, that the power of the Christ may abide upon me. ¹⁰For this reason, I take pleasure in infirmities, in outrages, in necessities, in persecutions, in straits, for Christ's sake. For when I am weak, then am I strong.

¹¹I have become of no understanding; you have compelled me. For I ought to have been commended by you: I am in no respect inferior to the very greatest of the apostles, although I am nothing. ¹²Truly, the signs of an apostle were worked among you in all patience, in signs and wonders and mighty deeds. ¹³For what is it in which you were inferior to other churches, unless in this—that I did not burden you? Forgive me this wrong.

¹⁴Behold, I am ready the third time to come to you, and I will not burden you: for I seek not yours, but you. For the children ought not to lay up treasure for the parents, but the parents for the children. ¹⁵I, indeed, will most gladly spend and be spent for your souls; though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved. ¹⁶Be it so, indeed; I did not burden you; but being crafty, I caught you by deceit. ¹⁷Did I overreach you by any of those whom I sent to you? ¹⁸I exhorted Titus, and with him sent the brother. Did Titus overreach you? Did we not walk in the same spirit? Did we not walk in the same steps?

¹⁹Do you think again that we offer you a defense of ourselves? We speak all these things before God in Christ, beloved, for your edification. ²⁰For I fear, lest when I come I shall find you not, such as I wish, and I shall be found by you not such as you wish: lest there shall be contentions, envies, excitements, strife, evil speaking, whisperings, party spirit, disorderly conduct: ²¹lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and I shall mourn over many of those who have already sinned, and have not repented of the uncleanness and lewdness and wantonness which they have committed.

XIII. ¹The third time am I coming to you. By the mouth of two or three witnesses, every matter shall be established. ²I have foretold, and now the second time, as if I was present, though being absent, I foretell to those who have sinned, and to all others, that, if

I come again, I will not spare; ³since you seek a proof of Christ's speaking in me, who toward you is not weak, but who is mighty in you: ⁴for though he was crucified in weakness, yet he lives by the power of God. For we also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you. ⁵Make trial of yourselves, whether you are in the faith; put yourselves to the proof. Do you not know your own selves, that Christ Jesus is in you? unless you be without proof.

⁶But I hope that you will know that we are not without proof. ⁷Yet I pray to God that you may do no evil; not that we may appear as having proof, but that you may do what is good, though we be as without proof. ⁸For we can do

nothing against the truth, but *we can do something* for the truth. ⁹For we rejoice when we are weak, and you are strong. And we pray also for this—your perfection. ¹⁰For this reason, I write these things, while absent, that I may not, when present, use severity, according to the authority which the Lord has given me for edification, and not for destruction.

¹¹Finally, brethren, farewell; be perfect, be comforted, be of the same mind, be at peace; and the God of love and of peace will be with you. ¹²Salute one another with a holy kiss. All the saints salute you.

¹³The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

Paul to the Galatians.

I. ¹Paul, an apostle, (not from men, nor by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,) ²and all the brethren that are with me, to the churches of Galatia: ³grace be to you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁴who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father, ⁵to whom be glory from age to age. Amen.

⁶I am astonished that you are so soon turning away from him that called you into the grace of Christ, to another gospel: ⁷which is nothing else than that there are some who trouble you, and are determined to pervert the gospel of the Christ. ⁸But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach to you any other gospel than that which we have preached, let him be accursed. ⁹As we said before, so even now I say again, if any one preaches to you any other gospel than that which you have received, let him be accursed. ¹⁰For, do I now seek the favor of men, or of God? or do I strive to please men? If, indeed, I would still please men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

¹¹But I make known to you, brethren, that the gospel which is preached by me, is not according to man: ¹²for neither did I receive it from man, nor was it taught me, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ. ¹³For you have heard of my former mode of life in Judaism, that I greatly persecuted the church of God, and laid it waste; ¹⁴and I surpassed in Judaism many of my own age and nation, being more exceedingly zealous for the tradition of my fathers.

¹⁵But when God, who chose me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, was pleased ¹⁶to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the Gentiles, I at once declined all conference with flesh and blood: ¹⁷nor did I go up to Jerusalem, to those who were apostles before me; but I went away into Arabia, and then returned to Damascus.

¹⁸Then, after three years, I went up to Jerusalem, in order to become personally acquainted with Peter; and I remained with him fifteen days: ¹⁹but of the apostles I saw no other,

but James the brother of the Lord. ²⁰With respect to the things which I now write to you, behold, before God I lie not.

²¹Then, I went into the regions of Syria and Cilicia: ²²but I was not known, in person, to the churches of Judea which are in Christ. ²³They had heard only that he who formerly persecuted us was now preaching the faith which he once destroyed. ²⁴And they glorified God in me.

II. ¹Then, fourteen years after, I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and I took Titus also with me. ²And I went up because of a revelation, and communicated to them the gospel that I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to those who are of reputation, lest, by any means, I should run or had run in vain. ³But not even Titus, who was with me, though he was a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised. ⁴*I acted thus* indeed on account of false brethren, stealthily brought in, who stole in to spy out our freedom, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage, ⁵to whom we yielded in submission, not even for an hour, in order that the truth of the gospel might remain with you.

⁶But from those who were supposed to be something; (what they were is a matter of no importance to me: God does not accept the person of man;) they, indeed, who were supposed to be something, communicated no additional truth to me; ⁷but, on the other hand, seeing that I was intrusted with the gospel of the uncircumcision, as Peter was with that of the circumcision, ⁸(for he who gave efficiency to Peter, for the apostleship of the circumcision, gave efficiency to me also, *as an apostle* for the Gentiles,) ⁹and knowing the grace that was given to me, James and Cephas and John, who seemed to be pillars, gave to me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship, that we should go to the Gentiles, but they to the circumcision, ¹⁰*requesting* only that we would remember the poor, which same thing I have been diligent in doing.

¹¹But when Peter came to Antioch, I openly opposed him, because he had incurred blame. ¹²For, before certain persons came from James, he ate with the Gentiles: but, when they had

come, he withdrew, and separated himself, because he feared those who were of the circumcision. ¹³ And the other Jews, also, acted hypocritically with him, so that even Barnabas was led away by their hypocrisy.

¹⁴ But when I saw that they did not walk uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said to Peter, before them all: If you, being a Jew, live after the manner of the Gentiles, and not after the manner of the Jews, why do you compel the Gentiles to observe Jewish customs? ¹⁵ We, who are Jews by birth, and not Gentile sinners, ¹⁶ knowing that a man is not justified by works of law, but by faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed on Christ Jesus, that we may be justified by faith in Christ, and not by works of law: because, by works of law no flesh shall be justified. ¹⁷ But if, while we seek to be justified in Christ, we ourselves are also found sinners, is Christ, therefore, the minister of sin? It can not be. ¹⁸ For if I build again those things which I have destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. ¹⁹ For, through law, I have died to law, that I might live to God. ²⁰ I have been crucified with Christ, yet I live; no longer I, but Christ lives in me. And the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. ²¹ I do not set aside the grace of God: for if righteousness be through law, then Christ has died in vain.

III. ¹O thoughtless Galatians, who has bewitched you, before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been plainly set forth crucified? ²This only I wish to learn of you: Did you receive the Spirit by works of law, or by the hearing of faith? ³ Are you so thoughtless? After having begun in Spirit, do you make an end in flesh? ⁴Have you suffered so many things in vain? if, indeed, it be in vain. ⁵ He that supplies to you the Spirit, and works mighty deeds among you, does he this by works of law or by the hearing of faith? ⁶even as Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness.

⁷ Know, therefore, that those who are of faith are the sons of Abraham. ⁸ For the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, preached beforehand the gospel to Abraham, saying: In you shall all the nations be blessed. ⁹ So, then, those who are of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham.

¹⁰ For as many as are of the works of the law

are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that does not continue in all things written in the book of the law to do them. ¹¹ But that no one is justified by law in the sight of God, is evident: for the just by faith shall live. ¹² The law, indeed, is not of faith; but he that does these things shall live by them. ¹³ Christ has bought us off from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us: (for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangs on a tree:) ¹⁴ in order that the blessing of Abraham may come upon the Gentiles in Christ Jesus, that we may receive the promise of the Spirit through the faith.

¹⁵ Brethren, I speak of things common among men: No one sets a covenant aside, or enjoins any thing additional after it is confirmed, though it be a man's covenant. ¹⁶ Now the promises were spoken to Abraham and to his offspring; he does not say: And to offsprings, *as if he spoke* of many; but as of one, And to your offspring, which is Christ. ¹⁷ And this I affirm, that the covenant which had been before confirmed by God with respect to Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, could not annul so as to make the promise of no effect. ¹⁸ For if the inheritance be by law, it is no longer by promise: but God bestowed it on Abraham by promise.

¹⁹ What, then, was the purpose of the law? It was added on account of transgressions, (till the offspring should come, to whom the promise was made,) having been appointed through the service of angels, in the hand of a mediator. ²⁰ Now, a mediator for one is impossible; but God is one.

²¹ Is the law, then, against the promises of God? It can not be. For if a law had been given which could have given life, surely righteousness would have been by law. ²² But the scripture has shut up all under sin, that the promise by faith in Christ Jesus may be given to those who believe. ²³ But before the faith came, we were kept under law, being shut up to the faith which was to be revealed.

²⁴ So, then, the law was our pedagogue that led us to Christ, that we might be justified by faith. ²⁵ But since the faith has come, we are no longer under a pedagogue: ²⁶ for you are all the sons of God, by faith in Christ Jesus: ²⁷ for as many of you as have been immersed into Christ,

have put on Christ.²⁸ There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bondman nor freeman, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus.²⁹ And if you are Christ's, then you are Abraham's posterity, and heirs according to the promise.

IV. ¹But I say, that the heir, as long as he is minor, differs in no respect from a servant, though he is owner of all;² but is under guardians and managers till the time appointed by the father.³ So, also, we, when we were minors, were in bondage under the rudiments of the world.⁴ But when the fullness of the time came, God sent forth his Son, born of a woman, born under the law,⁵ that he might buy off those who were under the law, that we might receive the adoption.⁶ And because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.⁷ So, then, you are no longer a servant, but a son; and if a son, an heir also of God, through Christ.

⁸ But, then, because you knew not God, you were enslaved to those who, by nature, are not gods:⁹ now, however, after having known God, rather indeed having been known by God, how is it that you are turning back to the weak and beggarly rudiments, to which you desire again to be in bondage, as at first?¹⁰ You observe days and months and times and years.¹¹ fear for you, lest I have bestowed labor upon you in vain.

¹² Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; because I was as you are. You have injured me in nothing.¹³ You know that through weakness of the flesh I preached the gospel to you at the first:¹⁴ and my trial, which was in my flesh, you did not despise or loathe; but you received me as an angel of God, as Christ Jesus.¹⁵ How great, then, was your blessedness! For I testify for you, that, if possible, you would have torn out your eyes, and have given them to me.¹⁶ Have I then become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

¹⁷ They are ardently attached to you, but not honorably; indeed, they desire to exclude us, that you may be ardently attached to them.¹⁸ It is honorable to be ardently attached always, in what is honorable, and not only when I am present with you.¹⁹ My little children, for whom I again suffer the pains of gestation, till Christ be formed in you,²⁰ I desire to be present with you now, and to change my tone, for I am in doubt concerning you.

²¹ Tell me, you that desire to be under the law, do you not understand the law?²² For it is written, that Abraham had two sons; one by a bondmaid, and one by a free woman.²³ But the one by the bondmaid was born according to the flesh; the other, by the free woman, was by promise.²⁴ These things are allegorized: for these women are the two covenants; the one from the Mount Sinai that brings forth for bondage, which is Hagar.²⁵ For Hagar represents Mount Sinai in Arabia, and corresponds to the present Jerusalem, for she is in bondage with her children.²⁶ But Jerusalem which is above is free; and she is the mother of us all.²⁷ For it is written: Rejoice you barren, that do not bear: break forth and cry aloud, you that travail not: for many more are the children of the deserted, than of her that had the husband of the *deserted*.²⁸ We, indeed, brethren, like Isaac, are children of promise.²⁹ But as then, he that was born according to the flesh persecuted him that was born according to the Spirit, so even now.³⁰ But what says the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son; for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the free-woman.³¹ Therefore, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free-woman.

V. ¹Stand firm, therefore, in the freedom with which Christ has made us free, and be not held fast again in the yoke of bondage.

² Behold, I Paul say to you, that if you be circumcised, Christ will profit you nothing.³ I testify indeed again to every man that is circumcised, that he is bound to do the whole law.⁴ You that are justified by law, have withdrawn from Christ: you have fallen from grace.⁵ For we, through the Spirit which we obtain by faith, wait for the hope of righteousness.⁶ For, in Christ Jesus, neither circumcision avails any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith that works by love.

⁷ You were running well; who kept you back from obedience to the truth?⁸ This readiness to be persuaded is not from him that calls you.⁹ A little leaven leavens the whole mass.¹⁰ I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will cultivate no other disposition: but he that troubles you, who ever he may be, shall bear his condemnation.¹¹ But, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why am I yet persecuted? Then, the offense of the cross has ceased.¹² that those

who trouble you would even cut themselves off.

¹³For you have been called to freedom, brethren: only use not your freedom as an occasion for the flesh, but become servants to one another, through love. ¹⁴For all the law is fulfilled in one commandment, in this: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. ¹⁵But if you bite and devour one another, take heed lest you be utterly destroyed by one another.

¹⁶I say this: Walk in the Spirit, and you will not fulfill the desires of the flesh. ¹⁷For the desire of the flesh is against the Spirit, and the desire of the Spirit is against flesh; and these are opposed, the one to the other, so that you can not do what you would. ¹⁸But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law. ¹⁹Now the works of the flesh are well known, and they are these—lewdness, uncleanness, wantonness, ²⁰idolatry, sorcery, enmities, strifes, jealousies, anger, party-spirit, divisions, sects, ²¹envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like; with respect to which, I tell you now, as I also told you in times past, that those who practice such things shall riot inherit the kingdom of God.

²²But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness, ²³meekness, self-control. Against such there is no law. ²⁴Now those who are Christ's have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. ²⁵If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. ²⁶Let us not be vain-glorious, provoking one another, envying one another.

VI. ¹Brethren, if a man be overtaken in any fault, do you, who are spiritual, restore such a one in the spirit of meekness, considering yourself, lest you also be tempted. ²Bear with the weaknesses of one another, and so ful-

fill the law of Christ. ³For if any one think himself to be something when he is nothing, he deceives himself: ⁴but let each one prove his own work, and then he will have cause to boast with respect to himself only, and not with respect to another: ⁵for each one shall bear his own burden.

⁶Let him that is instructed in the word share with his instructor in all good things. ⁷Be not deceived; God is not mocked. For whatever a man sows, that also shall he reap. ⁸For he that sows for his flesh shall from the flesh, reap corruption; but he that sows for his spirit shall from the Spirit reap life eternal. ⁹Let us not become weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. ¹⁰Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all, but especially to those who are the household of the faith.

¹¹You see how long a letter I have written to you with my own hand. ¹²As many as wish to make a fair show in the flesh, these compel you to be circumcised, only that they may not suffer persecution for the cross of the Christ. ¹³For not even do those very men, who are circumcised, keep the law: but they wish you to be circumcised, that they may boast in your flesh. ¹⁴But may I never boast save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world has been crucified to me, and I to the world. ¹⁵For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision is any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. ¹⁶And as many as walk by this rule, peace and mercy be upon them, and upon the Israel of God.

¹⁷Henceforward let no one give me trouble: for I bear in my body the wounds which I received on account of the Lord Jesus.

¹⁸Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

Paul to the Ephesians.

I. ¹Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints that are in Ephesus, and the faithful in Christ Jesus: ²grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

³Praised be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in heavenly things in Christ, ⁴according as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and blameless before him in love, ⁵having predestinated us for adoption to himself through Jesus Christ, according to the good pleasure of his will, ⁶for the praise of the glory of his grace, by which he has shown us favor in the Beloved, ⁷in whom we have redemption through his blood, *even* the remission of sins, according to the riches of his grace, ⁸which he has made to abound to us in all wisdom and understanding, ⁹by making known to us the mystery of his will according to his good purpose which he had before established in himself, ¹⁰for a dispensation at the fullness of the times, in order that he might bring together for himself all things in the Christ, both those which are in the heavens, and those which are on earth; ¹¹in him in whom we have obtained our portion, having been predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things according to the counsel of his will, ¹²that we should be for the praise of his glory; *even we*, who before had hope in the Christ: ¹³in whom you also hoped after you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom, after you also believed, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, ¹⁴which is the earnest of our inheritance, *given* for the redemption of his possession to the praise of his glory.

¹⁵For this reason I also, since I have heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and your love to all the saints, ¹⁶do not cease to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers, ¹⁷that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give you the spirit of wisdom and of revelation in the acknowledgment of him, ¹⁸that, the eyes of your understanding being enlightened, you may know what is the hope of

his calling, and what are the glorious riches of his inheritance in the saints, ¹⁹and what is the exceeding greatness of his power to ward us who believe in accordance with the energy of his mighty power, ²⁰which he made active in the Christ when he raised him from the dead, and caused him to sit at his right hand in the heavenly places, ²¹high above every principality and authority and power and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age, but also in that which is to come; ²²and subjected all things under his feet, and made him head over all things for the church, ²³which is his body, the fullness of him who fills all his members with all things,

II. ¹Even you, being dead to offenses and sins, ²in which you formerly walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that is actively at work in the sons of disobedience: ³among whom also we all formerly lived in the desires of our flesh, doing the will of the flesh and of the feelings, and were by nature children of wrath, even as others: ⁴but God, being rich in mercy, on account of his great love with which he loved us, ⁵made alive with Christ even us, being dead to our offenses, (by grace you are saved,) ⁶and raised us up, and made us sit together in heavenly places, in Christ Jesus; ⁷that he might show, in the ages to come, the exceeding riches of his grace by his kindness to us in Christ Jesus.

⁸For by grace you have been saved through the faith; and this matter is not of yourselves; it is the gift of God: ⁹not by works, lest any one should boast. ¹⁰For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God before prepared, that we should walk in them.

¹¹For which reason, remember that you were formerly Gentiles, by natural descent, and that you are called Uncircumcision by the Circumcision; so called, from a mark made in the flesh by hands; ¹²that you were at that time without Christ, being aliens from the community of Israel, and strangers to the covenants of promise, having no hope, and having no God in

the world: ¹³but now, in Christ Jesus, you, who were formerly far off, have become near, by the blood of the Christ. ¹⁴For he is our peace, who has made both parties one, and broken down the partition wall that separated us, ¹⁵having abolished, in his flesh, the cause of enmity, the law of commandments in ordinances, that he might, by himself, form the two into one new man, thus making peace; ¹⁶and that he might reconcile both, in one body, to God, through the cross, having by it put to death the cause of enmity; ¹⁷and having come, he preached peace to you who were far off, and to those who were near: ¹⁸for, through him, we both have access in one Spirit to the Father.

¹⁹Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and sojourners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God, ²⁰having been builded upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone, ²¹in whom the whole building, compactly fitted together, grows into a holy temple in the Lord; ²²in whom you also are builded together, for a dwelling-place of God by his Spirit.

III. ¹For this reason, I Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus on account of you Gentiles, ²if, indeed, you have heard of the stewardship of the grace of God, which was given to me for your benefit, ³that by revelation was made known to me the mystery, (as I briefly wrote above, ⁴so that, when you read, you can see my understanding in the mystery of the Christ,) ⁵which, in other generations, was not made known to the sons of men, as it is now revealed to his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; ⁶that the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in the Christ, through the gospel, ⁷of which I was made a minister according to the gift of the grace of God which was given to me, in proportion to the energy of his power: ⁸to me, who am by far the least of all the saints, has this grace been given, that I might preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of the Christ, ⁹and enlighten all men with respect to the plan of the mystery, which was concealed from the ages in God, who created all things; ¹⁰to the end that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known, through the church, to the principalities and authorities in the heavenly regions, ¹¹according to

the arrangement of the ages, which he established by Christ Jesus our Lord, ¹²in whom we have boldness and access with confidence, through our faith in him. ¹³For which cause I beseech you not to grow faint on account of my afflictions for you, which are your glory.

¹⁴For this reason I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵from whom the whole family in heaven and on earth is named, ¹⁶that he may grant to you, according to the riches of his glory, to be mightily strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man, ¹⁷that Christ may dwell in your hearts through the faith; ¹⁸that, being rooted and founded in love, you may be fully able to comprehend with all the saints what is the breadth and length and depth and hight, ¹⁹and to know the love of the Christ that passes our knowledge, that you may be filled with all the fullness of God.

²⁰Now to him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think according to his power which works in us, ²¹to him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus, throughout all the generations of the age of ages. Amen.

IV. ¹I therefore, the prisoner in the Lord, exhort you to walk in a manner worthy of the calling with which you have been called; ²with all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, bearing with one another in love, ³earnestly endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. ⁴There is one body and one Spirit, even as you have been called in one hope of your calling; ⁵one Lord, one faith, one immersion; ⁶one God and Father of all, who is over all, and through all, and in you all.

⁷But grace has been given to each one of us, according to the measure of the gift of the Christ. ⁸For which reason, the scripture says: When he ascended on high, he led captive a multitude of captives, and gave gifts to men. ⁹But this—He ascended—what does it mean, but that he also descended into the lower earthly regions? ¹⁰He that descended is also he that ascended high above all the heavens, that he might fill all things.

¹¹And he himself gave some to be apostles, and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; ¹²for the complete instruction of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the building up of the body of the

Christ, ¹³till we all come to the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to a measure of stature that fully develops the Christ; ¹⁴that we might no longer be children, tossed and carried about by every wind of teaching, through the artifice of men, through craftiness used by them for the deliberate planning of deceit; ¹⁵but speaking truthfully in love, we might grow up in all things, into him who is the head, *even the Christ*, ¹⁶from whom the whole body, compactly fitted together, and united by every helping joint, according to the energy in the measure of each part, makes increase of the body, for the building up of itself in love.

¹⁷This I say, therefore, and appeal to you solemnly in the Lord, that you no longer walk as the other Gentiles walk, in the error of their minds, ¹⁸darkened in their understanding, alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardness of their heart; ¹⁹who, being past feeling, have given themselves up to licentiousness, that they may work all manner of uncleanness with greediness.

²⁰But you have not so learned the Christ, ²¹if, indeed, you have heard of him, and been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: ²²that, as to your former life, you put off the old man, which is corrupt, according to its deceitful desires, ²³and that you be renewed in the spirit of your mind, ²⁴and put on the new man, which, according to the will of God, is created in righteousness and true holiness. ²⁵For which reason, putting away lying, speak, every one, truth with his neighbor: for we are members one of another.

²⁶Be angry, and yet do not sin: let not the sun go down on your wrath, ²⁷nor give place to the devil.

²⁸Let him that steals, steal no more: but rather let labor, working with his hands that which is good, that he may have something to give to him that has need.

²⁹Let no impure speech come out of your mouth, but whatever is good for needful edification, that it may give grace to the hearers: ³⁰and grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, with which you have been sealed for the day of redemption.

³¹Let all bitterness and anger and wrath and clamor and impious speaking be put away from you, with all malice: ³²and be kind to one

another, compassionate, forgiving one another, as God in Christ has forgiven you.

V ¹Be you, therefore, imitators of God, as beloved children; ²and walk in love, as the Christ also loved us, and gave himself for us as an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet odor.

³But lewdness, and all manner of uncleanness, or covetousness, let them not be named among you, as it becomes saints; ⁴nor obscene language, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not becoming; but rather the cheerful words of a thankful heart. ⁵For you know this, that no lewd nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of the Christ and of God. ⁶Let no one deceive you with vain words: for on account of these things, the wrath of God comes upon the sons of disobedience. ⁷Therefore, be not partakers with them. ⁸For you were formerly darkness; but now you are light in the Lord: walk as children of light; ⁹(for the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) ¹⁰learning what is acceptable to the Lord; ¹¹and do not participate in the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather even reprove them; ¹²for it is a shame even to speak of the things that are done by them in secret. ¹³But all these works, when reproved, are made manifest by the light: for every thing that makes manifest is light. ¹⁴Wherefore, the scripture says: Awake you that sleep, and arise from the dead, and Christ will give you light.

¹⁵See, then, that you walk circumspectly, not as unwise, but as wise men, ¹⁶redeeming the time, because the days are evil. ¹⁷Wherefore, be not ignorant, but understand what the will of the Lord is. ¹⁸And be not drunk with wine, in which is debauchery; but be filled with the Spirit; ¹⁹speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord, ²⁰giving thanks to our God and Father always for all things in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; ²¹being subject one to another in the fear of God.

²²Wives, be subject to your own husbands as to the Lord: ²³for the husband is the head of the wife, as the Christ also is the head of the church; and he is the savior of the body. ²⁴But as the church is subject to the Christ, so, also, let the wives be subject to their own husbands in every thing.

²⁵Husbands, love your wives, as the Christ also loved the church, and delivered himself up for it, ²⁶that he might sanctify it, having cleansed it by the bath of water through the word, ²⁷in order that he might present it to himself a glorious church, having neither stain, nor wrinkle, nor any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. ²⁸So ought men to love their own wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself; ²⁹for no one ever yet hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Christ the church: ³⁰because we are members of his body, being of his flesh, and of his bones. ³¹For this cause a man shall leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave to his wife, and the two shall be one flesh. ³²Great is this mystery; but I speak of Christ and of the church. ³³But yet, let each one of you so love his wife as himself; and let the wife see that she reverence her husband.

VI. ¹Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. ²Honor your father and your mother, which is the first commandment with a promise, ³that it may be well with you, and that you may live long on the earth.

⁴And you fathers, do not provoke your children to anger: but bring them up in the instruction and discipline of the Lord.

⁵Servants, be subject to your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in the simplicity of your heart, as to the Christ; ⁶not with eye-service, as pleasing men, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the soul; ⁷with good will doing service as to the Lord, and not as to men; ⁸knowing that whatever good any one does, the same shall he receive from the Lord, whether he is a servant or a freeman.

⁹And you masters, do the same things to them, leaving off threatening, knowing that you yourselves have a master in heaven, and there is

no respect of persons with him.

¹⁰Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in his mighty power. ¹¹Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand firm against the wiles of the devil: ¹²for our conflict is not with flesh and blood, but with the principalities, with the authorities, with the rulers of the darkness of this world, with the wicked spirits in the heavenly regions. ¹³Therefore, take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand *them* in the evil day, and having overcome them all, to stand firm.

¹⁴Stand, therefore, having your loins girded about with truth, and wearing the breastplate of righteousness, ¹⁵and having your feet shod with that preparation for defense supplied by the gospel of peace; ¹⁶taking up, over all, the shield of faith, with which you shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one: ¹⁷and take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: ¹⁸praying with all prayer and supplication, at all times, in the Spirit; and to this end being watchful in all perseverance, and supplication for all the saints: ¹⁹and for me, that speech may be given me, in opening my mouth with boldness, that I may make known the mystery of the gospel, ²⁰for which I am an ambassador in chains, that in it I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

²¹But that you, also, may know my affairs, how I do, Tychicus, my beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, will make known all things to you; ²²him I have sent to you for this very purpose, that you may know our affairs, and that he may comfort your hearts.

²³Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

²⁴Grace be with all those who love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity.

Paul to the Philippians.

I. ¹Paul and Timothy, servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus that are in Philippi, with the bishops and deacons: ²grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

³I thank my God on every remembrance of you— ⁴always in every supplication of mine for you all, making my supplication with joy— ⁵for your fellowship in the gospel from the first day till now: ⁶being confident of this very thing, that he who has begun a good work in you, will carry it on till the day of Jesus Christ; ⁷as it is right for me to think this of you all, because I say I have you in my heart; both in my bonds and in my defense and confirmation of the gospel, I say I have you all in my heart as being joint partakers of my grace. ⁸For God is my witness how ardently I love you with the affection of Christ Jesus.

⁹I also pray for this, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and all understanding, ¹⁰in order that you may distinguish things that differ, to the end that you may be pure and blameless till the day of Christ, ¹¹being filled with the fruit of righteousness, which fruit is by Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of God.

¹²But I wish you to know, brethren, that the things which have befallen me have turned out rather to the advancement of the gospel; ¹³so that my bonds which are for Christ have become known to be such in all the palace, and in all other places; ¹⁴and most of the brethren in the Lord, having confidence in my bonds, are more bold to speak the word without fear.

¹⁵Some, indeed, preach the Christ, because of envy and a contentious disposition, and some because of good-will. ¹⁶These do it from love, because they know that I am set for the defense of the gospel; ¹⁷those preach Christ from a contentious disposition, not sincerely, thinking that they will add affliction to my bonds. ¹⁸What difference does this make? Christ is, nevertheless, preached in every way, whether in pretense or in truth; and in this I rejoice, yes, and I will rejoice: ¹⁹for I know that this will result in my benefit through your supplication, and the supply of

the Spirit of Jesus Christ, ²⁰according to my earnest expectation and hope, that in nothing shall I be ashamed, but with all boldness, as at all times, so even now, Christ will be magnified in my body, whether by life or by death.

²¹For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. ²²But if this, my life in the flesh, would be profitable for my work in the ministry, verily, what I should choose I know not. ²³I am in a strait between the two, having the desire to depart and be with Christ, which is far better: ²⁴yet to abide in the flesh is more needful for you. ²⁵And of this I feel assured, that I shall remain and continue among you all for your advancement and joy in the faith, ²⁶that your rejoicing in Christ Jesus may become more abundant through me by my being present among you again.

²⁷Only conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the gospel of the Christ, that, whether I come and see you, or be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that you stand fast in one spirit, with one soul striving together for the faith of the gospel, ²⁸and in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of destruction, but to you of salvation, and that from God. ²⁹For to you it is given in behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but, also, to suffer for him, ³⁰since you have the same conflict that you saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

II. ¹If, therefore, there is any consolation in Christ, if any comfort arising from love, if any participation of the Spirit, if any affections and mercies, ²fulfill my joy, that you be of the same mind, having the same love, of one soul, of one mind; ³doing nothing in strife and vain glory, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem others better than himself. ⁴Consider not each one his own gifts, but each one also the gifts of others.

⁵Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, ⁶who, being in the form of God, did not think it an act of robbery to be equal with God; ⁷but he divested himself by taking the form of a servant, and being made in the likeness of men: ⁸and being found in appearance as a man, he humbled himself by becoming obedient

even to death, the death, indeed, of the cross. ⁹For which reason God has highly exalted him, and, also, bestowed on him a name that is above every name; ¹⁰that in the name of Jesus every knee should bow of those who are in heaven, and those who are on earth, and those who are under the earth; ¹¹and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

¹²So, then, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; ¹³for it is God, who, of his good pleasure, works in you both the will and the power to perform. ¹⁴Do all things without murmurings and disputings, ¹⁵that you may be without reproach and Harmless, the children of God, without blame, in the midst of a wicked and perverse generation, among whom you shine as luminaries in the world, ¹⁶holding forth the word of life, that I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I did not run in vain, nor labor in vain.

¹⁷But if I am poured out on the sacrifice and service of your faith, I rejoice, and rejoice with you all. ¹⁸In like manner do you also rejoice, and rejoice with me. ¹⁹But I trust in the Lord Jesus, to send Timothy shortly to you, that I also may be refreshed by knowing your condition; ²⁰for I have no one of a kindred spirit who will sincerely care for your condition: ²¹for all seek their own, not the things of Jesus Christ. ²²But you know his approved character, that as a son with a father he has served with me in the gospel. ²³Him, therefore, I hope to send immediately, as soon as I know how it may go with me. ²⁴But I trust in the Lord that I myself also will come shortly.

²⁵Yet I thought it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus my brother and companion in labor and fellow-soldier, but your apostle, who also ministered to my want, ²⁶because he longed after you all, and was much distressed, because you had heard that he was sick. ²⁷And, indeed, he was sick near to death; but God had mercy on him, and not on him only, but on me also, that I might not have sorrow upon sorrow. ²⁸I sent him, therefore, the sooner, that, by seeing him again, you might rejoice, and that I might be the less sorrowful. ²⁹Receive him, therefore, in the Lord with all joy, and regard such as worthy of

honor; ³⁰because for the work of the Christ he was near to death, not regarding his life, that he might supply that which was lacking in your service to me.

III. ¹Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you is to me indeed not burdensome; but for you it is safe.

²Beware of the dogs, beware of the evil workers, beware of the concision. ³For we are the circumcision, who worship God in spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh; ⁴though, indeed, I have a ground of confidence in the flesh. If any other thinks he has a ground of confidence in the flesh, I more; ⁵circumcised the eighth day, of the race of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews; as it respects law, a Pharisee; ⁶as it respects zeal, persecuting the church; as it respects righteousness which is by law, blameless. ⁷But the things which were gain to me, these I counted loss for Christ.

⁸Yes, verily, I also count all things to be loss, for the excellence of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord, on account of whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them to be refuse, that I may gain Christ, ⁹and be found in him, not having my own righteousness which was by law, but the righteousness which is by faith in Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith, ¹⁰that I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, by conforming myself to his death, ¹¹if, by any means, I may attain to the resurrection from the dead.

¹²Not that I have already attained, or have already reached the goal; but I am pressing forward, that I may lay hold on that for which I was laid hold on by Christ Jesus. ¹³Brethren, I do not conclude that I have already laid hold: ¹⁴but one thing I do; forgetting the things which are behind, and reaching forward to those which are before, I press toward the goal, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

¹⁵Let us, therefore, as many as are fully enlightened, be of this mind: and if you are of another mind with respect to any thing, God will reveal even this to you. ¹⁶But as far as we have attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us have the same mind. ¹⁷Be imitators of me, brethren, and observe those who thus walk as

you have us for an example.¹⁸ For many walk, of whom I often said to you, and now say even weeping, that they are enemies of the cross of the Christ,¹⁹ whose end is destruction, whose god is their appetite, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.²⁰ But our citizenship is in heaven, whence also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ,²¹ who will transform our humbled body, and make it like his glorious body, according to that power by which he is able to subdue all things to himself.

IV. ¹So, then, my brethren, beloved and ardently desired, my joy and my crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my beloved.² I beseech Euodia, and I beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.³ Now I beseech you also, true yoke-fellow, to assist those women who labored with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and my other fellow-laborers, whose names are in the book of life.

⁴ Rejoice in the Lord always; and again I say, Rejoice. ⁵ Let your gentleness be known to all men: the Lord is at hand. ⁶ Be anxious about nothing, but in every thing, by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God: ⁷ and the peace of God, which passes all understanding, will keep your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus.

⁸ Finally, brethren, whatever things are true, whatever things are honorable, whatever things are just, whatever things are pure, whatever things are lovely, whatever things are of good report, if there is any virtue, or any praise, think of these things. ⁹ Do those things which you have learned and received, and heard and seen in

me, and the God of peace will be with you.

¹⁰ I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at length your care for me has revived again; in this, indeed, you had me in mind, but you lacked opportunity. ¹¹ I do not speak in respect to want: for I have learned, in whatever condition I am, to be content. ¹² I know what it is to be in want, and what it is to have abundance. Everywhere and in all things, I have been fully instructed in being full and in being hungry, in having abundance and in being in want. ¹³ I am able to do all things through Christ who strengthens me.

¹⁴ Yet you have done well in contributing to the relief of my affliction. ¹⁵ Now you Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church contributed to me so that I kept an account of giving and receiving, but you only. ¹⁶ For even when I was in Thessalonica, you sent once and again to aid me in my need. ¹⁷ Not that I seek a gift; but I desire fruit that may abound to your account. ¹⁸ But I have all, and abound. I am full, having received from Epaphroditus your gifts, a sweet odor, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God. ¹⁹ But my God will supply all your need, according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus. ²⁰ Now to God, even our Father, be glory from age to age. Amen.

²¹ Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren that are with me salute you. ²² All the saints salute you, especially those who are of Caesar's household.

²³ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

Paul to the Colossians.

I. ¹I Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, I and Timothy my brother, ²to the saints and faithful brethren in Christ that are in Colosse: grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

³We give thanks to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you, ⁴since we heard of your faithfulness in Christ Jesus, and your love for all the saints, ⁵in consequence of the hope which is laid up for you in the heavens, of which you heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel, ⁶which is present among you, as it is also in all the world, and is producing fruit, even as it has been doing also among you, since the day you heard and knew the grace of God in truth, ⁷as you learned from Epaphras, our dear fellow-servant, who is a faithful servant of Christ for you, ⁸and who also made known to us your love in spirit.

⁹For this reason, we also, from the day in which we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to request that you may be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding, ¹⁰so that you may walk in a manner worthy of the Lord, in order to please him in all things, by means of every good work bringing forth fruit, and increasing in the knowledge, of God, ¹¹strengthened with all power, according to his glorious might, in order to all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness, ¹²giving thanks to the Father, who has made us fit for a portion of the inheritance of the saints in light: ¹³who has delivered us from the authority of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his beloved Son, ¹⁴in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins; ¹⁵who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature; ¹⁶for by him were all things created, things in heaven and things in earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones, or lordships, or principalities, or authorities; all things were created by him, and for him: ¹⁷and he is before all things, and by him all things consist: ¹⁸and he is the head of the body, the church: and he is the beginning, the first-born from the dead, that in all things he might be pre-eminent; ¹⁹for it pleased the Father that all his

fullness should dwell in him, ²⁰and by him to reconcile all things to himself, having made peace by the blood of his cross; by him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven.

²¹And you, who were formerly alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now has he reconciled ²²by means of death in his fleshly body, that he may present you holy, and without spot, and blameless in his sight; ²³if you continue in the faith, founded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel that you have heard, which has been preached to every creature under heaven, of which I, Paul, have been made a minister.

²⁴Now I rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up what remains of my sufferings for Christ in my flesh for the sake of his body, which is the church, ²⁵of which I was made a minister according to the commission from God, which was given to me for you, that I might fully preach the word of God, ²⁶the mystery which was concealed from the ages and the generations, but is now made manifest to his saints, ²⁷to whom God would make known what is the glorious riches of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory, ²⁸whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: ²⁹to which end I also labor, striving according to his energy, which works in me mightily.

II. ¹For I wish you to know how great a conflict I have for you, and for those in Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; ²that their hearts may be comforted, they being firmly united in love in order to gain all the riches of the full assurance of understanding, that they may acknowledge the mystery of God, even the Father, and of Christ, ³in whom are stored up all the treasures of wisdom and of knowledge. ⁴Now I say this, that no one may deceive you by persuasive words. ⁵For, though I am absent in flesh, yet I am present with you in spirit, rejoicing to behold your order, and the firmness of your faith in Christ. ⁶As, therefore, you received Christ Jesus our Lord, so walk in him, ⁷rooted, and built up in

him, and strengthened in the faith, as you have been taught, abounding in it with thanksgiving.

⁸ See that no one make you the victims of imposture by means of philosophy and vain deceit, according to the tradition of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not according to Christ: ⁹ for in him dwells all the fullness of the Godhood bodily. ¹⁰ And you are complete in him who is the head of all principality and authority: ¹¹ in whom you have been also circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in the putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ, ¹² when you were buried with him in immersion, in which you were also raised with him by your faith in the energy of God, who raised him from the dead. ¹³ And you, being dead to your offenses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, he has made alive together with him, having forgiven you all your offenses; ¹⁴ having blotted out the handwriting in ordinances which was against us, which was opposed to us, he also took it out of the way, driving a nail through it by means of his cross; ¹⁵ and having spoiled the principalities and authorities, he made a show of them openly by triumphing over them through it.

¹⁶ Let no one judge you, therefore, in meat or in drink, or in respect to a feast, or the new moon, or sabbaths, ¹⁷ which things are a shadow of things to come, but the substance is in Christ, ¹⁸ Let no one gain his purpose in depriving you of the palm by an affected humility and worship of angels, prying into things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, ¹⁹ and not holding the head, from which the whole body gathering vigor, and firmly united by joints and bands, increases with the increase of God.

²⁰ If, then, you have died with Christ from the elements of the world, why, as though living in the world, do you submit to ordinances? ²¹ Touch not, taste not, handle not, ²² (all of which are for the destruction of those who use them,) according to the commandments and teachings of men; ²³ and these have a show of wisdom in will-worship and affected humility and neglect of the body, and in no regard for the gratification of the flesh.

III. ¹If, then, you have been raised with Christ, seek the things that are above, where the Christ sits at the right hand of God;

² mind the things that are above, not the things that are on the earth: ³ for you are dead, and your life is hid with the Christ in God. ⁴ When the Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall you also appear with him in glory.

⁵ Put to death, therefore, your members that are on the earth, lewdness, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry; ⁶ on account of these things the wrath of God comes on the children of disobedience, ⁷ in which things you also formerly walked when you lived in them. ⁸ But now do you also put away all these—anger, wrath, malice, reviling, obscene language from your mouth. ⁹ Lie not one to another, seeing that you have put off the old man with his deeds, ¹⁰ and have put on the new man, which is renewed for knowledge, according to the image of him that created him; ¹¹ in which new creation there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all and in all.

¹² Put on, therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, a merciful disposition, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering: ¹³ bearing with one another, and forgiving one another, if any one have a complaint against any; even as Christ forgave you, so also do you: ¹⁴ and over all these put on love, which is the bond of perfectness. ¹⁵ And let the peace of God, to which you are called in one body, rule in your hearts, and be thankful.

¹⁶ Let the word of the Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, by teaching and admonishing one another in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs, singing with gratitude in your hearts to the Lord. ¹⁷ And whatever you do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

¹⁸ Wives, be subject to your husbands, as it is becoming in the Lord. ¹⁹ Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

²⁰ Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well-pleasing to the Lord. ²¹ Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be disheartened.

²² Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh, not with eye-service, as pleasing men, but with simplicity of heart, fearing God. ²³ And whatever you do, do from the soul, as to the Lord, and not to men; ²⁴ knowing

that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance: for you serve the Lord Christ.
²⁵But he that does wrong shall receive for the wrong which he has done; and there is no respect of persons.

IV. ¹Masters, give to your servants what is just and equal, for you know that you have a Master in heaven.

²Persevere in prayer, and be watchful in the same with thanksgiving; ³praying at the same time also for us, that God may open for us a door of utterance to speak the mystery of the Christ, for which I am in bonds, ⁴that I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

⁵Walk in wisdom toward those who are without, redeeming the time. ⁶Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how you ought to answer every one.

⁷All that relates to me, Tychicus, my beloved brother and faithful minister and fellow-servant in the Lord, will make known to you. ⁸I have sent him to you for this very purpose, that he may know your condition, and comfort your hearts; ⁹I have sent him with Onesimus, my faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They will make known all things that are done

here.

¹⁰Aristarchus, my fellow-prisoner, salutes you, and so does Marcus the nephew of Barnabas, concerning whom you received commandments; if he come to you, receive him; ¹¹Jesus also, who is called Justus, salutes you: these are of the circumcision: and these only are my fellow-workers for the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort to me. ¹²Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, salutes you; he always strives earnestly for you in his prayers, that you may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God. ¹³For I testify for him, that he has a great zeal for you and those in Laodicea and those in Hierapolis. ¹⁴Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, salute you.

¹⁵Salute the brethren in Laodicea, and Nympha, and the church that is in his house. ¹⁶And when this letter has been read among you, cause that it be read in the church of the Laodiceans also; and see that you also read the letter from Laodicea; ¹⁷and say to Archippus: Take heed to the ministry which you have received in the Lord, that you fulfill it.

¹⁸The salutation of me, Paul, with my own hand. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

Paul to the Thessalonians.

First Letter.

I. ¹Paul and Sylvanus and Timothy to the church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ: grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

²We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers, ³remembering unceasingly your work, which is the result of faith, your labor, the cause of which is love, and your patience, which springs from your hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of our God and Father: ⁴because we know, brethren beloved of God, your election. ⁵For our gospel came not to you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Spirit, and in full assurance, as you know what sort of persons we were among you for your sakes. ⁶And you became imitators of us and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction with joy of the Holy Spirit, ⁷so that you were examples to all that believe, in Macedonia and Achaia. ⁸For from you, the word of the Lord sounded out, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also your faith in God has gone abroad in every place, so that we have no need to speak any thing. ⁹For they themselves declare concerning us what kind of entrance we had to you, and how you turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God, ¹⁰and to wait for his Son from heaven, even Jesus, whom he raised from the dead, and who delivers us from the coming wrath.

II. ¹For you yourselves know, brethren, our entrance among you, that it was not in vain. ²But having suffered before, and having been outraged, as you know, in Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak to you the gospel of God in the midst of great peril. ³For our exhortation arose not from deception, nor from uncleanness, nor was it with guile; ⁴but as God had judged us worthy to be intrusted with the gospel, so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, who tries our hearts. ⁵For neither nattering words did we at any time use, as you know, nor a pretext for covetousness; God is witness:

⁶nor did we seek glory from men, neither from you nor from others; though we could have been burdensome as the apostles of Christ. ⁷But we were gentle among you. As a nurse nourishes her children, ⁸so, having a strong affection for you, we were well pleased to impart to you not only the gospel of God, but our own lives also, because you had become dear to us. ⁹For you remember, brethren, our labor and toil; for, laboring night and day, that we might not be burdensome to any one of you, we preached to you the gospel of God. ¹⁰You are witnesses, and God also, in how holy and just and blameless a manner we conducted ourselves among you that believe, ¹¹as indeed you know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father his children, ¹²that you should walk in a manner worthy of God, who has called you to his own kingdom and glory.

¹³For this reason, also, we thank God without ceasing; because, when you received the word of God, as preached by us, you embraced it, not as the word of men, but, as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually works in you that believe. ¹⁴For you, brethren, became imitators of the churches of God in Judea which are in Christ Jesus; for you, also, have suffered the same things from your own countrymen, that they have suffered from the Jews, ¹⁵who both killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and have persecuted us, and do not please God, and are opposed to all men, ¹⁶forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they may be saved, in order that they may fill up their sins at all times: but the wrath is coming upon them to the full.

¹⁷But we, brethren, having been taken from you for a short time, in person, not in heart, did, with great desire, endeavor the more earnestly to see your face. ¹⁸For this reason, we intended to go to you, (I Paul) both once and again, but Satan hindered us. ¹⁹For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even you, in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming? You indeed are our glory and joy.

III. ¹Wherefore, being no longer able to contain ourselves, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone; ²and we sent Timothy our brother and minister of God in the gospel of the Christ, in order that he might strengthen and comfort you with respect to your faith, ³that no one be moved by these afflictions; for you yourselves know that we are appointed to this: ⁴for even when we were with you, we told you beforehand that we were about to be afflicted, as it also came to pass, and as you know. ⁵For this reason, when I could no longer contain myself, I sent to know your faith, lest by any means the tempter had tempted you, and our labor should be in vain.

⁶But now, since Timothy has come to us from you, and has told us the good news of your faith and love, and that you have a good remembrance of us at all times, greatly desiring to see us, as indeed we desire to see you, ⁷for this reason we are comforted concerning you, brethren, in all our distress and affliction, by your faith: ⁸for now we live, if you stand firm in the Lord. ⁹For what thanks can we render to God for you, for the great joy with which we rejoice on your account before our God, ¹⁰night and day praying exceedingly that we may see your face, and perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

¹¹Now, may God himself, even our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way to you. ¹²And may the Lord cause you to increase and abound in love to one another and to all, even as we toward you, ¹³in order that he may establish your hearts blameless in holiness, in the presence of our God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

IV. ¹Finally, then, brethren, we beseech and exhort you, by our Lord Jesus, that as you learned from us how you ought to walk and please God, you would abound more and more. ²For you know what commandments we gave you by our Lord Jesus. ³For this is the will of God, your sanctification, that you keep yourselves from lewdness; ⁴That each one of you know how to keep his vessel in sanctification and in honor, ⁵not in passionate desire, as the Gentiles do, who know not God; ⁶That no one take advantage of or injure his brother in this matter; because the Lord takes vengeance for all such things, as we also told you before, and fully testified: ⁷for God has not called us for uncleanness,

but for holiness. ⁸Therefore, he that despises, despises not man, but God, who has given us his Holy Spirit.

⁹But with respect to brotherly love, you have no need that I write to you: for you yourselves are taught of God to love one another; ¹⁰and indeed you do this to all the brethren that are in all Macedonia. But we exhort you, brethren, that you abound *in love* more and more, ¹¹and that you earnestly endeavor to live quietly, and that you attend to your own business, and work with your own hands, as we commanded you; ¹²in order that you may walk with propriety toward those who are without, and may have need of nothing.

¹³But concerning those who have fallen asleep, I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that you may not grieve, as others who have no hope. ¹⁴For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, so also *should we believe* that God will, through Jesus, bring with him those who sleep. ¹⁵For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we, the living, who remain till the coming of the Lord, shall not precede those who are asleep ¹⁶for the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall arise first; ¹⁷then we, the living who remain, shall, together with them, be caught up in clouds into the air to meet the Lord, and so shall we be ever with the Lord. ¹⁸So, then, comfort one another with these words.

V. ¹But, brethren, you have no need that I write to you of the times and seasons; ²for you yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night: ³for when they shall say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction comes upon them, as the pains of birth upon a woman with child, and they shall not escape.

⁴But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. ⁵You are all sons of light, and sons of day: we are not of night, nor of darkness. ⁶Therefore, let us not sleep, as do others, but let us watch and be sober. ⁷For those who sleep, sleep in the night; and those who are drunken, are drunken in the night. ⁸But let us, who are of the day, be sober, having on the breastplate of faith and love, and for a helmet, the hope of salvation: ⁹for God has

not appointed us to wrath, but to the obtaining of salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁰who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we might live together with him. ¹¹Wherefore, exhort one another, and edify one another, as you also do.

¹²Now we beseech you, brethren, to have regard for those who labor among you, and preside over you in the Lord, and admonish you, ¹³and that you esteem them very highly in love on account of their work. Be at peace among yourselves. ¹⁴We exhort you, brethren, admonish the unruly, comfort the faint-hearted, earnestly care for the weak-minded, be of a long-suffering disposition toward all.

¹⁵See that no one render evil for evil to any, but always pursue that which is good toward one another and toward all.

¹⁶Rejoice always; ¹⁷pray without ceasing; ¹⁸in every thing give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

¹⁹Quench not the Spirit. ²⁰Despise not prophesying. ²¹Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. ²²Abstain from every appearance of evil.

²³Now the God of peace himself sanctify you wholly; and may your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁴Faithful is he that calls you; and he will do *what he has promised*.

²⁵Brethren, pray for us. ²⁶Salute all the brethren with a holy kiss. ²⁷I adjure you by the Lord, that this letter be read to all the holy brethren.

²⁸The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

Paul to the Thessalonians.

Second Letter.

I. ¹Paul and Sylvanus and Timothy to the church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ: ²grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

³We are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren, as it is right, because your faith grows exceedingly, and the love of every one of you all toward each other abounds: ⁴so that we ourselves glory in you, among the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and afflictions which you endure; ⁵*which endurance of yours* is a proof of the righteous judgment of God, in order that you may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which you suffer: ⁶since, indeed, it is a righteous thing with God, to repay affliction to those who afflict you, ⁷and to you that are afflicted, rest with us, at the revelation of our Lord Jesus from heaven with his mighty angels, ⁸in flaming fire, to take vengeance on those who know not God, and who obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ; ⁹these shall suffer punishment in that day, even eternal destruction, far from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power, ¹⁰when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all those who believe, and in you also, because our testimony among you was believed.

¹¹In order to which, we also pray always for you, that our God may count you worthy of this calling, and may fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power, ¹²that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and you in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

II. ¹But, we beseech you, brethren, concerning the coming of; our Lord Jesus Christ, and our coming together to him, ²that you be not hastily shaken from the persuasion of your mind, nor be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by report, nor by letter as *written* by us, as though the day of the Lord is at hand. ³Let no one deceive you by any means; for that day will

not come, unless the apostasy come first, and the man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition, ⁴who opposes and exalts himself above every one that is called God, or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, openly showing him self that he is God.

⁵Do you not remember that, while I was with you, I told you these things? ⁶And now you know what restrains, in order that he may be revealed in his own proper time. ⁷For the mystery of iniquity is already at work; only he that now restrains will restrain, till he be taken out of the way: ⁸and then shall that lawless one be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus will destroy by the spirit of his mouth, and will utterly overthrow by the brightness of his coming: ⁹he will destroy him, whose coming is, according to the energy of Satan, with all power and signs and wonders of falsehood, ¹⁰and with all the delusion of unrighteousness in those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, in order that they might be saved. ¹¹And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, in order that they may believe a lie, ¹²that all may be condemned who believe not the truth, but have pleasure in unrighteousness.

¹³But we are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God did, from the beginning, choose you to salvation, by sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth, ¹⁴to which he called you by our gospel, in order that you might obtain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

¹⁵Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which you have been taught, whether by word or by our letter. ¹⁶Now may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, who has loved us, and given us eternal consolation and good hope through grace, ¹⁷comfort your hearts, and strengthen you in every good word and work.

III. ¹Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may run and be glorified even as among you; ²and that we may be

delivered from wicked and evil men; for all have not the disposition for faith. ³But the Lord is faithful, and he will strengthen you, and keep you from the evil one. ⁴And we have confidence in the Lord with respect to you, that you both do, and will continue to do, the things which we command you. ⁵And the Lord direct your hearts to the love of God, and to the patience of the Christ.

⁶Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you withdraw from every brother that walks disorderly, and not according to the tradition which he received from us. ⁷For you yourselves know how you ought to imitate us: for we did not behave in a disorderly manner among you, ⁸nor did we eat any one's bread for nothing: but worked with labor and toil, night and day, that we might not burden any one of you; ⁹this we did, not because we have not authority, but that we might give ourselves to you as an example, in

order that you might imitate us. ¹⁰For when we were with you, we gave you this commandment, that if any one will not work, neither let him eat.

¹¹For we hear that some walk about among you in a disorderly manner, doing no work, but being busybodies. ¹²Now we command such, and exhort them by our Lord Jesus Christ, that they work with quietness, and eat their own bread. ¹³And you, brethren, should not be weary in well-doing. ¹⁴And if any one obey not our word by this letter, note that man, and do not keep company with him, that he may be ashamed; ¹⁵and yet do not regard him as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother. ¹⁶Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.

¹⁷The salutation of Paul with my own hand, which is the token in every letter: so I write.

¹⁸The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

Paul to Timothy.

First Letter.

I. ¹Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the appointment of God our Savior, and the Lord Jesus Christ our hope, ²to Timothy, my true son in the faith; grace, mercy, peace from God our Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

³As, on going into Macedonia, I besought you to remain in Ephesus, that you might charge some that they teach no other thing, ⁴nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which produce disputes rather than godly edification, which is in faith;

⁵(Now the end of the commandment is love out of a pure heart, and out of a good conscience, and out of faith unfeigned: ⁶which things some not having aimed at, have turned aside to idle disputation, ⁷desiring to be teachers of law, though understanding neither what they say nor of what they boldly affirm. ⁸But we know that the law is good, if any one use it lawfully; ⁹knowing this, that law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for the unholy and for scorners, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for man-slayers, ¹⁰for lewd persons, for sodomites, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and for whatever other thing is opposed to sound teaching, ¹¹according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which has been intrusted to me.

¹²And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who has given me power, because he counted me faithful, and put me into the ministry; ¹³me, *I say*, who before was a reviler and a persecutor and an overbearing man. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief: ¹⁴and the grace of our Lord was very abundant with faith, and love which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁵Assuredly true and worthy of all acceptance is this saying: that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief. ¹⁶But for this reason I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show all long-suffering, for an example to those who might afterward believe on him in order to life eternal. ¹⁷Now to the King of the

ages, the incorruptible, invisible, only wise God, be honor and glory from age to age. Amen.)

¹⁸This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, in accordance with the preceding prophecies concerning you, that by them you may war the good warfare, ¹⁹holding faith and a good conscience, which some having thrust from them, as it respects faith have made shipwreck; of whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, ²⁰whom I have delivered to Satan, that they may learn not to revile.

II. ¹I exhort, therefore, first of all, that supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men, ²for kings, and for all that are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and gravity. ³For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior, ⁴who is willing that all men should be saved, and come to the knowledge of the truth. ⁵For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, ⁶who gave himself a ransom for all, *of which* the testimony *has been given* in its proper times, ⁷to give which testimony I have been appointed a preacher and an apostle; (I speak the truth, and lie not;) a teacher of the Gentiles in faithfulness and in truth.

⁸I will, therefore, that the men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands without wrath and disputation. ⁹In like manner, also, *I will* that the women adorn themselves with decorous dress, with modesty and sobriety, not with plaited hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly raiment, ¹⁰but with good works; since this becomes women who profess godliness.

¹¹Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. ¹²I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence. ¹³For Adam was first formed, then Eve. ¹⁴And Adam was not deceived: but the woman being deceived, was in transgression; ¹⁵but they shall be saved by the bearing of children, if they continue in faith and love and holiness with sobriety.

III. ¹This is a true saying: If any desires the office of a bishop, he desires a good work. ²A bishop, then, must be blameless, the husband of one wife, watchful, sober-minded, modest, hospitable, able to teach, ³not fond of wine, not quarrelsome, not one who makes money by base means; but gentle, not contentious, not covetous; ⁴one that rules his own house well; having his children in subjection with all gravity: ⁵for if a man knows not how to rule his own house, how will he take care of the church of God? ⁶Not a new convert, lest, having become conceited, he fall into the condemnation of the devil. ⁷Further, he must have a good reputation from those who are without, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

⁸The deacons, likewise, must be grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not makers of money by base means, ⁹holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. ¹⁰And let these also be first proved, then let them become deacons, being blameless. ¹¹Their wives likewise must be grave, not slanderers, watchful, faithful in all things. ¹²Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. ¹³For those who have filled the office of a deacon well, gain for themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith that is in Christ Jesus.

¹⁴I write these things to you, hoping to come to you shortly; ¹⁵but if I delay, that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and support of the truth. ¹⁶And confessedly great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in flesh, justified in spirit, seen by angels, preached among the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up in glory.

IV. ¹Now the Spirit says expressly, that, in the last times, some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and teachings suggested by demons, ²through the hypocrisy of liars, who are seared in their conscience, ³who forbid to marry, and command to abstain from meats, which God has created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe, and know the truth. ⁴For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be rejected, if it be received with thanksgiving; ⁵for it is sanctified by the word of God, and by prayer.

⁶By recommending these things to the atten-

tion of the brethren, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, being nourished with the words of the faith, and of good teaching, which you have fully known. ⁷But reject those profane and old-womanish fables, and exercise yourself for godliness. ⁸For the exercise of the body is profitable for little; but godliness is profitable for all things, and has the promise of the life that now is, and also of that which is to come. ⁹This is a true saying, and worthy of all acceptance: ¹⁰for to this end we both labor, and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Savior of all men, especially of those who believe. ¹¹These things command and teach.

¹²Let no one despise your youth; but be an example to the believers, in word, in behavior, in love, in spirit, in faithfulness, in purity. ¹³Till I come, give attention to reading, to exhortation, to teaching. ¹⁴Neglect not the gift that is in you, which was given you according to prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the eldership. ¹⁵Meditate upon these things; give yourself wholly to them, that your advancement may be manifest in all things. ¹⁶Take heed to yourself, and to your teaching; continue in them; for by doing this, you will save both yourself, and those who hear you.

V. ¹Do not rebuke an elderly man, but entreat him as a father; the younger men, as brothers: ²the elder women, as mothers; the younger women, as sisters, with all purity. ³Honor widows that are widows indeed. ⁴But if any widow has children or grand-children, let them learn first to be dutiful to their own family, and to requite their parents; for that is good and acceptable in the sight of God. ⁵But she that is a widow indeed, and left alone, trusts in God, and continues in supplications and prayers night and day. ⁶But she that lives voluptuously, is dead while she lives. ⁷These things also give in charge, that they may be blameless. ⁸And if any one provides not for his own, and especially for those of his own house hold, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an unbeliever.

⁹Let a widow be put on the list, if she is not under sixty years, having been the wife of one man, ¹⁰having a good reputation for good works; if she has borne children, if she has entertained strangers, if she has washed the saints feet, if she has relieved the afflicted, if she has diligently followed every good work. ¹¹But the

younger widows reject: for when they become wanton against the Christ, they desire to marry, ¹²incurring condemnation, because they have set aside their former obligation. ¹³At the same time, also, they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also, and busybodies, speaking things which are not proper. ¹⁴I will, therefore, that the younger widows marry, bear children, manage the house, and *thus* give no occasion to the adversaries to speak reproachfully. ¹⁵For some have already turned aside after Satan. ¹⁶If any believing man or woman has widows, let him or her relieve them, and let not the church be burdened, that it may relieve those who are widows indeed.

¹⁷Let the elders who rule well, be counted worthy of double honor, especially those who labor in word and teaching. ¹⁸For the scripture says: You shall not muzzle the ox that treads out the grain; and, The laborer is worthy of his hire.

¹⁹Receive not an accusation against an old man, unless before two or three witnesses. ²⁰Those who sin rebuke before all, that the rest also may fear. ²¹I charge you before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that you observe these things without prejudice, and that you do nothing by partiality.

²²Lay hands hastily on no man, nor be partaker of other men's sins: keep yourself pure.

²³Drink water no longer, but use a little wine for your stomach's sake, and your frequent infirmities.

²⁴Some men's sins are manifest beforehand, going before to judgment. Some persons, however, they follow after. ²⁵Likewise, also, the good works of *some* are manifest beforehand; and those which are otherwise can not be concealed.

VII. ¹Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honor, that the name of God, and his teaching, be not reviled. ²And those who have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren: but rather let them serve them, because they who partake of the benefit of *their service*, are believers and beloved brethren. These things enforce in your teaching and exhortation.

³If any one teaches other things, and does not assent to the sound words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the teaching which is according to

godliness, ⁴he is mad with conceit, knowing nothing, but has a morbid fondness for questions and contentions about words, out of which come envy, strife, railing, evil suspicions, ⁵and wranglings, on the part of men who are corrupt in mind, and destitute of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a source of gain. From such withdraw yourself.

⁶But godliness, with a contented disposition, is great gain. ⁷For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain that we can carry nothing out. ⁸And having food and raiment, with these let us be content. ⁹But those who will be rich fail into temptation and a snare, and many foolish and hurtful desires, which drown men in destruction and perdition. ¹⁰For the love of money is the root of all evil; through the desire of which, some have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

¹¹But do you, O man of God, shun these things, and pursue righteousness, godliness, faithfulness, love, patience, meekness. ¹²Fight the good fight of the faith; lay hold on eternal life, to which you have been called, and for which you confessed the good confession before many witnesses. ¹³I charge you, in the sight of God, who makes all things alive, and before Christ Jesus, who, before Pontius Pilate, confessed a good confession, ¹⁴that you keep this commandment, *so that you may* be spotless and blameless till the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵which, in his own times, he will show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; ¹⁶who alone has immortality, dwelling in light unapproachable, whom no man has seen, nor can see, to whom be honor and power eternal. Amen.

¹⁷Charge those who are rich in this age, that they be not proud, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who gives us all things richly for our enjoyment, ¹⁸that they do good, that they be rich in good works, that they be ready to distribute, liberal, ¹⁹treasuring up for themselves a good foundation for the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

²⁰O Timothy, keep that which is committed to your charge, avoiding those profane and empty babblings, and disputations about knowledge falsely so called; ²¹by making a profession of this knowledge, some have erred as it respects the faith. Grace be with you. Amen.

Paul to Timothy.

Second Letter.

I. ¹Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus, ²to Timothy my beloved son; grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

³I thank God, whom I serve with a pure conscience, after the custom of my forefathers, that, without ceasing, I have remembrance of you in my prayers night and day, ⁴greatly desiring to see you, being mindful of your tears, that I may be filled with joy; ⁵for I remember the unfeigned faith that is in you, which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois, and in your mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that it dwells in you also.

⁶Wherefore I exhort you to kindle up the gift of God that is in you by the laying on of my hands. ⁷For God has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

⁸Be not, therefore, ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me, his prisoner: but jointly suffer evil in the gospel according to the power of God, ⁹who has saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the times of the ages, ¹⁰but is now made manifest by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, who has deprived death of its power, and brought life and incorruption to light through the gospel; ¹¹to which I have been appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles; ¹²for which cause I also suffer these things; yet I am not ashamed: for I know in whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have intrusted to him till that day.

¹³Hold fast the form of sound words which you have heard from me, in faithfulness and in love which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁴That good thing which was intrusted to you, keep by the Holy Spirit that dwells in us.

¹⁵You know this, that all those who are in

Asia have turned away from me; *all those, I say,* of whom are Phyellus and Hermogenes. ¹⁶May the Lord give mercy to the house of Onesiphorus, for he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain: ¹⁷but when he was in Rome, he sought for me very diligently, and found me. ¹⁸The Lord grant to him, that he may find mercy from the Lord in that day. And in how many things he ministered to me in Ephesus, you know very well.

II. ¹Do you, therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus; ²and the things which you have heard from me through many witnesses, these do you commit to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also. ³Do you, therefore, suffer evil, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. ⁴Every one that serves as a soldier keeps himself free from the business of this life, that he may please him that has chosen him to be a soldier. ⁵And if any one also contend in the public games, he is not crowned, unless he contend according to the laws. ⁶It is necessary that, the farmer should labor, before he partakes of the fruits. ⁷Consider what I say, for *I pray that* the Lord may give you understanding in all things.

⁸Remember that Jesus Christ, of the posterity of David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel; ⁹in which I suffer evil, as an evildoer, even to bonds: but the word of God is not bound. ¹⁰For this reason I endure all things for the sake of the elect, that they also may obtain the salvation that is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory. ¹¹Assuredly true is the saying: If indeed we have died with him, we shall also live with him; ¹²if we are patient, we shall also reign with him; if we deny him, he will also deny us; ¹³if we are unfaithful, he remains faithful: he can not deny himself.

¹⁴Put them in mind of these things, charging them before the Lord that they dispute not about words to no profit, *which disputes end* in the overthrow of the hearers. ¹⁵Strive to present yourself to God as approved, a workman that

has no cause to be ashamed, rightly setting forth the word of truth.¹⁶ But shun profane and vain babblings; for they will make further advance to ungodliness,¹⁷ and their word will eat as a gangrene: of whom are Hymenæus and Philetus,¹⁸ who, as it respects the truth, have erred, saying that the resurrection has already taken place; and they overthrow the faith of some.

¹⁹ But the foundation of God stands firm, having this inscription: The Lord knows those who are his; and, Let every one that names the name of Christ depart from iniquity.²⁰ In a great house, however, there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth, and some for honor, and some for dis-honor.²¹ If, therefore, any one will cleanse himself from these strifes about words, he will be a vessel for honor, sanctified, highly useful to the master, prepared for every good work.

²² Shun youthful desires, and follow righteousness, faithfulness, love, peace, with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.²³ But avoid foolish and unprofitable questions, because you know that they produce contentions:²⁴ and the servant of the Lord must not be contentious, but gentle toward all men, able to teach, patient under evils,²⁵ in meekness instructing those who oppose themselves, if, possibly, God may give them repentance in order to the acknowledgment of the truth,²⁶ and that they may awake to sobriety out of the snare of the devil, after having been taken captive by him according to his will.

III. ¹But know this, that in the last days trying times will come.² For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boast-ers, proud, revilers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,³ without natural affection, implacable, false accusers, intemperate, fierce, haters of those who are good,⁴ traitors, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God,⁵ having a form of godliness, but denying its power: from these also turn away.⁶ For of this sort are those who worm themselves into houses, and lead captive silly women that are laden with sins, and influenced by various desires,⁷ that are always learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

⁸ Now as Jannes and Jambres withheld Moses, so these also will withstand the truth; men corrupt in mind, rejected as it respects the

faith.⁹ But they shall proceed no further; for their madness shall be manifest to all, as was the madness of those men.

¹⁰ But you have fully known my teaching, my course of life, my purpose, my faithfulness, my long-suffering, my love, my patience,¹¹ my persecutions, my sufferings which came upon me in Antioch, in Iconium, in Lystra; you well know what persecutions I endured: and yet out of them all, the Lord delivered me.¹² And all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.¹³ But evil men and impostors will become worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

¹⁴ But do you continue in the things which you have learned and well understood, knowing from whom you learned them,¹⁵ and that from a child you have known the holy scriptures, which are able to make you wise in order to salvation, through faith that is in Christ Jesus.

¹⁶ All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished for every good work.

IV. ¹I charge you, therefore, before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom,² preach the word, be urgent in season and out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and teaching.³ For the time will come when they will not endure sound teaching, but according to their own desires they will procure for themselves an abundance of teachers to gratify their itching ears:⁴ and they will turn away their ears from the truth, and be turned to fables.⁵ But do you be watchful in all things, endure evil, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry?

⁶ For I am now ready to be poured out, and the time of my departure is at hand.⁷ I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith:⁸ henceforth there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will give me at that day; and not to me only, but to all those who love his appearing.

⁹ Endeavor to come to me shortly;¹⁰ for Demas has forsaken me, having loved the present age; and he has gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia.¹¹ Only

Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for the ministry. ¹²I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. ¹³When you come, bring the cloak that I left in Troas with Carpus, and the books, especially the parchments.

¹⁴Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil: the Lord repay him according to his works. ¹⁵Do you, also, beware of him, for he has greatly withstood our words.

¹⁶At my first defense no one stood by me, but all forsook me; may it not be laid to their charge: ¹⁷but the Lord stood by me, and gave me strength, that through me that which is

preached might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. ¹⁸And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and bring me safe to his heavenly kingdom. To him be glory from age to age. Amen.

¹⁹Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

²⁰Erastus remained at Corinth. I left Trophimus sick at Miletus. ²¹Endeavor to come to me before winter. Eubulus and Pudens and Linus and Claudia and all the brethren salute you. ²²The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you all. Amen.

Paul to Titus.

I. ¹Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledgement of the truth, which is according to godliness; ²in hope of eternal life, which God, who can not lie, promised before the times of the ages, ³but he has in his own times manifested his word by preaching, which was committed to me according to the commandment of God our Savior; ⁴to Titus, my true son, according to the common faith: grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Savior.

⁵I left you in Crete for this purpose, that you might set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I commanded you: ⁶if any one is blameless, the husband of one wife, if he has faithful children that are not accused of riotous living, or disobedient. ⁷For the bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not passionate, not fond of wine, not quarrelsome, not one who makes money by base means; ⁸but hospitable, a lover of goodness, sober-minded, just, holy, temperate, ⁹holding fast the sure word as it is taught, that he may be able, by sound teaching, both to exhort and to convince the opposers.

¹⁰For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially those of the circumcision, ¹¹whose mouths must be stopped: these subvert whole houses by teaching, for the sake of base gain, things which they ought not to teach. ¹²One of themselves, a prophet of their own, has said: The Cretans are always liars, evil wild beasts, lazy gluttons. ¹³This testimony is true; wherefore rebuke them severely, that they may be sound in the faith, ¹⁴and not give heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men that turn away from the truth. ¹⁵To the pure, all things are pure: but to the denied and unbelieving, nothing is pure; but their mind and their conscience are denied. ¹⁶They profess that they know God, but in their works they deny him, being detestable and disobedient, and, as it respects every good work, rejected.

II. ¹But do you speak the things that become sound teaching; ²that the aged men be vigilant, grave, sober-minded, sound in

faith, in love, in patience; ³that the aged women likewise be, in deportment, as it becomes holy women, not slanderers, not enslaved to much wine, teachers of good things, ⁴That they may teach the young women to be sober-minded, to love their husbands, to love their children, ⁵to be discreet, chaste, fond of home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not reviled.

⁶Exhort the young men likewise to be sober-minded, ⁷in all things showing yourself an example of good works; in teaching, showing incorruptness, gravity, ⁸sound speech that can not be condemned; that he that is opposed may be ashamed, seeing he has no evil thing to say of us.

⁹Exhort servants to be subject to their own masters, and to please them well in all things, not contradicting, ¹⁰not stealing, but showing all good faithfulness, that they may adorn the teaching of God our Savior in all things.

¹¹For the grace of God, which brings salvation to all men, has appeared, ¹²teaching us, that denying ungodliness and worldly desires, we should live soberly and righteously and godly in the present age; ¹³looking for the blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of our great God and Savior Jesus Christ, ¹⁴who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify for himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. ¹⁵Speak these things, and exhort and rebuke with all strictness. Let no one despise you.

III. ¹Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and authorities, to obey rulers, to be ready for every good work, ²to revile no one, not to be contentious, but gentle, showing all meekness to all men. ³For we ourselves also were formerly foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various desires and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.

⁴But when the kindness and philanthropy of God our Savior appeared, he saved us, ⁵not by works of righteousness which we had done, but according to his own mercy, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit,

⁶which he poured out on us richly, through Jesus Christ our Savior; ⁷that, being justified by his grace, we might become heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

⁸This saying is true, and in respect to these things, I will that you affirm strongly, in order that those who have believed in God may be careful to practice good works: these are the things that are honorable and profitable for men. ⁹But foolish questions and genealogies and strifes and contentions about the law, avoid; for they are unprofitable and vain. ¹⁰A man that is a sectary, reject, after the first and second admoni-

tion, ¹¹knowing that such a one is perverted, and sins, being self-condemned.

¹²When I send Artemas to you, or Tychicus, hasten to come to me at Nicopolis; for I have determined to spend the winter there. ¹³Conduct Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on their journey with care, that nothing may be wanting to them. ¹⁴Let our people also learn to practice good works for necessary uses, that they may not be unfruitful.

¹⁵All that are with me salute you. Salute those who love us in faithfulness. Grace be with you all. Amen. 0

Paul to Philemon.

¹ Paul, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy my brother, to Philemon my beloved, and our fellow-laborer, ²and to our beloved Apphia, and to Archippus our fellow-soldier, and to the church that is in your house: ³grace be to you all, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

⁴I thank my God, making mention of you always in my prayers, ⁵hearing of your love and your faith, which you have in the Lord Jesus, and toward all the saints, ⁶that your participation in the faith may be active in the acknowledgment of every good thing that is in us, to *the honor of Christ Jesus*. ⁷For we have great joy and comfort in your love, because the hearts of the saints have been refreshed by you, brother.

⁸Wherefore, though I have great boldness in Christ to command you to do that which is becoming, ⁹yet, on account of my love, I rather exhort you, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner on account of Jesus Christ. ¹⁰I beseech you for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds, ¹¹who, for some time, has been unprofitable to you, but now is very profitable to you and to me: ¹²I send him back, and do you receive him, that is, my son. ¹³I did wish to keep him with me, that, in

your stead, he might serve me in my bonds for the gospel; ¹⁴but, without your consent, I was not willing to do any thing, that your good deed might not be as a matter of necessity, but one of free-will.

¹⁵Perhaps, indeed, lie departed for a short time for this reason, that you might receive him forever; ¹⁶no longer as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, especially by me, and how much more by you, both in the flesh and in the Lord. ¹⁷If, then, you regard me as a partner, receive him as myself. ¹⁸But if he has done you any wrong, or owes you any thing, put that to my account. ¹⁹I, Paul, do write it with my own hand, I will repay it; that I may not say to you, that you owe to me even yourself besides. ²⁰Yes, brother, let me have joy of you in the Lord: refresh my heart in the Lord. ²¹Having confidence in your obedience, I write to you, knowing that you will do even more than I say. ²²At the same time, also, prepare me a lodging: for I hope that through the prayers of you all, I may be given to you. ²³Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus, salutes you: ²⁴so also do Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-laborers. ²⁵The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits. Amen.

Paul to the Hebrews.

I. ¹God, who in many parts and in many ways spoke in ancient times to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by his Son, ²whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom, also, he made the ages; ³who, being the effulgence of his glory and the exact representation of his essence, and upholding all things by his own powerful word, when he had by himself made expiation for our sins, sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high, ⁴having become so far superior to the angels, as the name which he has inherited is more excellent than theirs.

⁵For to which of the angels did he at any time say: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again: I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? ⁶And again, when he brings the first-begotten into the world, he says: And let all the angels of God worship him. ⁷And of the angels he says: Who makes his angels winds, and his ministers a flame of fire. ⁸But to the Son: Thy throne, O God, is from age to age: a scepter of rectitude is the scepter of thy kingdom. ⁹Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore, God, thy God, has anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. ¹⁰And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning, didst lay the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of thy hands. ¹¹They shall perish; but thou remainest: and they all shall grow old as a garment; ¹²and as a mantle thou shalt fold them up, and they shall be changed; but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

¹³But to which of the angels has he said at any time: Sit on my right hand, till I make thy enemies thy footstool? ¹⁴Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister to those who shall inherit salvation?

II. ¹Therefore, we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest we let them glide away. ²For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just punishment, ³how shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation? which at first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed

to us by those who heard him; ⁴God also bearing testimony with them by signs and wonders, and by various mighty deeds, and by distributions of the Holy Spirit, according to his own will.

⁵For not to angels has he subjected the world to come of which we speak. ⁶But one in a certain place testified, saying: What is man, that thou art mindful of him; or the son of man, that thou dost visit him? ⁷Thou hast made him a little lower than the angels; thou hast crowned him with glory and honor; ⁸thou hast put all things under his feet. For, in putting all things under him, he left nothing that is not put under him: but now we do not yet see all things put under him. ⁹But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, that he might, by the grace of God, taste death for every man—we see him, on account of his having suffered death, crowned with glory and honor. ¹⁰For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the author of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

¹¹For both he that sanctifies, and those who are sanctified, are all of one Father: for which reason, he is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying: ¹²I will declare thy name among my brethren; in the midst of the assembly, will I sing hymns to thee. ¹³And again: I will put my trust in him. And again: Behold, I, and the children that God has given me. ¹⁴Since, then, the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also, in like manner, partook of the same, that, through his death, he might deprive of power him that has the power of death, that is, the devil; ¹⁵and might set free those who, through fear of death, were all their lifetime subject to bondage. ¹⁶For, verily, he does not take hold of angels, but he takes hold of the posterity of Abraham. ¹⁷Wherefore, it behooved him to be made like his brethren in all things, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, in order to make expiation for the sins of the people. ¹⁸For, inasmuch as he himself has suffered in being tempted, he is able to help those who are tempted.

III. ¹Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our confession, Christ Jesus, ²who is faithful to him that appointed him, as Moses also was faithful in all his house. ³For this man is counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who has builded the house, has more honor than the house. ⁴For every house is builded by some one; but he that built all things is God. ⁵And Moses indeed was faithful in all his house as a servant, to bear testimony to those things which were to be spoken afterward; ⁶but Christ, as a Son over his own house; whose house we are, if we hold the confidence and the joy of our hope firm to the end.

⁷Wherefore, as the Holy Spirit says: To-day, if you will hear his voice, ⁸harden not your hearts, as in the bitter provocation, in the day of trial in the wilderness, ⁹where your fathers tried me, proved me, and saw my works forty years. ¹⁰Where fore, I was angry with that generation, and said, They do always err in their heart, and they have not known my ways: ¹¹so that I swore in my anger, They shall not enter into my rest. ¹²Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in apostatizing from the living God. ¹³But exhort one another daily, while it is called To-day, lest any of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. ¹⁴For we are partakers of the Christ, if we hold our begun confidence firm to the end; ¹⁵while it is said, To-day, if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the bitter provocation. ¹⁶For some, when they had heard, did bitterly provoke; yet, not all that came out of Egypt by Moses. ¹⁷But with whom was he angry forty years? Was it not with those who sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness? ¹⁸But to whom did he swear that they should not enter into his rest, but to those who believed not? ¹⁹And so we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

IV. ¹Let us fear, therefore, lest, as a promise of entering into his rest still remains, any of you should seem to come short of it. ²For we have had the good news preached to us, even as they had: but the word preached did not profit them, for it was not mixed with faith in those who heard it. ³For we who have believed are to enter into rest, as he said: So I swore in my anger, they shall not enter into my rest; namely, *that rest from his works which had been fin-*

ished from the foundation of the world. ⁴For he spoke in a certain place of the seventh day, thus: And God did rest on the seventh day from all his works; ⁵and in this place again: They shall not enter into my rest.

⁶Since, then, it remains that some must enter into it, and they, to whom the good news was first preached, did not enter in on account of unbelief, ⁷again, he determines a certain day, saying in David, after so long a time, To-day, as it is said, To-day, if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts. ⁸For if Joshua had given them rest, he would not, after this, have spoken of another day. ⁹There remains, therefore, a sabbath-state for the people of God. ¹⁰For he that has entered into his rest, he also has ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

¹¹Let us earnestly strive, therefore, to enter into that rest, lest any one fall after the same example of unbelief. ¹²For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, and pierces even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. ¹³And there is no creature which is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked, and exposed to the eyes of him to whom we must give an account.

¹⁴Seeing, then, that we have a great high priest, who has passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our confession. ¹⁵For we have not a high priest that can not sympathize with our infirmities; but he was tempted in all things like ourselves, yet without sin. ¹⁶Let us come, therefore, with boldness, to the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy, and find grace to help in every time of need.

V. ¹For every high priest chosen from among men, is appointed for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer gifts and sacrifices for sins: ²being able to have compassion on the ignorant and erring, because he himself is beset with infirmity: ³and on account of this, he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to make offering for sins. ⁴And no one takes this honor to himself, but he that is called by God, as Aaron also was called. ⁵So, also, the Christ did not take upon himself the honor of becoming a high priest: but he *gave him this honor*, who said to him, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee: ⁶as he says also in

another place, Thou art a priest forever, after the order of Melchisedec.

⁷In the days of his flesh, having offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, to him that was able to save him from death, and having been heard with respect to that which he feared, ⁸although he was a Son, he yet learned obedience from the things which he suffered; ⁹and, having been made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation to all that obey him, ¹⁰being called by God a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

¹¹Of him we have many things to say, and difficult to be explained, if we do say them, since you are slow in understanding. ¹²For though you ought to be teachers, considering the time, yet you have need that some one teach you again what are the first elements of the oracles of God; and you have become such as have need of milk, and not of strong food. ¹³For every one that partakes of milk is unskillful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. ¹⁴But strong food belongs to those who are of mature age, who, by use, have their internal senses exercised to the discerning of both good and evil.

VI. ¹Therefore, omitting the elementary Christian teaching, let us go on to the perfection of *Christian instruction*, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, ²of the teaching with respect to immersions, and of the laying on of hands, of the resurrection of the dead, and of eternal condemnation. ³And this we will do, if God permit. ⁴For it is impossible to renew again to repentance those who have once been enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and have been made partakers of the Holy Spirit, ⁵and have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the coming age, ⁶if they fall away; since they again crucify in themselves the Son of God, and put him to an open shame.

⁷For the land which drinks up the rain that comes often upon it, and produces herbs suitable for those for whom it is cultivated, receives blessing from God. ⁸But that which produces thorns and thistles is rejected, and is near the curse, the end of which is to be burned.

⁹But, beloved, we are confident of better things concerning you, and of things that tend to salvation, though we thus speak. ¹⁰For God is not unjust, that he should forget your work, and

the love which you have shown for his name by having ministered to the saints, and by continuing to minister.

¹¹But we desire every one of you to show the same diligence, in order to have your hope fully assured to the end: ¹²that you may not become slothful, but imitators of those who, through faith and patience, inherit the promises.

¹³For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself, ¹⁴saying: Most surely will I abundantly bless you, and abundantly multiply you. ¹⁵And so, when he had waited patiently, he received the promises. ¹⁶For, verily, men swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all contradiction.

¹⁷Wherefore, God, being more abundantly willing to show to the heirs of his promise the immutability of his purpose, interposed an oath, ¹⁸that by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled to lay hold on the hope set before us; ¹⁹which, hope we have as an anchor for the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which enters in beyond the veil, ²⁰whither a forerunner for us has gone, even Jesus, who is made a high priest forever after the order of Melchisedec.

VII. ¹For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him, ²to whom also Abraham gave a tenth of all, being, first, by interpretation, King of righteousness, and then, also, King of Salem, which means King of peace, ³without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life, but being made to resemble the Son of God, remains a priest forever.

⁴Now consider how great this man was, to whom even the patriarch Abraham gave a tenth of the spoils. ⁵And those of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham: ⁶but he who does not count his genealogy from them, received tithes from Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises. ⁷And, without any contradiction, the less is blessed by the better.

⁸And in the one instance, men that die

receive tithes; but in the other, he receives them who has the testimony that he lives. ⁹ And so to speak, even Levi, who receives tithes, paid tithes through Abraham; ¹⁰ for he was yet in the loins of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

¹¹ If, then, there had been a perfect expiation by means of the Levitical priesthood, (for with reference to it, the people received the law,) what further need was there that another priest should be raised up after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron? ¹² It is evident that, when the priesthood is changed, there is of necessity a change also of the law. ¹³ For he of whom these things are said, belongs to another tribe, from which no one attended upon the altar. ¹⁴ For it is very clear that our Lord sprung from Judah, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood.

¹⁵ And it is yet far more evident, if, after the likeness of Melchisedec, there arises another priest, ¹⁶ who is made, not according to the law of a fleshly commandment, but according to the power of an endless life; for he testifies, ¹⁷ Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec.

¹⁸ For, indeed, there is a setting aside of the preceding commandment, because it was weak and unprofitable, ¹⁹ (for the law made no perfect expiation), and the introduction of a better hope, by which we draw near to God. ²⁰ And inasmuch as he was made a priest, not without an oath, ²¹ (for those priests were made such without an oath, but this one with an oath, by him that said to him, The Lord swore, and will not repent, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec); ²² in so much has Jesus become the surety of a better covenant.

²³ And those priests, indeed, have been many, because they were prevented by death from continuing *in office*. ²⁴ But this man, because he continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood. ²⁵ Wherefore, he is able also to save through all time those who come to God by him, since he always lives to make intercession for them.

²⁶ For such a high priest is suited to us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and exalted above the heavens; ²⁷ who needs not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifices, first for his own sins, and then for the

sins of the people: for this he did once, when he offered up himself. ²⁸ For the law makes men high priests, who have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was after the law, makes the Son, who is perfected forever.

VIII. ¹ Now concerning the things that have been spoken, the principal point is *this*: We have such a high priest, who has taken his seat at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; ² a minister of the holy places, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.

³ For every high priest is appointed to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore, it is necessary that this one also have something which he may offer. ⁴ For if he were on earth, he could not be a priest; because there are priests that offer gifts according to the law: ⁵ and these serve the copy and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: See now, says he, that you make all things according to the pattern shown you in the mount. ⁶ But now he has obtained a more excellent ministry, inasmuch as he is the mediator of a better covenant, which is established with reference to better promises.

⁷ For if that first covenant had been faultless, no place would have been sought for a second.

⁸ For, finding fault with them, he says: Behold, the days are coming, says the Lord, when I will ratify a new covenant for the house of Israel, and for the house of Judah: ⁹ not like the covenant which I made with their fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt: because they continued not in my covenant, and I disregarded them, says the Lord.

¹⁰ For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel, after those days, says the Lord; putting my laws into their understanding, I will also write them upon their hearts; and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people; ¹¹ and they shall not teach, every one his citizen, and every one his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least of them to the greatest; ¹² because I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities I will remember no more.

¹³ In saying, A new covenant, he has regarded the first as out of use. Now, that which is out of use, and has become old, is ready to disappear.

IX. ¹Now, the first covenant also had ordinances of worship, and the worldly sanctuary: ²for a tabernacle was constructed, the first, in which were the candlestick, and the table, and the presence bread; and this tabernacle is called holy. ³But after the second veil, the tabernacle which is called the holy of holies; ⁴which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid on all sides with gold, in which were the golden pot that held the manna, and the rod of Aaron that budded, and the tables of the covenant; ⁵and over the ark, the cherubim of glory overshadowing the mercy-seat; of which things we can not now speak particularly.

⁶Now, when these things were thus arranged, the priests went, at all times, into the first tabernacle, discharging the service of God.

⁷But into the second, the high priest alone went, once during the year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people: ⁸the Holy Spirit signifying this, that the way into the most holy was not yet made manifest, while the first tabernacle was still standing, ⁹which, as a symbol, *remains* to the present time, in which are offered both gifts and sacrifices that can not make perfect, as it respects the conscience, him that does the service; ¹⁰*since he relies* only on meats and drinks and various immersions, ordinances indeed of the flesh, which were imposed till the time of reformation.

¹¹But Christ, having come a high priest of the good things to come, through the greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, (that is, not of this building,) ¹²entered, not by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood, once for all, into the most holy, having obtained eternal redemption. ¹³For if the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling the unclean, cleanses them as it respects the purity of the flesh, ¹⁴how much more will the blood of the Christ, who, through the eternal Spirit, offered himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works, in order that you may serve the living God?

¹⁵And for this reason, he is the mediator of the new covenant: that, since his death has taken place for the redemption of transgressions that were under the former covenant, those who are called may receive the promise of the eternal

inheritance. ¹⁶For where a testament is, it is necessary that there be brought in the death of the testator: ¹⁷for a testament goes into effect after men are dead: seeing that it has no validity at all while the testator lives.

¹⁸Wherefore, the first covenant was not instituted without blood. ¹⁹For when Moses had spoken to all the people every commandment of the law, lie took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book itself and all the people, saying: ²⁰This is the blood of the covenant which God enjoins on you: ²¹and, in like manner, he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the service. ²²And, indeed, according to the law, almost all things are cleansed by blood; and without the shedding of blood there is no remission.

²³It was necessary, therefore, that the copies of the things in the heavens should be consecrated by these sacrifices; but that the heavenly things themselves should be consecrated by better sacrifices than these. ²⁴For the Christ has not entered the holy places made with hands, the copies of the true; but he has entered heaven itself, now to present himself in the presence of God for us. ²⁵Nor *has he entered*, that he should offer himself often, as the high priest enters the holy places every year with the blood of another: ²⁶for then, he must have suffered often since the foundation of the world. But now once in the end of the ages, he has appeared in order to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. ²⁷And, as it is appointed to men once to die, and after this the judgment, ²⁸so the Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and to those who look for him he will appear the second time, without a sin-offering, in order to salvation.

X. ¹For the law, having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never, with the same sacrifices, which they offer year by year continually, make a perfect expiation for those who come to them: ²for then, would they not have ceased to be offered? because the worshipers, after being once cleansed, would no longer have a consciousness of sins. ³There is, however, in these sacrifices, a remembrance of sins every year.

⁴For it is impossible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. ⁵Wherefore,

when he comes into the world, he says: Sacrifice and offering thou hast not desired, but a body thou hast prepared me; ⁶in whole burnt-offerings and offerings for sin, thou hast had no pleasure. ⁷Then, said I, Behold, I come, (in the roll of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God. ⁸After saying above, Thou didst neither desire, nor take pleasure in sacrifice and offering and whole burnt-offerings and offerings for sin, which are offered according to the law, ⁹then he said, Behold, I come to do thy will: he takes away the first, that he may establish the second. ¹⁰By which will, we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ, once for all time.

¹¹And every priest stands daily ministering, and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: ¹²but after offering one sacrifice for sins, he himself sits continually at the right hand of God, ¹³henceforth waiting till his enemies be made his footstool. ¹⁴For by one offering, he has made a perfect and perpetual expiation for the sanctified.

¹⁵And, indeed, the Holy Spirit is a witness for us. For after he had said before, ¹⁶This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the Lord; putting my laws in their hearts, I will also write them in their understandings: ¹⁷he adds, And their sins and iniquities I will remember no more. ¹⁸Now, where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

¹⁹Having therefore, brethren, confidence to enter the holiest by the blood of Jesus, ²⁰by a new and living way which he has dedicated for us, through the veil, that is, his flesh; ²¹and having a great high priest over the house of God, ²²let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having; our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water; ²³let us hold fast the unwavering confession of our hope, for he is faithful who has promised; ²⁴and let us consider one another that we may excite to love and good works, ²⁵not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the custom of some; but exhorting one another, and so much the more, as you see the day approaching.

²⁶For if we sin willfully, after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no longer a sacrifice for sins; ²⁷but a certain fearful looking for of judgment, and a fiery

indignation which will devour the adversaries. ²⁸He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, on the testimony of two or three witnesses: ²⁹of how much severer punishment do you think he shall be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, with which he was sanctified, a common thing, and has done despite to the Spirit of grace? ³⁰For we know him who has said, Vengeance is mine, I will repay, says the Lord. And again, The Lord will judge his people. ³¹It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

³²But remember the former days, in which, after you were enlightened, you endured a great conflict of sufferings; ³³partly, while you became a public spectacle, by reproaches and afflictions: partly, while you became partakers with those who were so treated. ³⁴For you sympathized with me in my bonds, and endured joyfully the seizure of your possessions, knowing that you have for yourselves a better and abiding substance in the heavens. ³⁵Cast not away, therefore, your confidence, which has a great reward.

³⁶For you have need of patience, that, after you have done the will of God, you may receive the promise. ³⁷For yet a very, very little while, and He that comes will come, and will not delay. ³⁸But the just by faith shall live; and if he draw back, my soul will have no pleasure in him. ³⁹But we are not of those who draw back to perdition; but of those who believe to the saving of the soul.

XI. ¹Now, faith is a sure confidence with respect to things hoped for, a firm persuasion with respect to things not seen: ²for by this the ancients obtained a good reputation.

³By faith we understand that the ages were set in order by the word of God, so that the things which are seen, have not come into being from things that appear.

⁴By faith Abel offered to God more sacrifice than Cain; on account of which he received testimony that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts; and by it he, though dead, yet speaks.

⁵By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death, and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had the testimony that he pleased God. ⁶But without faith it is impossible to please him; for he that comes to God must

believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of those who diligently seek him.

⁷ By faith Noah, after being warned concerning things not yet seen, moved with fear, prepared an ark for the salvation of his house; by which faith he condemned the world, and became an heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

⁸ By faith Abraham, when called to go out into a place that he should afterward receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. ⁹ By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange land, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: ¹⁰ for he looked for a city that has foundations, whose architect and builder is God. ¹¹ By faith also Sarah herself received strength for the conception of seed, and brought forth a child when past the time of life, because she counted him faithful who had promised. ¹² Therefore, there were born of one, who was dead as it respects these things, a posterity like the stars of heaven in multitude, and like the sand on the sea-shore, innumerable.

¹³ All these died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and having embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and sojourners in the land. ¹⁴ For those who say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country. ¹⁵ And if indeed they had been mindful of that from which they came, they could have had an opportunity to return.

¹⁶ But now they desire a better, that is, a heavenly country; wherefore God is not ashamed of them, that he should be called their God: for he has prepared for them a city.

¹⁷ By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: even his first-born, did he that had received the promises, offer up, ¹⁸ of which first-born it was said: In Isaac shall your posterity be called: ¹⁹ for he concluded that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; wherefore he received him even in like manner.

²⁰ By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. ²¹ By faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed each of the sons of Joseph, and worshiped on the top of his staff.

²² By faith Joseph, when he was dying, made mention of the departure of the sons of Israel, and gave commandment concerning his bones.

²³ By faith Moses was concealed by his parents for three months after his birth, because they saw that he was a beautiful child: and they feared not the command of the king. ²⁴ By faith Moses, when he became a man, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter, ²⁵ choosing rather to suffer evil with the people of God than to enjoy the pleasure of sin for a season; ²⁶ esteeming the reproach on account of the Christ as greater riches than the treasures of Egypt: for he earnestly looked to the reward. ²⁷ By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the anger of the king: for he patiently endured, as seeing him that is invisible. ²⁸ By faith he kept the passover, and the affusion of blood, that he who destroyed the first-born might not touch them.

²⁹ By faith they passed through the Bed Sea as by dry land, which the Egyptians attempting to do, were drowned.

³⁰ By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after the people had gone around them for seven days.

³¹ By faith Rabab the harlot perished not with the disobedient, because she had received the spies with peace.

³² And what further shall I say? For the time would fail me, were I to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthah, of David also and Samuel, and of the prophets, ³³ who, through faith, subdued kingdoms, worked righteousness, obtained promises, closed the mouths of lions, ³⁴ quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, became valiant in battle, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

³⁵ Women received their dead raised to life again: but others were beat to death, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection; ³⁶ others had trial of mockings and scourgings, bonds also, and imprisonments. ³⁷ They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, they were tempted, they were slain with the sword: they went about in sheep-skins, in goatskins, being destitute, afflicted, oppressed with evils, ³⁸ (of whom the world was not worthy,) wandering in deserts, and in mountains, and in caverns, and in dens of the earth.

³⁹ And all these, having obtained a good reputation by faith, received not the promise, ⁴⁰ because God had provided some better thing for us, that they, without us, should not be made perfect.

XII. ¹Wherefore, since we also have so great a cloud of witnesses lying round about us, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin that so easily besets us, and let us run with patience the race that lies before us, ²looking to Jesus the author and finisher of the faith, who, for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and has taken his seat at the right hand of the throne of God. ³For consider him that endured such opposition of sinners against himself, lest you become weary and despondent in your minds.

⁴You have not yet resisted to blood, in your contest with sin; ⁵and you have forgotten the exhortation which is addressed to you as to sons: My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are reproved by him. ⁶For, whom the Lord loves, he chastens, and scourges every son that he receives. ⁷If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons: for what son is there whose father chastens him not? ⁸But if you are without chastisement, of which all are partakers, then are you bastards, and not sons.

⁹So, then, we have had fathers of our flesh who corrected us, and we revered them; shall we not much rather be in subjection to the Father of our spirits, and live? ¹⁰For they, indeed, for a few days, chastened us as they thought it good; but he chastens us for our profit, that we may be partakers of his holiness. ¹¹But no chastisement seems, at the time, to be a matter of joy, but of grief: yet afterward, it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to those who are exercised by it.

¹²Wherefore, lift up the hands that hang down, and strengthen the feeble knees, ¹³and make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned aside; but rather let it be restored to health. ¹⁴Follow peace with all, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord; ¹⁵taking care, lest any one slight the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness spring up and trouble you, and by this many be defiled; ¹⁶lest there be any lewd person, or profane man, as Esau, who, for a single meal, sold his birthright. ¹⁷For you know that afterward, when he desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no means to change *his father's* mind, though he sought it earnestly with tears.

¹⁸For you have not come to a mountain that may be touched, and that burns with fire, and to

blackness and darkness and tempest, ¹⁹and to the sound of a trumpet, and to the utterance of words, the hearing of which utterance caused the people to entreat that the word might not be spoken to them again; ²⁰for they could not endure that which was commanded, And if even a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned: ²¹and so terrible was the sight, that even Moses said, I exceedingly fear and tremble. ²²But you have come to Mount Zion, and the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to myriads of angels; ²³to the general assembly and church of the first-born, who are enrolled in heaven, and to God, the judge of all, and to the spirits of the just made perfect, ²⁴and to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than the blood of Abel.

²⁵See that you reject not him that speaks: for if they escaped not who rejected that earthly man who gave the oracles, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that is from heaven, ²⁶whose voice then shook the earth; but now he has promised, saying, Yet once more I will shake not the earth only, but also the heaven. ²⁷And this *prophecy*, Yet once more, signifies the removing of the things that are shaken, as of things that have been made, that the things which can not be shaken may remain. ²⁸Wherefore, as we receive a kingdom that can not be shaken, let us have gratitude, by which we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear: ²⁹for our God is a consuming fire.

XIII. ¹Let brotherly love continue. ²Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for, by this means, some have unconsciously entertained angels. ³Remember those who are in bonds, as if you yourselves had been bound, and those who suffer affliction, since you yourselves are in the body.

⁴Marriage is honorable among all men, and the bed undefiled; but lewd men and adulterers God will judge. ⁵Let there be no money-loving disposition; be content with such things as you have. For he has said: I will never leave you, nor will I ever forsake you. ⁶So, then, we may boldly say: The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man will do to me.

⁷Remember those who rule over you, who have spoken to you the word of God: attentively consider the result of their conduct, and imitate

their faith. ⁸Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, and to-day, and forever. ⁹Be not carried away by various and strange teachings: for it is good that the heart be strengthened with grace, not with meats, which have not profited those who were occupied with them. ¹⁰We have a sacrifice, of which those who serve the tabernacle have no right to eat.

¹¹For the bodies of those animals whose blood, shed for sin, is carried by the high priest into the holiest, are burned without the camp. ¹²Wherefore, Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people by his own blood, suffered without the gate. ¹³Therefore, let us go forth to him without the camp, bearing his reproach. ¹⁴For here we have no abiding city, but we seek one to come. ¹⁵Through him, therefore, let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to his name.

¹⁶But forget not to do good, and to be liberal: for with such, sacrifices God is well pleased. ¹⁷Obey those who rule over you, and be submissive: for they watch for your souls, as those who

must give an account; that they may do this with joy, and not with grief: for that would be fatal to you. ¹⁸Pray for us: for we trust that we have a good conscience, willing to live honorably in all things. ¹⁹And I the more earnestly entreat you to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

²⁰Now may the God of peace, who brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus Christ, the great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the eternal covenant, ²¹perfect you in every good work, in order that you may do his will, working in you that which is acceptable in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory from age to age. Amen.

²²I beseech you, brethren, bear with my word of exhortation: for I have written to you in few words.

²³Know that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you. ²⁴Salute all your rulers, and all the saints. The saints of Italy salute you.

Grace be with you all. Amen.

The Letter of James.

I. ¹James, a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes that are in the dispersion, greeting. ²My brethren, count it all joy, when you fall into manifold trials, ³knowing that the trial of your faith produces patience. ⁴But let patience have its work perfected, that you may be perfect and faultless, wanting in nothing.

⁵Now, if any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all liberally, and upbraids not; and it shall be given him. ⁶But let him ask in faith, doubting not: for he that doubts, is like a wave of the sea, driven by the wind, and tossed. ⁷For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing from the Lord. ⁸A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways.

⁹Let the brother that is in a lowly condition, glory in his exaltation: ¹⁰but he that is rich, in his humiliation; because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away. ¹¹For the sun rises with its burning heat, and withers the grass, and its flower falls, and the beauty of its form perishes. So, also, shall the rich man fade away in his ways.

¹²Blessed is the man that endures trial: for, being approved, he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord has promised to those who love him. ¹³Let no one say, when he is tempted, My temptation is from God; for God can not be tempted by evils, and he himself tempts no man. ¹⁴But every one is tempted when he is drawn away by his own desire, and is deluded. ¹⁵So, then, desire, when it has conceived, brings forth sin; and sin, when it is matured, brings forth death.

¹⁶Be not deceived, my beloved brethren; ¹⁷every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no change, nor slightest trace of turning. ¹⁸Of his own will, he begot us with the word of truth, in order that we might be, as it were, the first-fruits of his creatures.

¹⁹So, then, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath. ²⁰For the wrath of man produces not the righteousness of God. ²¹Wherefore, laying aside all filthiness, and every excess caused by malice,

receive with meekness the ingrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

²²But be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves. ²³For if any one is a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like a man that looks at his natural face in a mirror: ²⁴for he looks at himself, and goes away, and immediately forgets what sort of person he is. ²⁵But he that looks intently into the perfect law of liberty, and remains constant, being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, he shall be blessed in his deed.

²⁶If any one among you seems to be religious, and bridles not his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this man's religion is vain. ²⁷Religion, pure and undefiled before God and the Father, is this: To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

II. ¹My brethren, do not hold the faith of our glorious Lord Jesus Christ, so as to show a partiality for persons. ²For if there comes into your assembly a man in splendid apparel, and with gold rings on his fingers, and there comes in also a poor man, in mean clothing, ³and you show regard to him that wears the splendid apparel, and say to him, Sit here, in an honorable place; and you say to the poor man, Do you stand there, or sit here, under my footstool; ⁴are you not partial in yourselves? and do you not judge from false principles? ⁵Hear, my beloved brethren: Has not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which God has promised to those who love him? ⁶But you dishonor the poor man. Do not the rich oppress you, and do they not themselves drag you to the judgment-seats? ⁷Do they not themselves revile that honorable name which is called upon you? ⁸If, however, you fulfill the law of highest excellence, according to the scripture, You shall love your neighbor as yourself, you do well. ⁹But if you show partiality for persons, you work sin, and are convicted by the law as transgressors.

¹⁰For whoever shall keep the whole law, and yet fail in one, is an offender against all. ¹¹For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do

not kill. Now, though you do not commit adultery, yet, if you kill, you are a transgressor of law.

¹² So speak, and so act, as those who shall be judged by the law of liberty. ¹³ For he shall have judgment without mercy, who has shown no mercy. Mercy glories over judgment.

¹⁴ What profit is there, my brethren, if any one say he has faith, and have not works? Can faith save him? ¹⁵ If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, ¹⁶ and any of you say to them, Go in peace, be warmed and be filled, and yet give them not the things that are needful for the body, what does this profit them? ¹⁷ So, also, faith, if it has not works, is dead, being by itself. ¹⁸ But some one will say, You have faith, and I have works; show me your faith by your works, and I will show you my faith by my works. ¹⁹ You believe that there is one God; you do well: the demons also believe, and tremble. ²⁰ But will you know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

²¹ Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he offered his son Isaac on the altar? ²² Do you see that faith was the moving principle in his works, and by works his faith was made perfect? ²³ And the scripture was fulfilled, which says, Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God. ²⁴ Do you see that a man is justified by works, and not by faith only?

²⁵ Likewise, was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and sent them out another way? ²⁶ For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

III. ¹ My brethren, be not many teachers, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation. ² For in many things we all offend. If any one offends not in word, he is a perfect man, able also to bridle the whole body. ³ Behold, we put bits into horses mouths that they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body. ⁴ Behold also the ships, which are very great, and are driven by violent winds; yet they are turned about by a very small helm, to whatever point the will of him that directs it may determine. ⁵ So, also, the tongue is a little member, and boasts great things. Behold, how great a forest does a little fire set in a blaze. ⁶ And the tongue is a fire, the world of iniquity. So is the tongue placed among our members, defiling

the whole body, setting on fire the course of life, and being set on fire by hell.

⁷ For every kind of beasts and of birds, of creeping things and of things in the sea, is tamed, and has been tamed by man: ⁸ but the tongue no man can tame; it is an unruly evil; it is full of deadly poison. ⁹ With it we bless God, even the Father: and with it we curse men, who are made in the likeness of God. ¹⁰ Out of the same mouth come forth blessing and cursing. These things, my brethren, ought not so to be. ¹¹ Does a fountain send forth from the same cavern sweet water and bitter? ¹² Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olives, or the vine, figs? So no fountain can produce salt water and fresh.

¹³ Who is wise and discreet among you? Let him show, by a good behavior, his works, with the meekness of wisdom. ¹⁴ But if you have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. ¹⁵ This wisdom comes not from above, but is earthly, animal, demoniac. ¹⁶ For where envy and strife are, there is commotion, and every evil work. ¹⁷ But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. ¹⁸ And those who cultivate peace, sow for themselves a harvest of righteousness in peace.

IV. ¹ Whence come wars and strifes among you? Come they not hence, even of your passions, which war in your members? ² You desire, and you have not; you kill, and are earnestly desirous of having, and yet you can not obtain; you fight and war, and yet you have not, because you ask not. ³ You ask, and receive not, because you ask amiss, that you may spend it on your passions.

⁴ Adulterers and adulteresses, know you not that the friendship of the world is enmity to God? Whoever, therefore, will be a friend of the world, is an enemy of God. ⁵ Do you suppose that the scripture speaks to no purpose? Does the Spirit that dwells in us incline to envy? No. ⁶ But he gives more grace. Wherefore he says: God sets himself against the proud, but gives grace to the lowly. ⁷ Submit yourselves, therefore, to God; resist the devil, and he will flee from you; ⁸ draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you double-minded

men. ⁹Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to sorrow. ¹⁰Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he will exalt you.

¹¹Do not speak evil one of another, brethren. He that speaks evil of his brother, and judges his brother, speaks evil of the law, and judges the law: but if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law, but a judge. ¹²There is one law-giver that is able to save, and to destroy: who are you that judge another?

¹³Come, now, you that say, Let us go to-day, or to-morrow, into this city, and remain there a year, and trade, and make gain; ¹⁴and yet you know not what will take place to-morrow. For what is your life? Is it not, indeed, a vapor, that appears for a little while, and then vanishes away? ¹⁵Instead of that, you ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. ¹⁶But now you glory in your boastings: all such glorying is evil. ¹⁷Therefore, to him that knows how to do good, and does it not, to him it is sin.

V. ¹Come, now, you rich men, weep and lament for your miseries that are coming upon you. ²Your wealth is corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten: ³your gold and your silver are covered with rust; and their rust will be a testimony against you, and will eat your flesh as fire. You have heaped up treasures in the last days. ⁴Behold, the hire of the laborers who have reaped your fields, which has been unjustly withheld by you, cries out: and the cries of those who have reaped, have entered into the ears of the Lord of hosts. ⁵You have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton; you have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter. ⁶You have condemned and killed the Just One: and he does not set himself against you.

⁷Be patient, therefore, brethren, till the coming of the Lord. Behold, the farmer looks

for the precious fruit of the earth, and waits patiently for it, till he receives the early and the latter rain. ⁸Be you also patient, establish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draws near.

⁹Indulge not in complaints against one another, brethren, lest you be condemned: behold, the judge stands before the door. ¹⁰Take, my brethren, the prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord, as an example of suffering evil, and of patience. ¹¹Behold, we count those happy who endure. You have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the final dealing of the Lord, that the Lord is very compassionate and merciful.

¹²But above all things, my brethren, swear not, either by heaven, or by the earth, or with any other oath: but let your yes, be yes, and your no, be no, lest you fall into condemnation.

¹³Is any one among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any one cheerful? let him sing praise.

¹⁴Is any one among you sick? let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil, in the name of the Lord.

¹⁵And the prayer of faith shall save the sick; and the Lord will raise him up. And if he has committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

¹⁶Confess your faults one to another, and pray for one another, that you may be restored to health: the fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much. ¹⁷Elijah was a man with passions like our own; and he earnestly prayed that it might not rain; and it did not rain on the land for three years and six months. ¹⁸And he prayed again; and the heavens gave rain, and the earth brought forth its fruit.

¹⁹Brethren, if any among you should err from the truth, and one should turn him back, ²⁰let him know that he who turns back a sinner from the error of his way, will save a soul from death, and cover a multitude of sins.

First Letter of Peter.

I. ¹Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the sojourners that are dispersed through Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, ²elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, by the sanctification of the Spirit, in order to obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: grace be to you, and peace be multiplied.

³Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who, according to his abundant mercy, has, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, regenerated us for a living hope ⁴in respect to an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for us, ⁵who are kept secure by the power of God through faith, to a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time: ⁶in which you rejoice, though now for a little while, since it is needful, you are in sorrow under various temptations; ⁷that your faith, when proved, being much more precious than gold, which perishes though it be tried by fire, may be found to be for praise and honor and glory, at the revelation of Jesus Christ; ⁸whom, though you have not seen him, yet you love; on whom not now looking, but believing, you rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory, ⁹receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls.

¹⁰Concerning which salvation the prophets that prophesied of the grace that should be for you, did inquire, and search diligently, ¹¹inquiring what things, and what time, the Spirit of Christ that was in them did signify, when it testified, beforehand, the sufferings of Christ, and the glories that should follow them; ¹²to whom it was revealed, that, not for themselves, but for us, they ministered the things that are now preached to you by those who have made known to you the gospel, through the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven; into which things angels desire to look.

¹³Wherefore, gird up the loins of your mind; be watchful, and hope constantly for the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ: ¹⁴as obedient children, not conforming yourselves to the desires which you formerly had in your ignorance; ¹⁵but as he who has called you is holy, so be you holy in all your

behavior: ¹⁶because it is written, Be you holy, for I am holy.

¹⁷And since you call on the Father, who, without respect of persons, judges according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning in fear: ¹⁸because you know that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver or gold, from your vain mode of life received by tradition from your fathers, ¹⁹but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without spot and blemish, ²⁰who was indeed foreordained before the foundation of the world, but manifested in these last times for you, ²¹who through him do believe in God who raised him from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

²²Having purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, to unfeigned love of the brethren, love one another with a pure heart fervently, ²³having been begotten again, not with corruptible seed, but with incorruptible, by the word of God, which lives and abides forever. ²⁴For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass; the grass withers, and its flower fails away: but the word of the Lord abides forever: and this is the word which has been preached as gospel to you.

II. ¹Therefore, laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envyings, and all evil speakings, ²as new-born babes, earnestly desire the pure spiritual milk, that you may grow by it, ³if; indeed, you have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

⁴Coming to him as to a living stone, rejected indeed by man, but in the sight of God, chosen and precious, ⁵you, also, as living stones, are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, that you may offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. ⁶For it is contained in the scripture: Behold, I lay in Zion a chief cornerstone, chosen, precious; and he that believes on him shall not be ashamed. ⁷To you, then, who believe, is this preciousness: but the stone which the builders rejected, has become the head of the corner, ⁸and a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offense to the disobedient, who stumble at the word because they are disobedient, to which

stumbling they were also appointed. ⁹But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a purchased people, that you should show forth the virtues of him who has called you out of darkness into his wonderful light: ¹⁰who formerly were not a people, but now are the people of God; who had not received mercy, but now have received mercy.

¹¹Beloved, I beseech you, as strangers and sojourners, that you keep yourselves from fleshly desires, which war against the soul, ¹²maintaining an honorable mode of life am one the Gentiles, that, inasmuch as they speak against you as evil-doers, they may, on account of your good works which they witness, glorify God in the day of visitation.

¹³Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man, for the Lord's sake; whether it be to the king, as supreme ruler, ¹⁴or to governors, as those sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of those who do well. ¹⁵For such is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men; ¹⁶as being free, and yet not using your freedom as a cloak for malice, but as servants of God. ¹⁷Honor all men; love the brotherhood; reverence God; honor the king.

¹⁸Servants, be subject to your masters with all respect; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the perverse. ¹⁹For this is praiseworthy, if any one, on account of conscience toward God, endure sorrows, suffering unjustly. ²⁰For what praise is due, if, when you are punished for your faults, you endure it patiently? But if, when you do well, and suffer for it, you endure it patiently, this is praiseworthy in the sight of God. ²¹To this, indeed, you have been called; because even Christ suffered for us, leaving you an example, that you should follow his footsteps. ²²He did no sin, nor was guile found in his mouth. ²³When he was reviled, he did not revile again; when he suffered, he did not threaten, but committed himself to him that judges righteously. ²⁴He himself bore our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live to righteousness. By his stripes you were healed. ²⁵For you were like sheep that had gone astray; but now you have returned to the shepherd and bishop of your souls.

III. ¹Likewise, you wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they may, without the word,

be won by the conduct of their wives, ²by observing your blameless and reverential conduct. ³Let not your adorning be that which is outward, which consists in plaiting the hair, and wearing gold, and putting on apparel: ⁴but let it be the hidden man of the heart, adorned with the incorruptible ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which, in the sight of God, is of great price. ⁵For, in former times, the holy women also, who trusted in God, thus adorned themselves, being in subjection to their own husbands, ⁶as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: and you are her children, if you do good, and fear no dismay.

⁷Likewise, you husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, bestowing honor on the wife as the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, in order that your prayers may not be hindered.

⁸Finally, be all of the same mind, be sympathizing, lovers of the brethren, kind-hearted, humble-minded; ⁹not repaying evil for evil, nor reviling for reviling, but, on the other hand, blessing, since you know that for this end you were called, that you might inherit blessing. ¹⁰For he that will love life, and see good days, let him keep his tongue from evil, and his lips from speaking guile: ¹¹let him turn from evil and do good: let him seek peace, and pursue it. ¹²For the eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous, and his ears are open to their cry: but the face of the Lord is against those who do evil.

¹³And who is he that will harm you, if you be followers of that which is good? ¹⁴But yet, if you even suffer for righteousness, happy are you. Yet fear not their terror, nor be troubled: ¹⁵but reverence the Lord God in your hearts, and be always ready to answer every one that asks of you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear; ¹⁶having a good conscience, that, inasmuch as they speak against you as evil-doers, they may be ashamed who traduce your good conduct in Christ.

¹⁷For it is better, if such be the will of God, that you suffer for doing good, than for doing evil. ¹⁸For Christ also once suffered for sins, the Just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, having been put to death in flesh, but made alive in spirit; ¹⁹in which also he went and preached to the spirits in prison, ²⁰who formerly were disobedient, when the long-suffering of

God waited in the days of Noah, while an ark was preparing, in which few, that is, eight souls, were brought in safety through the water; ²¹ the likeness of which, even immersion, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the seeking of a good conscience toward God,) does now also save us, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, ²² who has gone into heaven, and is at the right hand of God, angels and authorities and powers having become subject to him.

IV. ¹Since, then, Christ has suffered for us in the flesh, do you also arm yourselves with the same determination; for he that has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin, ² so that he no longer lives the rest of his time in the flesh, according to the desires of men, but according to the will of God. ³For the time past of our life should be enough for us to have worked the will of the Gentiles, while we walked in licentiousness, lusts, drunkenness, revelings, drinkings, and unlawful idolatries. ⁴They are amazed at this—that you run not with them into the same excess of debauchery, and they revile you. ⁵These shall give an account to him that is ready to judge the living and the dead. ⁶For this cause, indeed, even those who have died had the gospel preached to them, that though they might be judged according to the will of men in the flesh, yet they might live according to the will of God in the spirit.

⁷ But the end of all things is at hand; be sober-minded, therefore, and watchful, that you may pray. ⁸But, above all things, have fervent love one for another; for love will cover a multitude of sins. ⁹Be hospitable, one to another, without murmuring. ¹⁰As each has received a gift, minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. ¹¹If any man speaks, let him speak as the oracles of God: if any man acts as a deacon, let him do this as from the strength which God supplies; that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory and strength from age to age. Amen.

¹² Beloved, be not amazed at the fiery trial that has come on you to try you, as if some strange thing had happened to you. ¹³ But, inasmuch as you are partakers of the sufferings of the Christ, rejoice, that, at the revelation of his glory, you may also be exceedingly joyful. ¹⁴If you are reproached on account of Christ, happy are you: for the glorious Spirit of God rests upon

you. On their part he is reviled, but on your part he is glorified: ¹⁵ for no one of you should suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or an evil-doer, or as a busybody in other men's matters. ¹⁶ But if any one suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God on this account. ¹⁷ For the time has come that judgment must begin at the house of God; and if it begin first at us, what shall be the end of those who obey not the gospel of God? ¹⁸ And if the righteous man is hardly saved, where shall the ungodly man and the sinner appear? ¹⁹ Wherefore, let those also who suffer according to the will of God, by doing good, commit their souls to him as to a faithful Creator.

V. ¹The elders that are among you I exhort, who am a fellow-elder, and a witness of the sufferings of the Christ, and a sharer in the glory that is to be revealed. ² Act as shepherds to the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight, not by compulsion, but willingly; not for the sake of sordid gain, but from readiness of mind: ³ neither as being lords over God's possessions, but being examples to the flock. ⁴ And when the chief shepherd shall appear, you shall receive the crown of glory that fades not away.

⁵ Likewise, you younger, be in subjection to the older: do you all indeed be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resists the proud, but gives grace to the lowly. ⁶ Humble yourselves, therefore, under the strong hand of God, that he may exalt you in due season. ⁷ Cast all your cares on him, for he cares for you.

⁸ Be sober, be watchful: for your adversary, the devil, like a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour. ⁹ Being firm in the faith, resist him, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren who are in the world.

¹⁰ But may the God of all grace, who has called us to his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after you have suffered a while, make you perfect, establish, strengthen, confirm you. ¹¹ To him be glory and dominion from age to age. Amen.

¹² By Sylvanus, a faithful brother to you, as I suppose, I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying that this is the true grace of God in which you stand. ¹³ The church in Babylon, elected together with you, salutes you, and so does Marcus my son. ¹⁴ Salute one another with a kiss of love. Peace be with you all that are in Christ Jesus.

Second Letter of Peter.

I. ¹Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who have obtained faith, equally as precious as our own, in the plan of justification *revealed by our God and Savior Jesus Christ:* ²grace be to you, and peace be multiplied in the acknowledgment of God, and Jesus our Lord.

³As his divine power has given us all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the acknowledgment of him who has called us by his glorious power, ⁴through which things very great and precious favors that were promised have been given us, that through these you may become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through desire: ⁵so, even for this very purpose, uniting to these things all diligence, add to your faith, virtue; and to virtue, knowledge; ⁶and to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godliness; ⁷and to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, love. ⁸For if these things be in you, and abound, they cause you to be neither idle, nor unfruitful as it respects the acknowledgment of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁹But he who is wanting in these things is blind, and closes his eyes, and has forgotten that he was cleansed from his old sins. ¹⁰Wherefore, brethren, give the greater diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if you do these things, you will never fall. ¹¹For thus will an entrance be given you abundantly into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

¹²Wherefore, I will not neglect to remind you always of these things, though you know them, and are established in the present truth. ¹³Indeed, I think it right, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to arouse you by putting you in remembrance. ¹⁴For I know that the putting off of this my tabernacle is near at hand, even as our Lord Jesus Christ showed me. ¹⁵But I will earnestly endeavor that you may be able, even after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

¹⁶For we did not follow cunningly devised fables, when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ; but we were eye-witnesses of his majesty. ¹⁷For he received

from God the Father honor and glory, when there came to him from the magnificent glory a voice, such as this: This is my beloved Son, in whom I delight. ¹⁸And this voice, which came from heaven, we heard when we were with him in the holy mount; ¹⁹and we have the prophetic word better established. You do well to attend to this, as to a lamp that shines in a dark place, till the day dawn, and the morning star arise in your hearts; ²⁰knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture came from private interpretation: ²¹for the prophecy came not at any time by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

II. ¹But there were false prophets among the people, as there will be false teachers also among you; and these will stealthily introduce ruinous sects, and deny the Lord that bought them, bringing upon themselves swift destruction: ²and many will follow their dissolute ways, on account of whom the way of truth will be reviled; ³and, with delusive words, they will, through covetousness, make gain of you: the condemnation, long ago denounced against these, delays not, and their destruction does not slumber.

⁴For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to Tartarus, and delivered them over to chains of darkness, to be kept for judgment; ⁵and if he spared not the old world, but brought a flood on the world of the ungodly, and saved Noah, the eighth person, who was a preacher of righteousness; ⁶and if, turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, he condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example to those who should afterward live in an ungodly manner, ⁷and delivered righteous Lot, wearied out with the licentious conduct of the lawless,— ⁸for that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds: ⁹then, the Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to keep the ungodly for the day of judgment, to be punished; ¹⁰but especially those who walk after the flesh in unclean lust, and who despise government. Presumptuous,

willful men! they are not afraid to speak evil of dignitaries: ¹¹whereas angels, who excel in might and in power, bring no railing accusation against them in the presence of the Lord. ¹²But these men, like beasts with out reason, which follow the instinct of nature, and are made to be taken and destroyed, speaking evil of things that they understand not, shall utterly perish in their own corruption, ¹³and receive the reward of unrighteousness. Counting it a pleasure to riot in the day-time, they are spots and stains, rioting in their delusions, while feasting with you; ¹⁴having eyes that are full of the adulteress, and that can not cease from sin, deceiving unstable souls, having a heart exercised in covetousness, accursed children, ¹⁵who have forsaken the right way and gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; ¹⁶but he was rebuked for his iniquity,—the dumb beast, speaking with man's voice, restrained the madness of the prophet. ¹⁷These men are fountains without water, clouds driven by a tempest, for whom the gloom of darkness is reserved forever.

¹⁸For by speaking boastful words of folly, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, and through lasciviousness, those who had really escaped from those who live in error. ¹⁹While they promise them freedom, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for by whatever any man is overcome, he is also enslaved. ²⁰For if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in these, and overcome by them, the last state of such is worse than the first. ²¹For it would be better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after having known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered to them. ²²But it has happened to them according to the true proverb: The dog has turned again to his own vomit; and, The sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

III. ¹This second letter I now write to you, beloved; in both of these I arouse your pure mind to remembrance, ²that you may be mindful of the words formerly spoken by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Savior: ³knowing this first, that there will come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, ⁴and say-

ing: Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

⁵For they are willingly ignorant of this, that by the word of God, the heavens of old had their being as also the earth consisting of water and subsisting by water, ⁶by which things the world that then was, having been overflowed with water, perished. ⁷But the heavens and the earth that now are, by the same word are kept in store, reserved for fire against the day of judgment, and perdition of ungodly men.

⁸But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. ⁹The Lord does not delay concerning his promise, as some men count delay, but he is long-suffering toward us, not wishing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. ¹⁰But the day of the Lord will come as a thief, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, and the earth, and the works that are on it, shall be burned up.

¹¹Seeing, then, that all these things shall be dissolved, what sort of persons ought you to be in all holy behavior, and godliness, ¹²looking for and earnestly desiring the coming of the day of God, because of which coming the heavens shall disolve in fire, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat. ¹³But we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, in which dwells righteousness.

¹⁴Wherefore, beloved, seeing that you expect such things, earnestly strive, by being spotless and blameless, to be found by him in peace: ¹⁵and count the long-suffering of our Lord, salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given him, has written to you; ¹⁶as also in all his letters, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which the unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, to their own destruction.

¹⁷Do you, therefore, beloved, since you know these things beforehand, beware, lest, being led away with the error of the wicked, you fall from your own steadfastness. ¹⁸But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

First Letter of John.

I. ¹That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled concerning the Word of life; ²(the life also was manifested, and we have seen, and do testify, and declare to you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested to us;) ³that which we have seen and heard, we declare it to you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. ⁴And these things we write to you, that your joy may be full.

⁵ And this is the message that we heard from him, and do declare to you: that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. ⁶If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth. ⁷But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanses us from all sin.

⁸ If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. ⁹If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just, so that he will forgive us our sins, and cleanse us from all unrighteousness. ¹⁰If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

II. ¹My little children, I write these things to you, that you may not sin: and yet, if any one sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. ²And he is the expiation for our sins: not for ours only, but for the sins of the whole world.

³ And by this we know that we do know him, if we keep his commandments. ⁴He that says, I know him, and keeps not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. ⁵But whoever keeps his word, in him truly is the love of God perfected: by this we know that we are in him. ⁶He that says, he abides in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

⁷ Beloved, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment, which you have had from the beginning; the old commandment is the word, which you have heard from the beginning. ⁸Again, a new commandment I do

write to you, which is true as it respects him and you; because the darkness is past, and the true light now shines.

⁹ He that says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness till now. ¹⁰He that loves his brother abides in the light, and there is in him no cause for offense. ¹¹He that hates his brother is in darkness, and walks in darkness; and he knows not whither he goes, because darkness has blinded his eyes.

¹² I write to you, little children, because your sins are forgiven for his name's sake. ¹³I write to you, fathers, because you have known him that is from the beginning. I write to you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one. I write to you, my little children, because you have known the Father. ¹⁴I have written to you, fathers, because you have known him that is from the beginning. I have written to you, young men, because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you, and you have overcome the wicked one. ¹⁵Love not the world, nor the things that are in the world. If any man loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. ¹⁶For all that is in the world, the desire of the flesh, and the desire of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. ¹⁷And the world and its desire passes away: but he that does the will of God, abides forever.

¹⁸ Little children, it is the last time; and, as you have heard that the antichrist is coming, even now there are many antichrists; by which we know that it is the last time. ¹⁹They went out from us, but they were not of us: for, if they had been of us, they would have remained with us; but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us. ²⁰And you have an anointing from the Holy One, and know all things. ²¹I have not written to you because you do not know the truth, but because you know it, and because no lie is of the truth. ²²Who is a liar, but he that denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, who denies the Father and the Son. ²³Whoever denies the Son, has not the Father: he that confesses the Son, has the Father also.

²⁴ Let that, therefore, abide in you which

you have heard from the beginning. If that abide in you which you have heard from the beginning, you also shall abide in the Son and in the Father. ²⁵ And this is the promise which he has promised us, even eternal life. ²⁶ I have written these things to you concerning those who deceive you. ²⁷ And the anointing which you have received from him abides in you; and you have no need that any one should teach you: but, as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true and is no lie, even as it has taught you, abide in it.

²⁸ And now, little children, abide in him, that when he appears, we may have confidence, and may not be made ashamed by him at his coming. ²⁹ If you know that he is righteous, you know that every one that works righteousness has been begotten by him.

III. ¹Behold, how great love the Father has bestowed on us, that we should be called the children of God! For this reason, the world knows us not, because it knew him not. ²Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it does not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is. ³And every one that has this hope in Him purifies himself, even as He is pure. ⁴Every one that works sin, works also transgression of law: and sin is transgression of law. ⁵And you know that he was manifested, that he might take away our sins; and in him there is no sin. ⁶Whoever abides in him, sins not. Whoever sins, has neither seen him nor known him.

⁷Little children, let no one deceive you: he that works righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. ⁸He that works sin is of the devil, for the devil sins from the beginning: for this purpose was the son of God manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. ⁹Whoever has been begotten of God does not work sin; because his seed remains in him: and he can not sin, because he has been begotten of God. ¹⁰By this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil. Whoever does not work righteousness is not of God; neither is he that loves not his brother. ¹¹For this is the message that you have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. ¹²Not as Cain, who was of the wicked one, and slew his brother: and for what reason did he slay him? because his

own works were evil, and his brother s, righteous. ¹³Wonder not, my brethren, if the world hates you. ¹⁴We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren: he that loves not his brother, abides in death. ¹⁵Whoever hates his brother, is a murderer: and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

¹⁶By this we know the love of *Christ*, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. ¹⁷Whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother have need, and shuts his heart against him, how dwells the love of God in him? ¹⁸My little children, let us not love in word, nor in tongue, but in deed, and in truth. ¹⁹And by this we know that we are of the truth; and we shall have our hearts at rest before him: ²⁰for if our heart condemn us, *we know* that God is greater than our heart, and knows all things. ²¹Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, we have confidence toward God, ²²and whatever we ask, we receive from him, because we keep his commandments, and do the things that are pleasing in his sight. ²³And this is his commandment: That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment. ²⁴And he that keeps his commandments abides in him, and he in him. And by this we know that he abides in us, by the Spirit which he has given us.

IV. ¹Beloved, believe not every spirit; but prove the spirits, whether they are from God: for many false prophets have gone out into the world. ²By this you know the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ came in the flesh, is from God: ³and whatever spirit confesses not that Jesus Christ came in the flesh, is not from God: and this is the spirit of antichrist, of which you have heard that it comes, and is now already in the world. ⁴You are of God, little children, and have overcome them; because he that is in you, is greater than he that is in the world. ⁵They are of the world: therefore, they speak of the world, and the world hears them. ⁶We are of God: he that knows God, hears us: he that is not of God, does not hear us: by this we know the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

⁷Beloved, let us love one another; for love is of God: and every one that loves, has been

begotten of God, and knows God. ⁸He that loves not, does not know God; for God is love. ⁹In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God sent his only-begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. ¹⁰In this is love; not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the expiation for our sins. ¹¹Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another. ¹²No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwells in us, and his love is perfected in us. ¹³By this we know that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he has given us of his Spirit.

¹⁴And we have seen, and we do testify, that the Father sent the Son to be the Savior of the world. ¹⁵Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwells in him, and he in God. ¹⁶And we have known and believed the love which God has for us. God is love; and he that dwells in love, dwells in God, and God in him. ¹⁷By this is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment; because, as he is, so are we in this world. ¹⁸There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear has torment: he that fears is not made perfect in love. ¹⁹We love him, because he first loved us.

²⁰If any man say, I love God, and yet hate his brother, he is a liar: for he that loves not his brother, whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen? ²¹And this commandment we have from him: That he that loves God, must love his brother also.

V. ¹Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ, has been begotten of God: and every one that loves him that begot, loves him also that is begotten of him. ²By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments. ³For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments; and his commandments are not burdensome. ⁴For whatever is begotten of God, overcomes the world; and this is the victorious principle that overcomes the world, even our

faith. ⁵Who is he that overcomes the world, but he that believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

⁶This is he that came by water and by blood, Jesus the Christ; not by water only, but by water and by blood: and it is the Spirit that testifies, because the Spirit is truth. ⁷For there are three that testify, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood; ⁸and the three agree in one. ⁹If we receive the testimony of men, the testimony of God is greater: for this is the testimony of God, which he has borne concerning his Son. ¹⁰He that believes on the Son of God has the testimony in himself: he that believes not God, has made him a liar, because he has not believed the testimony which God has borne concerning his Son. ¹¹And this is the testimony, that God has given us eternal life: and this life is in his Son. ¹²He that has the Son, has life: he that has not the Son of God, has not life.

¹³I have written these things to you that believe on the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may believe on the name of the Son of God. ¹⁴And this is the confidence that we have toward him, that if we ask any thing according to his will, he hears us. ¹⁵And if we know that he hears us, whatever we ask, we know that we have the petitions which we have asked of him. ¹⁶If any one see his brother sinning a sin not to death, he shall ask, and he will give him life for those who sin not to death. There is a sin to death: I do not say concerning this, that he should ask. ¹⁷All unrighteousness is sin; and there is a sin not to death. ¹⁸We know that whoever has been begotten of God, does not sin: but he that is begotten of God, keeps himself, and the wicked one touches him not. ¹⁹We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies under the wicked one. ²⁰And we know that the Son of God has come, and has given us understanding, that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and life eternal. Little children, keep yourselves from idols.

Second Letter of John.

¹The elder to the elect lady, and to her children, whom I love in the truth: and not I only, but also all who know the truth; ²*we all love you*, on account of the truth that dwells in us, and which will be with us forever: ³grace be with you, mercy and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love. ⁴I rejoiced greatly because I found some of your children walking in the truth, as we received commandment from the Father. ⁵And now I beseech you, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment to you, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another. ⁶And this is love, that we walk according to his commandments. This is the commandment, as you have heard from the beginning, that you should walk in it.

⁷For many deceivers have entered into the

world, who confess not that Jesus Christ came in the flesh: this is the deceiver and the antichrist.

⁸Look to yourselves, that we lose not the things that we have gained, but that we receive a full reward. ⁹Whoever transgresses, and abides not in the teaching of the Christ, has not God: he that abides in the teaching of the Christ, has both the Father and the Son. ¹⁰If any one comes to you, and brings not this teaching, receive him not into your house, and do not wish him well: ¹¹for he that wishes him well, is partaker of his evil deeds.

¹²Though I have many things to write to you, I determined not to communicate them by means of paper and ink: for I hope to come to you, and to speak mouth to mouth, that our joy may be full. ¹³The children of your elect sister greet you.

Third Letter of John.

¹The elder to the beloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth. ²Beloved, I pray above all things that you may prosper and be in health, even as your soul prospers. ³For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified to the truth that is in you, even as you walk in the truth. ⁴I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in the truth.

⁵Beloved, you do faithfully whatever you do to the brethren, and to strangers, ⁶who have testified to your love before the church: if you conduct these on their journey, in a manner worthy of God, you will do well: ⁷for, on account of his name, they went out, taking nothing from the Gentiles. ⁸We, therefore, ought to receive such, that we may be fellow-helpers to the truth.

⁹I wrote to the church; but Diotrephes, who loves to have the pre-eminence among them,

receives us not. ¹⁰Therefore, if I come, I will remember his works which he does, prating against us with malicious words: and not content with these things, he does not himself receive the brethren, but both forbids those who are willing, and casts them out of the church.

¹¹Beloved, do not imitate that which is evil, but that which is good. He that does good is of God: he that does evil has not seen God. ¹²A good report is given of Demetrius by all, and by the truth itself: and we also give our testimony, and you know that our testimony is true.

¹³I had many things to write, but I will not communicate them to you with ink and pen.

¹⁴But I trust that I shall shortly see you, and we will speak mouth to mouth. Peace be to you. Our friends *here* salute you. Salute our friends *with you* by name.

Letter of Jude.

¹Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to those who are sanctified in God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called: ²mercy be to you, and peace and love be multiplied.

³Beloved, using all diligence to write to you of the common salvation, I thought it necessary to write to you, and exhort you to contend earnestly for the faith once delivered to the saints. ⁴For some men have stealthily entered in, who were long ago appointed to this condemnation; ungodly men, who pervert the grace of our God, and use it for lascivious purposes, and deny our only Sovereign and Lord, Jesus Christ.

⁵But I wish to remind you, though you once knew this, that the Lord, having saved the people from the land of Egypt, then destroyed those who believed not. ⁶The angels also that kept not their own dominion, but left their proper habitation, he has reserved, in eternal chains under darkness, to the judgment of the great day. ⁷So Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities which were about them, in like manner giving themselves over to lewdness, and following after other flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of eternal fire. ⁸Yet, these dreamers also in like manner defile the flesh, despise government, and speak evil of dignitaries. ⁹But Michael the archangel, when, contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring a railing accusation, but said: The Lord rebuke you. ¹⁰But these speak evil of the things which they know not: and those things which they know naturally, as animals without reason, in these they corrupt themselves. ¹¹Alas for them! for they have gone in the way of Cain: and, in the error of Balaam, they have rushed headlong after reward, and have perished in the rebellion of Korah.

¹²These, while feasting with you, are spots in your lovefeasts, feeding themselves without fear; they are clouds without water, driven along by winds; trees of autumn, without fruit, twice dead, torn up by the roots: ¹³raging waves of the sea, foaming up their own shame: wandering stars, for whom the blackness of darkness is reserved forever. ¹⁴And Enoch, the seventh from Adam, also prophesied with reference to these men, saying: Behold, the Lord comes with his holy myriads, ¹⁵to execute judgment upon all, and to convict all the ungodly of all their ungodly works, which they have impiously committed, and of all the hard words which ungodly sinners have spoken against him. ¹⁶These are murmurers, fault-finders, walking according to their own desires; and their mouth speaks boastful words, while they admire persons for the sake of gain.

¹⁷But do you, beloved, remember the words that were formerly spoken by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; ¹⁸that they said to you, There should come, in the last days, scoffers walking according to their own ungodly desires. ¹⁹These are they who separate themselves, animal, not having the Spirit.

²⁰But you, beloved, building yourselves up on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit, ²¹keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, in order to eternal life. ²²And on some, have compassion, making a distinction: ²³and others, save by fear, snatching them from the fire, hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

²⁴Now to him that is able to keep you free from stumbling, and to present you blameless in the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, to the only God our Savior, be glory and majesty, strength and authority, both now and throughout all the ages. Amen.

The Revelation.

I. ¹The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him, that he might show to his servants the things that must shortly come to pass; and he sent it by his angel, and made it known to his servant John, ²who bore testimony to the word of God, and recorded the testimony of Jesus Christ, whatever things he saw. ³Blessed is he that reads, and those who hear the words of this prophecy, and keep the things that are written in it; for the time is at hand.

⁴John to the seven churches that are in Asia, grace be to you and peace from him who is, and who was, and who is to come; and from the seven spirits which are before his throne; ⁵and from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, the first-born from the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth. To him that loves us, and that has washed us from our sins in his own blood, ⁶and has made us a kingdom, priests to his God and Father; to him be glory and might from age to age. Amen.

⁷Behold, he comes with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and those also who pierced him: and all the tribes of the land shall lament because of him. Even so. Amen. ⁸I am the Alpha and the Omega, says the Lord God, who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty.

⁹I John, your brother and companion in the affliction, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the island called Patmos, on account of the word of God, and on account of the testimony of Jesus Christ. ¹⁰I was in spirit on the Lord's day, and I heard behind me a great voice like that of a trumpet, ¹¹saying: What you see, write in a book, and send to the seven churches; to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea.

¹²And I turned to see the voice that spoke with me: and having turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks, ¹³and in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like the Son of man, clothed in a robe reaching to his feet, and girded about the breast with a golden girdle. ¹⁴His head and his hair were white as white wool, as white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire; ¹⁵and his feet were like fine brass, as if they burned in a

furnace: and his voice was like the voice of many waters. ¹⁶And he had in his right hand seven stars; and out of his mouth went a sharp, two-edged sword: arid his face was as the sun when it shines in its strength.

¹⁷And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead; and he laid his right hand upon me, saying: Fear not, I am the First and the Last, ¹⁸and I am he that lives; and I was dead, and behold, I am alive from age to age: and I have the keys of hades and of death. ¹⁹Write, therefore, the things which you have seen, and the things which are, and those which shall be hereafter; ²⁰the mystery of the seven stars which you saw in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches; and the seven candlesticks are the seven churches.

II. ¹To the angel of the church in Ephesus, write: These things says he that holds the seven stars in his right hand, that walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; ²I know your works, and your labor, and your patience; and that you can not bear with those who are evil, and that you have tried those who say they are apostles, and are not, and have found them liars; ³and that you have patience, and have endured for my name's sake, and have not fainted. ⁴But I have this against you, that you have left your first love. ⁵Remember, therefore, whence you have fallen, and repent, and do your first works; if not, I will come to you quickly, and I will remove your candlestick from its place, unless you repent. ⁶But you have this, that you hate the works of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

⁷He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches: To him that overcomes, I will give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the paradise of God.

⁸And to the angel of the church in Smyrna, write: These things says the First and the Last, who was dead, and is alive: ⁹I know your works, and your affliction, and your poverty, (but you are rich,) and the impious words of those who say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan. ¹⁰Fear none of the things which

you are about to suffer; behold, the devil will throw some of you into prison, that you may be tried: and you shall have affliction ten days. Be faithful till death, and I will give you the crown of life.

¹¹He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He that overcomes shall not be hurt by the second death.

¹²And to the angel of the church in Pergamos, write: These things says he that has the sharp, two-edged sword; ¹³I know your works, and where you dwell, even where the throne of Satan is: and yet you hold fast my name, and have not denied my faith, even in those days in which Antipas was my faithful witness, who was slain among you, where Satan dwells. ¹⁴Yet I have a few things against you, that you have there those who hold the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put a stumbling-block before the sons of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols, and to practice lewdness. ¹⁵So, also, you have those who hold the teaching of the Nicolaitanes. ¹⁶Repent, therefore; if not, I will come to you quickly, and I will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

¹⁷He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him that overcomes, I will give of the hidden manna; and I will give him a white stone, and on the stone a new name written, which no one knows but he that receives it.

¹⁸And to the angel of the church in Thyatira, write: These things, says the Son of God, who has his eyes like a flame of fire, and his feet like fine brass; ¹⁹I know your works, and your love, and your faith, and your service, and your patience, and your works, the last greater than the first. ²⁰But I have against you that you suffer that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess, and teaches and deceives my servants to practice lewdness, and to eat things sacrificed to idols. ²¹And I have given her time to repent; and she will not repent of her lewdness. ²²Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and those who commit adultery with her into great affliction, unless they repent of their deeds. ²³And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he that searches the reins and the hearts: and I will give to every one of you according to your works. ²⁴But I say to you, the rest who are in Thyatira, as many as have not this

teaching, and who have not known the depths of Satan, (as they call them,) I will lay on you no other burden: ²⁵but what you have, hold fast till I come.

²⁶And to him that overcomes, and keeps my works to the end, will I give authority over the nations; ²⁷and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken in pieces, as I have received from my Father: ²⁸and I will give him the morning star. ²⁹He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

III. ¹And to the angel of the church in Sardis, write: These things says he that has the seven spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know your works, that you have a name, that you live, and are dead. ²Be watchful, and strengthen the things that remain, which are about to die; for I have not found your works perfect before God. ³Remember, therefore, how you have received and heard, and be watchful and repent. If, therefore, you do not watch, I will come upon you as a thief, and you shall not know at what hour I will come upon you. ⁴Yet you have a few names in Sardis that have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white, for they are worthy.

⁵He that overcomes, shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot his name out of the book of life: and I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. ⁶He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

⁷And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write: These things says he that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, he that opens and no man shuts, and shuts and no man opens; ⁸I know your works: behold, I have set before you an open door that no one is able to shut, because you have a little strength, and have kept my word, and have not denied my name. ⁹Behold, I will make those who are of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them come and worship before your feet, and know that I have loved you. ¹⁰Because you have kept the word of my patience, I also will keep you from the hour of trial that is about to come on the whole world, to try those who dwell on the earth. ¹¹I come quickly: hold fast that which you have, that no one take your crown.

¹²Him that overcomes, I will make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go out no more; and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from my God, and I will write upon him my new name. ¹³He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

¹⁴And to the angel of the church in Laodicea, write: These things says the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; ¹⁵I know your works, that you are neither cold, nor hot: I wish that you were cold, or hot. ¹⁶So, then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold, nor hot, I will vomit you out of my mouth. ¹⁷Because you say I am rich, and abound in wealth, and have need of nothing, and know not that you are miserable and pitiable and poor and blind and naked, ¹⁸I counsel you to buy of me gold that has been tried in the fire, that you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed, and that the shame of your nakedness may not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye-salve, that you may see. ¹⁹As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten; be zealous, therefore, and repent. ²⁰Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any one hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

²¹To him that overcomes, I will give to sit with me in my throne, even as I also have overcome, and have taken my seat with my father in his throne. ²²He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

IV. ¹After these things I saw, and behold, a door was opened in heaven; and the first voice which I heard, like the voice of a trumpet speaking with me, said: Come up hither, and I will show you things that must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in spirit; and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne; ³and he that sat was, in appearance, like a jasper and sardine-stone: and there was round about the throne a rainbow, in appearance like an emerald. ⁴And round about the throne were twenty-four thrones; and on the thrones there sat twenty-four elders, clothed in white raiment; and on their heads were crowns of gold. ⁵And out of the throne there went lightnings and thunderings and voices; and seven lamps of fire were burning before the

throne: these are the seven spirits of God. ⁶And before the throne there was a sea of glass, like crystal. And in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four living creatures full of eyes before and behind. ⁷And the first living creature was like a lion, and the second living creature was like a calf, and the third living creature had the face of a man, and the fourth living creature was like a flying eagle.

⁸And the four living creatures had each of them six wings about him; and they are full of eyes within; and they have no rest day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God, the Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come. ⁹And when the living creatures give glory and honor and thanks to him that sits on the throne, who lives from age to age, ¹⁰the twenty-four elders fall down before him that sits on the throne, and worship him that lives from age to age, and throw their crowns before the throne, saying: Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for thou hast created all things, and by thy will they exist, and were created.

V. ¹And I saw in the right hand of him that sits on the throne, a book written within and without, sealed with seven seals. ²And I saw a strong angel crying with a great voice: Who is worthy to open the book, and to break its seals? ³And no one in heaven, or on earth, or under the earth, was able to open the book, or to look upon it. ⁴And I wept much, because no one was found worthy to open the book, or to look upon it. ⁵And one of the elders said to me: Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, has the power to open the book and its seven seals.

⁶And I saw, in the midst of the throne, and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, a Lamb standing, like one that had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God that are sent into all the earth. ⁷And he came, and took the book out of the right hand of him that sits on the throne. ⁸And when he had taken the book, the four living creatures, and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb, having, each of them, harps, and golden cups full of incense, which is the prayers of the saints. ⁹And they sung a new song, saying:

Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open its seals: for thou wast slain, and hast

redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation: ¹⁰ and hast made us to our God kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth.

¹¹ And I saw, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the living creatures and the elders; and the number of them was myriads of myriads, and thousands of thousands. ¹² And they said, with a loud voice: Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power and riches and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and blessing. ¹³ And every creature that is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are on the sea, even all that are in them, I heard saying: To him that sits on the throne, and to the Lamb, be blessing and honor and glory and strength from age to age. ¹⁴ And the four living creatures said, Amen; and the elders fell down, and worshiped.

VI. ¹ And I saw when the Lamb opened the first of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four living creatures saying, with a voice like thunder, Come and see. ² And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given to him; and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

³ And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature say, Come and see. ⁴ And there went forth another horse, which was red; and to him that sat on him was given to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another; and there was given to him a great sword.

⁵ And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, Come and see. And I saw, and behold, a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of scales in his hand. ⁶ And I heard a voice in the midst of the four living creatures, saying: A chœnix of wheat for a denarius, and three chœnices of barley for a denarius; and as to the oil and the wine, see that you do no injustice.

⁷ And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature say, Come and see. ⁸ And I saw, and behold, a pale horse; and the name of him that sat upon him was Death: and Hades followed with him. And authority was given to him over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with the sword, and with famine, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

⁹ And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they had borne: ¹⁰ and they cried with a loud voice, saying: How long, O Sovereign, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? ¹¹ And a white robe was given to each of them: and it was said to them, that they should yet rest for a time, till the *number* of their fellow-servants,, and of their brethren, who should be killed as they had been, should be completed.

¹² And I saw when he had opened the sixth seal; and there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood: ¹³ and the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig-tree casts its unripe figs when shaken by a violent wind: ¹⁴ and the heaven departed as a volume when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved out of its place: ¹⁵ and the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the officers, and the rich men, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every freeman, hid themselves in the caves, and in the rocks of the mountains, ¹⁶ and said to the mountains and to the rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sits on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: ¹⁷ for the great day of his wrath has come, and who is able to stand?

VII. ¹ And after this I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind might not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree. ² And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, ³ saying: Hurt not the earth, nor the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads.

⁴ And I heard the number of those who were sealed: a hundred and forty-four thousand were sealed out of all the tribes of the sons of Israel. ⁵ Of the tribe of Judah, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Reuben, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Gad, twelve thousand were sealed: ⁶ of the tribe of Asher, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Naphtali, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Manasseh, twelve thousand were sealed: ⁷ of the tribe of

Simeon, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Levi, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Issachar, twelve thousand were sealed: ⁸ of the tribe of Zabulon, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Joseph, twelve thousand were sealed: of the tribe of Benjamin, twelve thousand were sealed.

⁹ After this I saw, and behold, a great multitude, that no one could number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and there were palms in their hands; ¹⁰ and they cried with a loud voice, saying: Salvation to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb. ¹¹ And all the angels stood round about the throne and the elders and the four living creatures; and they fell on their faces before the throne, and worshiped God, ¹² saying, Amen: blessing and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God from acre to acre. Amen.

¹³ And one of the elders answered, and said to me: Who are these that are clothed in white robes, and whence came they? ¹⁴ And I said to him: Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me: These are they who have come out of great affliction, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. ¹⁵ Therefore, they are before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple; and he that sits on the throne shall dwell among them. ¹⁶ They shall hunger no more, nor shall they thirst any more, nor shall the sun fall upon them, nor any heat. ¹⁷ For the Lamb that is in the midst of the throne will be their shepherd, and will lead them to living fountains of water: and God will wipe away every tear from their eyes.

VIII. ¹ And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour.

² And I saw the seven angels that stood before God, and seven trumpets were given to them. ³ And another angel came, and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and much incense was given to him, that he might offer it with the prayers of all the saints upon the golden altar that is before the throne. ⁴ And the smoke of the incense, with the prayers of the saints, ascended before God out of the hand of the angel. ⁵ And the angel took the censer, and filled

it with fire from the altar, and threw it into the earth; and there were voices and thunderings and lightnings and an earthquake. ⁶ And the seven angels that had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

⁷ And the first angel sounded; and there were hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were thrown into the earth: and the third part of the earth was burned up, and the third part of the trees was burned up, and all the green grass was burned up.

⁸ And the second angel sounded; and, as it were, a great mountain, burning with fire, was thrown into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood. ⁹ And the third part of the creatures that were in the sea, that had life, died: and the third part of the ships was destroyed.

¹⁰ And the third angel sounded; and there fell from heaven a great star, that burned as a lamp; and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters. ¹¹ And the name of the star is called Wormwood; and the third part of the waters became wormwood: and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

¹² And the fourth angel sounded; and the third part of the sun, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars was smitten, that the third part might be darkened, and that the day might not shine for the third part of it, and the night in like manner.

¹³ And I saw, and heard an eagle, as he flew in mid-heaven, saying, with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the remaining voices of the trumpets of the three angels which are yet to sound.

IX. ¹ And the fifth angel sounded; and I saw a star fall from heaven to the earth; and there was given to him the key of the pit of the abyss; ² and he opened the pit of the abyss; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, like the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by the smoke of the pit. ³ And out of the smoke there came locusts upon the earth; and power was given to them, as the scorpions of the earth have power. ⁴ And they were commanded not to hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree, but the men who have not the seal of God in their foreheads. ⁵ And they were permitted, not to kill them, but to torment them five months; and the torment

inflicted by them was like the torment inflicted by a scorpion, when he stings a man. ⁶ And in those days men will seek for death, and shall not find it; and they will desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

⁷ And the shapes of the locusts were like horses prepared for battle; and on their heads were, as it were, crowns of gold; and their faces were like the faces of men. ⁸ And they had hair like the hair of women; and their teeth were like the teeth of lions. ⁹ And they had breastplates like breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was like the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. ¹⁰ And they had tails like scorpions, and there were stings in their tails; and they had power to hurt men five months. ¹¹ And they had over them a king, the angel of the abyss: his name, in Hebrew, is Abaddon, and, in Greek, he has the name Apollyon.

¹² The first woe is past: behold, there are coming, after this, two woes more.

¹³ And the sixth angel sounded: and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar that is before God, ¹⁴ saying to the sixth angel, who had the trumpet: Loose the four angels that are bound at the great river Euphrates. ¹⁵ And the four angels were loosed, who were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, to slay the third part of men. ¹⁶ And the number of the armies of horsemen was two myriads of myriads: I heard the number of them. ¹⁷ And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and those who sat on them; they had breastplates, fiery, and hyacinthine, and sulphurous: and the heads of the horses were like the heads of lions, and out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone. ¹⁸ By these three plagues was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and the smoke, and the brimstone that issued out of their mouths. ¹⁹ For their power was in their mouth and in their tails; for their tails were like serpents, and had heads, and with them they do injury.

²⁰ And the rest of men that were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the works of their hands, that they might not worship demons, and idols of gold, and of silver, and of brass, and of stone, and of wood, which can neither see, nor hear, nor walk; ²¹ and they repented not of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their lewdness, nor of their thefts.

X. ¹ And I saw another mighty angel coming down from heaven, clothed with a cloud; and the rainbow was upon his head, and his face was like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire. ² And he had in his hand a little book opened; and he placed his right foot on the sea, and his left foot on the land; ³ and he cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roars: and when he had cried, the seven thunders uttered their voices. ⁴ And when the seven thunders had spoken, I was about to write; and I heard a voice from heaven, saying: Seal up the things which the seven thunders spoke, and write them not.

⁵ And the angel that I saw standing on the sea and on the land, lifted up his right hand to heaven, ⁶ and swore by him that lives from age to age, who created the heaven and the things that are in it, and the earth and the things that are in it, and the sea and the things that are in it, That time should no longer intervene, ⁷ but in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall sound his trumpet, the mystery of God should be finished, as he has declared to his servants the prophets.

⁸ And the voice that I heard from heaven spoke to me again, and said: Go and take the little book that is open in the hand of the angel that stands on the sea and on the land. ⁹ And I went to the angel, and said to him: Give me the little book. And he said to me: Take it, and eat it up, and it will make your stomach bitter, but it will be in your mouth as sweet as honey. ¹⁰ And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up, and it was in my mouth as sweet as honey; and when I had eaten it, my stomach was bitter. ¹¹ And he said to me: You must prophesy again before many peoples and nations and tongues and kings.

XI. ¹ And a reed like a rod was given to me; and it was said: Rise and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and those who worship in it. ² But the court that is without the temple leave out, and measure it not: for it is given to the Gentiles, and the holy city they shall tread under foot forty-two months. ³ And I will give to my two witnesses, that they may prophesy a thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth. ⁴ These are the two olive trees, and the two lamps that stand before the Lord of the earth. ⁵ And if any man will injure them, fire proceeds out of their mouth, and

devours their enemies; and if any one will injure them, he must be killed in this way.⁶ These have authority to shut heaven, that it may not rain in the days of their prophecy; and they have authority over the waters, to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with every plague, as often as they wish.

⁷ And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the abyss will make war with them, and overcome them, and kill them.⁸ And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which, spiritually, is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.⁹ And some of the peoples and tribes and tongues and nations will see their dead bodies three days and a half, and will not suffer their dead bodies to be put into sepulchers.¹⁰ And those who dwell on the earth will rejoice over them, and make merry, and will send gifts to one another, because these two prophets tormented those who dwelt on the earth.

¹¹ And after the three days and a half, the spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon those who saw them.¹² And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying to them: Come up hither. And they went up into heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.¹³ And in that hour there was a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell; and in the earthquake there were slain names of men, seven thousand: and the rest were frightened, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

¹⁴ The second woe is past: behold, the third woe comes quickly.¹⁵ And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying: The kingdom of the world has become our Lord's and his Christ's, and he shall reign from age to age.

¹⁶ And the twenty-four elders that sat before God on their thrones, fell upon their faces, and worshiped God,¹⁷ saying: We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, who art, and who wast, because thou hast taken thy great power, and hast reigned.¹⁸ And the nations were angry, and thy wrath has come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldst give reward to thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and to those who fear thy name, both small and great, and that thou shouldst destroy those who corrupt the earth.

¹⁹ And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple, the ark of the covenant of the Lord; and there were lightnings and voices and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

XII. ¹ And a great sign appeared in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun; and the moon was under her feet, and on her head was a crown of twelve stars;² and, being with child, she cried out in travail, and in the pains of delivery.

³ And there appeared another sign in heaven; and behold, a great dragon, fiery-red, that had seven heads, and ten horns: and on his heads seven diadems.⁴ And his tail drew along the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to bring forth, that, when she had brought forth, he might devour her child.⁵ And she brought forth a male child, that was to rule all nations with a rod of iron; and her child was caught away to God, even to his throne.⁶ And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there for a thousand two hundred and sixty days.

⁷ And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought,⁸ and prevailed not: nor was their place found any more in heaven.⁹ And the great dragon, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, who deceives the whole world, was cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.¹⁰ And I heard a great voice in heaven, saying: Now has come the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren, he that accused them before our God day and night, is cast down.

¹¹ And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives even to death.¹² Therefore, rejoice you heavens, and you that dwell in them. Alas for the land and for the sea! for the devil has come down to you with great anger, because he knows that he has but a short time.

¹³ And when the dragon saw that he was cast into the earth, he persecuted the woman that brought forth the male child.¹⁴ And two wings of a great eagle were given to the woman, that she might fly into the wilderness into her place,

where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, away from the presence of the serpent. ¹⁵ And the serpent threw out of his mouth water like a river, after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away by the river. ¹⁶ And the earth helped the woman; and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the river that the dragon threw out of his mouth. ¹⁷ And the dragon was angry with the woman, and went away to make war with the rest of her children, that keep the commandments of God, and that hold the testimony of Jesus.

XIII. ¹ And I stood on the sand of the sea, and saw a beast coming up out of the sea, and he had seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten diadems, and on his heads names impiously irreverent. ² And the beast that I saw was like a leopard, and his feet were as those of a bear, and his mouth was as the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave him his power, and his throne, and great authority. ³ And I saw one of his heads as if it had been wounded even to death; and his deadly wound was healed; and all the earth wondered after the beast. ⁴ And they worshiped the dragon, because he gave authority to the beast: and they worshiped the beast, saying, Who is like the beast? and, Who is able to make war with him?

⁵ And there was given him a mouth that spoke great things and impious words; and authority was given to him to continue forty-two months. ⁶ And he opened his mouth in impious speeches against God, to utter impious words against his name, and his tabernacle, and against those who dwell in heaven. ⁷ And it was given him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and authority was given him over every tribe and people and tongue and nation. ⁸ And all that dwell upon the earth will worship him, those whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb that was slain from the foundation of the world. ⁹ If any one has an ear, let him hear. ¹⁰ If any one leads into captivity, he shall go into captivity. If any kills with the sword, he must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and faithfulness of the saints.

¹¹ And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon. ¹² And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence; and

he causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. ¹³ And he does great signs, and even causes fire to descend from heaven upon the earth in the sight of men. ¹⁴ And he deceives those who dwell on the earth, by means of the signs which he is allowed to do in the presence of the beast, saying to those who dwell on the earth, that they should make an image for the beast which had the wound by the sword, and did live. ¹⁵ And it was granted him to give spirit to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast, to be killed. ¹⁶ And he causes all, small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark on their right hand, or on their forehead, ¹⁷ and that no one should be able to buy or sell, but he that had the mark, the name of the beast, or the number of his name. ¹⁸ Here is wisdom. Let him that has understanding, count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred and sixty-six.

XIV. ¹ And I saw, and behold, the Lamb stood on the mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand, that had his name and his Father's name written in their foreheads. ² And I heard a voice from heaven like the voice of many waters, and like the voice of loud thunder; and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps. ³ And they sung a new song before the throne, and before the four living creatures, and the elders: and no one was able to learn the song, but the hundred and forty-four thousand that had been redeemed from the earth. ⁴ These are they that were not defiled with women; for they are virgins; these are they that follow the Lamb wheresoever he goes: these were redeemed from among men, the first-fruits to God and to the Lamb. ⁵ And in their mouth was found no guile; for they are blameless.

⁶ And I saw another angel flying in mid-heaven, having the eternal gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth, even to every nation and tribe and tongue and people; ⁷ and he said with a loud voice: Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgment has come; and worship him that made the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

⁸ And another angel followed, saying:

Babylon the great has fallen, has fallen; because she has made all nations drink of the maddening wine of her lewdness.

⁹ And the third angel followed them, saying, with a loud voice: If any one worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or on his hand, even he shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared without mixture in the cup of his indignation; ¹⁰ and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: ¹¹ and the smoke of their torment ascends from age to age: and they who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name, have no rest day or night.

¹² Here is the patience of the saints, who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. ¹³ And I heard a voice from heaven, saying: Write, Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord from this time. Yes, says the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors, and their works do follow them.

¹⁴ And I saw, and behold, a white cloud, and on the cloud sat one like the Son of man, who had on his head a crown of gold, and in his hand a sharp sickle. ¹⁵ And another angel came out of the temple, and cried with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud: Thrust in your sickle and reap, for the time has come for you to reap, for the harvest of the earth is fully ripe. ¹⁶ And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

¹⁷ And another angel came out of the temple that is in heaven, and he also had a sharp sickle. ¹⁸ And another angel that had power over fire, came out from the altar; and he cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, and said: Thrust in your sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for its grapes are fully ripe. ¹⁹ And the angel thrust in his sickle on the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and threw it into the great wine-press of the wrath of God. ²⁰ And the wine-press was trodden without the city; and blood came out of the wine-press, even to the bridles of the horses, to the distance of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

XV. ¹ And I saw another sign in heaven, great and wonderful: seven angels that had seven plagues which are the last; for by them the wrath of God is brought to an end.

² And I saw, as it were, a sea of glass mingled with fire, and those who had obtained the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God. ³ And they sung the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying: Great and wonderful are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints. ⁴ Who will not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? For thou alone art holy; for all nations shall come and worship before thee: because thy judgments are made manifest.

⁵ And after this I saw, and the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened; ⁶ and the seven angels that had the seven plagues came out of the temple, clothed in pure white linen, and girded about the breasts with golden girdles. ⁷ And one of the four living creatures gave to the seven angels seven golden cups full of the wrath of God, who lives from age to age. ⁸ And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no one was able to enter the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed.

XVI. ¹ And I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels: Go and pour out the seven cups of the wrath of God upon the earth.

² And the first angel went, and poured out his cup on the land; and there came a hurtful and afflictive sore upon the men that had the mark of the beast, and that worshiped his image.

³ And the second angel poured out his cup on the sea; and it became blood, like that of a dead man: and every soul in the sea died.

⁴ And the third angel poured out his cup on the rivers and the fountains of waters; and they became blood. ⁵ And I heard the angel of the waters, saying: Just art thou, who art and who wast, the Holy One, because thou hast thus judged. ⁶ For they have shed the blood of saints and of prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink, and they are worthy. ⁷ And I heard a voice from the altar saying: Even so; Lord God Almighty, true and just are thy judgments.

⁸ And the fourth angel poured out his cup on the sun; and it was given to him to scorch men with fire. ⁹ And men were scorched with great heat; and they uttered impious words

against the name of God who has power over these plagues; and they repented not, that they might give him glory.

¹⁰ And the fifth angel poured out his cup on the throne of the beast; and his kingdom was filled with darkness; and they gnawed their tongues because of pain; ¹¹ and they spoke impiously against the God of heaven because of their pains, and because of their sores; and they repented not of their works.

¹² And the sixth angel poured out his cup on the great river Euphrates; and its water was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared. ¹³ And I saw three unclean spirits, like frogs, come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. ¹⁴ For they are the spirits of demons that do signs, and they go forth to the kings of the whole world, to bring them together to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. ¹⁵ Behold, I come as a thief: blessed is he that watches, and keeps his garments, that he may not walk naked, and that men may not see his nakedness. ¹⁶ And they brought them together into a place that is called, in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

¹⁷ And the seventh angel poured out his cup into the air; and there came a great voice from the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying: It is done. ¹⁸ And there were lightnings and voices and thunders; and there was a great earthquake, such as has not been since men were on the earth,—so great an earthquake, and so mighty. ¹⁹ And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and Babylon the great was remembered before God, that he might give her the cup of the wine of his fiercest wrath. ²⁰ And every island fled, and the mountains were not found. ²¹ And great hail, every stone about the weight of a talent, fell from heaven upon men; and men spoke impiously against God, because of the plague of the hail: for the plague of it was very great.

XVII. ¹ And there came one of the seven angels that had the seven cups, and talked with me, saying: Come, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot that sits on many waters, ² with whom the kings of the earth have practiced lewdness, and with the wine of whose lewdness the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk. ³ And he carried

me away in spirit into the wilderness; and I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast, that was full of impious names, and that had seven heads and ten horns. ⁴ And the woman was clothed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold, and precious stones, and pearls; and she had in her hand a golden cup full of idolatrous pollutions, and the impurities of her lewdness. ⁵ And on her forehead was a name written: MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND OF THE IDOLATROUS POLLUTIONS OF THE EARTH. ⁶ And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the witnesses of Jesus; and when I saw her, I wondered with great astonishment.

⁷ And the angel said to me: Why did you wonder? I will tell you the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carries her, that has seven heads and ten horns.

⁸ The beast that you saw, was, and is not, and will come out of the abyss, and go to perdition; and those who dwell on the earth, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, will wonder, when they see the beast that was, and is not, though he is yet present.

⁹ Here is the mind that has wisdom: the seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sits. ¹⁰ And there are seven kings: five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come; and when he comes, he must remain but a little while. ¹¹ And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goes to perdition.

¹² And the ten horns which you saw are ten kings, who have received no kingdom as yet, but receive authority as kings at the same time with the beast.

¹³ These have one mind, and will give their power and authority to the beast. ¹⁴ These will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and those with him are called and chosen and faithful.

¹⁵ And he said to me: The waters which you saw, where the harlot sits, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues. ¹⁶ And the ten horns that you saw, and the beast, these will hate the harlot, and will make her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh, and burn her

up with fire.¹⁷ For God has put into their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and to give their kingdom to the beast, till the words of God be accomplished.

¹⁸ And the woman that you saw is that great city, which reigns over the kings of the earth.

XVIII. ¹ And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lighted with his glory.² And he cried with a strong voice, saying: Babylon the great has fallen, has fallen, and has become the habitation of demons, and the haunt of every unclean spirit, and the resort of every unclean and hateful bird.³ For she has made all nations drink of the maddening wine of her lewdness; and the kings of the earth have practiced lewdness with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich by the power of her voluptuousness.

⁴ And I heard another voice from heaven, saying: Come out of her, my people, lest you become partakers of her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues.⁵ For her sins reach even to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.⁶ Reward her as she has rewarded you, and render back to her double, according to her works: in the cup that she has mixed, mix for her double.⁷ As much glory and voluptuousness as she has given to herself, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she says in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.⁸ Therefore, her plagues shall come in one day, death and mourning and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judges her.

⁹ And the kings of the earth, who have practiced lewdness and lived voluptuously with her, shall weep and lament for her, when they see the smoke of her burning,¹⁰ standing far off for fear of her torment, saying: Alas, alas, that great city of Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour has your judgment come.

¹¹ And the merchants of the earth shall weep and lament over her, because no one buys their merchandise any more;¹² the merchandise of gold and silver and precious stones, and of pearls, and of fine linen and purple, and of silk and scarlet; and every kind of thyme wood, and every kind of vessel of ivory, and every kind of vessel of most costly wood, and of brass, and of iron, and of marble:¹³ and cinnamon and amo-

mum and incense, and ointment and frankincense, and wine and oil, and fine flour and wheat, and beasts and sheep, and horses and chariots, and bodies and souls of men.¹⁴ And the fruits that your soul desired have departed from you; and all things that are dainty and sumptuous have perished from you, and you shall find them no more at all.

¹⁵ Those who traded in these things, who were made rich by her, shall stand far off for fear of her torment, weeping and mourning and¹⁶ saying: Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen and purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls! for in one hour, so great riches have been brought to ruin.¹⁷ And every master of a ship, and every one in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood far off,¹⁸ and cried, when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying: What city is like the great city?¹⁹ And they threw dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and mourning and saying: Alas, alas, that great city, by which all that had ships in the sea became rich by means of costly merchandise! for in one hour she is made desolate.²⁰ Rejoice over her, O heaven, and you saints and apostles and prophets: for God has avenged you on her.

²¹ And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and threw it into the sea, saying: Thus, with violence shall Babylon, that great city, be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.²² And the voice of harpers and musicians, and of pipers and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in you: and no artist of any art whatever, shall be found any more in you: and the sound of the millstone shall be heard no more in you:²³ and the light of a lamp shall shine no more in you: and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more in you: for your merchants were the great men of the earth: for by your sorcery were all nations deceived.²⁴ And in her was found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

XIX. ¹ After these things, I heard the great voice of a vast multitude in heaven, saying: Alleluia; Salvation and glory and honor and power to our God:² for true and righteous are his judgments, for he has judged the great harlot that corrupted the earth with her lewdness; and he has avenged the blood of

his servants at her hand. ³ And again they said: Alleluia; and her smoke rises up from age to age.

⁴ And the twenty-four elders, and the four living creatures, fell down, and worshiped God that sits upon the throne, saying: Amen, Alleluia.

⁵ And a voice came out of the throne, saying: Praise our God all you his servants, and you that fear him, both small and great.

⁶ And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying: Alleluia; for the Lord God the Almighty reigns.

⁷ Let us rejoice and be glad, and give glory to him: for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and his wife has made herself ready. ⁸ And to her was given that she should be clothed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints. ⁹ And he said to me: Write, Blessed are they that are called to the marriage-supper of the Lamb. And he said to me: These are the true words of God. ¹⁰ And I fell at his feet to worship him; and he said to me: See that you do it not; I am your fellow-servant, and of your brethren that have the testimony of Jesus; worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

¹¹ And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat on him was called faithful and true, and in righteousness does he judge, and make war. ¹² His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on his head were many diadems; and he had a name written which no one knew, but he himself. ¹³ And he was clothed with a garment dipped in blood; and his name is called The Word of God. ¹⁴ And the armies that were in heaven followed him on white horses; and they were clothed in fine linen, white and clean. ¹⁵ And out of his mouth goes a sharp, two-edged sword, that with it he may smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and he treads the wine-press of the fiercest wrath of God, the Almighty. ¹⁶ And he has, on his raiment and on his thigh, a name written, King of kings, and Lord of lords.

¹⁷ And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven. Come, gather yourselves to the great supper of God, ¹⁸ that you may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of officers, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of those who sit on them, and the

flesh of all, both freemen and servants, both small and great.

¹⁹ And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, assembled together to make war with him that sat on the horse, and with his army. ²⁰ And the beast was taken, and the false prophet that was with him, who did signs in his presence, with which he deceived those who received the mark of the beast, and those who worshiped his image. These two were thrown alive into the lake of fire, which burns with brimstone. ²¹ And the rest were slain with the sword of him that sat on the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the birds were filled with their flesh.

XX. ¹ And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the abyss, and a great chain in his hand. ² And he laid hold of the dragon, that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years, ³ and threw him into the abyss, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be completed: and after this he must be loosed for a little while.

⁴ And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and the power of judging was given to them; and I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God; and of those who had not worshiped the beast, nor his image, and had not received his mark on their forehead, nor on their hand: and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. ⁵ But the rest of the dead lived not till the thousand years were completed. This is the first resurrection. ⁶ Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection; over such the second death has no power: but they shall be priests of God and of the Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

⁷ And when the thousand years shall have been completed, Satan shall be loosed from his prison, ⁸ and shall go out to deceive the nations that are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to bring them together to battle: the number of these is as the sand of the sea. ⁹ And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and encompassed the camp of the saints, and the beloved city: and fire came down out of heaven from God, and devoured them. ¹⁰ And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of

fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are: and they shall be tormented day and night from age to age.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat upon it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and no place was found for them. 12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before the throne; and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of the things that were written in the books, according to their works. 13 And the sea gave up the dead that were in it; and death and hades gave up the dead that were in them; and they were judged, every one according to his works. 14 And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death. 15 And if any one was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

XXI. 1 And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the former heaven and the former earth had passed away: and the sea was no more. 2 And I saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven, from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. 3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying: Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them: and they shall be his people, and God himself will be with them, their God. 4 And he will wipe every tear from their eyes, and there shall be no more death; neither shall there be any more sorrow, nor crying, nor pain; for the former things have passed away.

5 And he that sat upon the throne said: Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me: Write, for these words are true and faithful. 6 And he said to me: It is done; I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him that thirsts, I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely. 7 He that overcomes, shall inherit these things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. 8 But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the detestable, and murderers and lewd persons and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, shall have their part in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

9 And there came one of the seven angels that had the seven cups full of the seven last plagues; and he talked with me, saying: Come

hither, and I will show you the bride, the Lamb's wife. 10 And he carried me away in spirit to a mountain, great and high, and showed me the holy city, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, 11 having the glory of God: that which gave it light was like a most costly stone, like jasper-stone, brilliant as crystal. 12 It had a wall, great and high; and it had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written on them, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel; 13 on the east, three gates; on the north, three gates; on the south, three gates; and on the west, three gates. 14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me had a measure, a golden reed, that he might measure the city, and its gates, and its wall. 16 And the city lies square: and its length is as great as its breadth. And he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the hight of it are equal. 17 And he measured the wall of it, a hundred and forty-four cubits, the measure of a man, that is, of an angel.

18 And the wall of it was built of jasper; and the city was pure gold, like clear glass. 19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with every costly stone: the first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald; 20 the fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, crysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysoprase; the eleventh, hyacinth; the twelfth, amethyst. 21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, like clear glass.

22 And I saw no temple in it: for the Lord God the Almighty, and the Lamb, are its temple. 23 And the city had no need of the sun, nor of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God gave it light, and the lamp of it is the Lamb.

24 And the nations shall walk by the light of it; and the kings of the earth bring their glory and their honor into it. 25 And its gates shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. 26 And they shall bring the glory and honor of the nations into it. 27 And there shall not enter it any thing unclean, or that does what is detestable, or that makes a lie: but those who are written in the Lamb's book of life.

XXII. ¹And he showed me a river of water of life, clear as crystal, coming out from the throne of God and of the Lamb. ²In the midst of the street of the city, and on each side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve kinds of fruit, and yielded its fruit every month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. ³And there shall be no more curse; and the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it: and his servants shall serve him. ⁴And they shall see his face, and his name shall be in their foreheads. ⁵And there shall be no more night; and they have no need of the lamp, nor of the light of the sun: for the Lord God will give them light: and they shall reign from age to age.

⁶And he said to me: These words are faithful and true; and the Lord God of the spirits of the prophets has sent his angel to show his servants the things that must shortly take place. ⁷And behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keeps the words of the prophecy of this book. ⁸And I, John, am he that saw and heard these things. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel that showed me these things. ⁹And he said to me: See that you do it not; I am your fellow-servant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of those who keep the words of this book: worship God.

¹⁰And he said to me: Seal not the words of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. ¹¹He that is unjust, let him be unjust still;

he that is polluted, let him be polluted still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still. ¹²Behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give to every one as his work shall be. ¹³I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End. ¹⁴Blessed are those who do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and that they may go through the gates into the city. ¹⁵Without are dogs and sorcerers and lewd persons and murderers and idolaters, and every one that loves and makes a lie.

¹⁶I, Jesus, have sent my angel to testify these things to you for the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, the bright, morning star. ¹⁷And the Spirit and the bride say, Come; and let him that hears, say, Come; and let him that is thirsty, come; and let him that is willing, take the water of life freely.

¹⁸I testify to every one that hears the words of the prophecy of this book: if any one add to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book. ¹⁹And if any one take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God will take away his part from the tree of life, and from the holy city; which things are written in this book.

²⁰He that testifies these things, says: Surely, I come quickly. Amen: come, Lord Jesus.

²¹The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with all the saints.

DENARIUS.—The earlier = $8\frac{1}{2}$ d., 17 cents: the later = $7\frac{1}{2}$ d., 15 cents.

DRACHMA = the denarius, or 15 cents.

DIDRACHMA = 30 cents.

STATER = 60 cents.

CHŒNIX = about a quart.

YOD, is the name of the smallest letter of the Hebrew alphabet.

PEDAGOGUE, (Gal. 3:24) was a servant that led the children of his master to school. The literal meaning of the word is, “a leader of children.” The pedagogue did not teach, but conducted his master’s children to the schoolmaster.

THE END.
